This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

+ *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.

+ *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.

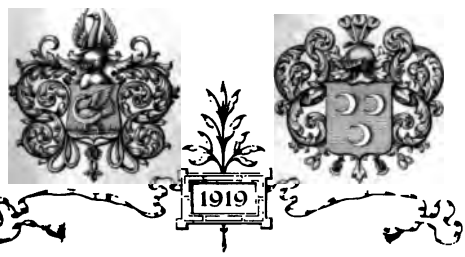
+ *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.

+ *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at `http://books.google.com/`

. RESEARCH LIBRARIES
33 07609367 7



GANSEVOORT-LANSING COLLECTION

given to the New York Public Library
Astor Lenox and Tilden Foundations
BY VICTOR HUGO PALTSITS
under the terms of the last will and testament of
CATHERINE GANSEVOORT LANSING
granddaughter of
General Peter Gansevoort, junior
and widow of the
Honorable Abraham Lansing
of Albany, New York

Smollett
NCF

THE

MISCELLANEOUS WORKS

OF

TOBIAS SMOLLETT, M. D.

WITH

MEMOIRS

OF

HIS LIFE AND WRITINGS.

BY

ROBERT ANDERSON, M. D.

IN SIX VOLUMES.

VOL. II.

Containing

THE ADVENTURES OF PEREGRINE PICKLE, PART I.

LONDON:

PRINTED FOR J. MUNDELL & CO. EDINBURGH;
AND FOR
J. MUNDELL, COLLEGE, GLASGOW.

1796.

198EGA

CONTENTS.

Page.

ADVERTISEMENT to the Second Edition, - - - vii

CHAP. I. An account of Mr. Gamaliel Pickle. The diſpoſition of his ſiſter deſcribed. He yields to her ſolicitations, and retires to the country, - - - - - 1

CHAP. II. He is made acquainted with the characters of Commodore Trunnion and his adherents; meets with them by accident, and contracts an intimacy with that commander, - - 5

CHAP. III. Mrs. Grizzle exerts herſelf in finding a proper match for her brother; who is accordingly introduced to the young lady, whom he marries in due ſeaſon, - - 15

CHAP. IV. The behaviour of Mrs. Grizzle at the wedding, with an account of the gueſts, - - - 19

CHAP. V. Mrs. Pickle aſſumes the reins of government in her own family; her ſiſter-in-law undertakes an enterpriſe of great moment; but is for ſome time diverted from her purpoſe, by a very intereſting conſideration, - - - 22

CHAP. VI. Mrs. Grizzle is indefatigable in gratifying her ſiſter's longings. Peregrine is born, and managed contrary to the directions and remonſtrances of his aunt, who is diſguſted upon that account; and reſumes the plan which ſhe had before rejected, 27

CHAP. VII. Divers ſtratagems are invented, and put in practice, in order to overcome the obſtinacy of Trunnion, who at length is teazed and tortured into the nooſe of wedlock, - - 36

CHAP. VIII. Preparations are made for the commodore's wedding, which is delayed by an accident that hurried him the Lord knows whither, - - - - 41

CHAP. IX. He is found by the lieutenant; reconducted to his own houſe; married to Mrs. Grizzle, who meets with a ſmall misfortune in the night, and aſſerts her prerogative next morning; in conſequence of which her huſband's eye is endangered, - 47

CHAP. X. The commodore being in ſome caſes reſtiff, his lady has recourſe to artifice in the eſtabliſhment of her throne; ſhe exhibits ſymptoms of pregnancy, to the unſpeakable joy of Trunnion, who nevertheleſs is baulked in his expectation, - 53

CHAP. XI. Mrs. Trunnion erects a tyranny in the garriſon, while her huſband conceives an affection for his nephew Perry, who manifeſts a peculiarity of diſpoſition even in his tender years, 58

CHAP. XII. Peregrine is ſent to a boarding-ſchool, becomes remarkable for his genius and ambition, - - 62

CHAP. XIII. The commodore takes Peregrine under his own care. The boy arrives at the garriſon; is ſtrangely received by his own mother; enters into a confederacy with Hatchway and Pipes, and executes a couple of waggiſh enterpriſes upon his aunt, - 69

CHAP. XIV. He is alſo by their device engaged in an adventure with the exciſeman, who does not find his account in his own drollery, - - - - 78

CHAP. XV. The commodore detects the machinations of the con-

Pag
ſpirators, and hires a tutor for Peregrine, whom he ſettles at Wincheſter ſchool, - - -
CHAP. XVI. Peregrine diſtinguiſhes himſelf among his ſchool fellows, expoſes his tutor, and attracts the particular notice of the maſter, - - - -
CHAP. XVII. He is concerned in a dangerous adventure with a certain gardener; ſublimes his ideas, commences gallant, and becomes acquainted with Miſs Emily Gauntlet, - - 1
CHAP XVIII. He inquires into the ſituation of the young lady with whom he is enamoured; elopes from ſchool; is found by the lieutenant, conveyed to Wincheſter, and ſends a letter with a copy of verſes to his miſtreſs, - - -
CHAP. XIX. His meſſenger meets with a misfortune, to which he applies a very extraordinary expedient, that is attended with ſtrange conſequences, - - - - 1
CHAP. XX. Peregrine is ſummoned to attend his uncle, is more and more hated by his own mother; appeals to his father, whoſe condeſcenſion is defeated by the dominion of his wife, - 1
CHAP. XXI. Trunnion is enraged at the conduct of Pickle. Peregrine reſents the injuſtice of his mother, to whom he explains his ſentiments in a letter. Is entered at the univerſity of Oxford, where he ſignalizes himſelf as a youth of an enterpriſing genius, 1
CHAP XXII. He is inſulted by his tutor, whom he lampoons; makes conſiderable progreſs in polite literature; and, in an excurſion to Windſor, meets with Emilia by accident, and is very coldly received, - - - - - 1
CHAP. XXIII. After ſundry unſucceſsful efforts, he finds means to come to an explanation with his miſtreſs; and a reconciliation enſues, - - - - 1
CHAP. XXIV. He achieves an adventure at the aſſembly, and quarrels with his governor, - - 1
CHAP. XXV. He receives a letter from his aunt, breaks with the commodore, and diſobliges the lieutenant, who, nevertheleſs, undertakes his cauſe, - - - - 1
CHAP. XXVI. He becomes melancholy and deſpondent; is favoured with a condeſcending letter from his uncle, reconciles himſelf to his governor, and ſets out with Emilia and her friend for Mrs. Gauntlet's houſe, - - - 1
CHAP. XXVII. They meet with a dreadful alarm on the road; arrive at their journey's end. Peregrine is introduced to Emily's brother; theſe two young gentlemen miſunderſtand each other. Pickle departs for the garriſon, - - 1
CHAP. XXVIII. Peregrine is overtaken by Mr. Gauntlet, with whom he fights a duel, and contracts an intimate friendſhip. He arrives at the garriſon, and finds his mother as implacable as ever. He is inſulted by his brother Gam, whoſe preceptor he diſciplines with a horſe-whip, - - - - 1
CHAP. XXIX. He projects a plan of revenge, which is executed againſt the curate, - - - 1
CHAP. XXX. Mr. Sackbut and his pupil conſpire againſt Peregrine, who being apprized of their deſign by his ſiſter, takes meaſures for counterworking their ſcheme, which is executed by miſtake upon Mr. Gauntlet. This young ſoldier meets with a cordial reception from the commodore, who generouſly decoys him into his own intereſt, - - - 1

Page.

CHAP. XXXI. The two young gentlemen display their talents for gallantry, in the course of which they are involved in a ludicrous circumstance of distress, and afterwards take vengeance on the author of their mishap, - - 177

CHAP. XXXII. The commodore sends a challenge to Gamaliel. and is imposed upon by a waggish invention of the lieutenant, Peregrine, and Gauntlet, - - - 182

CHAP. XXXIII. Peregrine takes leave of his aunt and sister, sets out from the garrison, parts with his uncle and Hatchway on the road, and with his governor arrives in safety at Dover, - 186

CHAP. XXXIV. He adjusts the method of his correspondence with Gauntlet; meets by accident with an Italian Charlatan, and a certain apothecary, who proves to be a noted character, - 189

CHAP. XXXV. He embarks for France; is overtaken by a storm; is surprised with the appearance of Pipes; lands at Calais, and has an affair with the officers of the custom-house, - 195

CHAP. XXXVI. He makes a fruitless attempt in gallantry; departs for Boulogne, where he spends the evening with certain English exiles, - - - 202

CHAP. XXXVII. Proceeds for the capital. Takes up his lodging at Bernay, where he is overtaken by Mr. Hornbeck, whose head he longs to fortify, - - - 208

CHAP. XXXVIII. They set out in company, breakfast at Abbeville, dine at Amiens, and about eleven o'clock arrive at Chantilly, where Peregrine executes a plan which he had concerted upon Hornbeck, - - - 212

CHAP. XXXIX. He is involved in an adventure at Paris, and taken prisoner by the city guard. Becomes acquainted with a French nobleman, who introduces him into the beau monde, 216

CHAP. XL. Acquires a distinct idea of the French government; quarrels with a mousquetaire, whom he afterwards fights and vanquishes, after having punished him for interfering in his amorous recreations, - - - 222

CHAP. XLI. Mr. Jolter threatens to leave him on account of his misconduct, which he promises to rectify; but his resolution is defeated by the impetuosity of his passions. He meets accidentally with Mrs. Hornbeck, who elopes with him from her husband, but is restored by the interposition of the British ambassador, - - - - 229

CHAP. XLII. Peregrine resolves to return to England, is diverted with the odd characters of two of his countrymen, with whom he contracts an acquaintance in the apartments of the Palais Royal, 236

CHAP. XLIII. He introduces his new friends to Mr. Jolter, with whom the doctor enters into a dispute upon government, which had well nigh terminated in open war, - - 244

CHAP. XLIV The doctor prepares an entertainment in the manner of the ancients, which is attended with divers ridiculous circumstances, - - - - 248

CHAP. XLV. The painter is persuaded to accompany Pickle to a masquerade in woman's apparel; is engaged in a troublesome adventure, and with his companion conveyed to the Bastile; 257

CHAP. XLVI. By the fidelity of Pipes, Jolter is informed of his pupil's fate. Confers with the physician. Applies to the ambassador, who with great difficulty obtains the discharge of the prisoners, on certain conditions, - - 262

Page.

ſpirators, and hires a tutor for Peregrine, whom he ſettles at Wincheſter ſchool, - - - 83

CHAP. XVI. Peregrine diſtinguiſhes himſelf among his ſchool fellows, expoſes his tutor, and attracts the particular notice of the maſter, - - - - - 87

CHAP. XVII. He is concerned in a dangerous adventure with a certain gardener; ſublimes his ideas, commences gallant, and becomes acquainted with Miſs Emily Gauntlet, - - 92

CHAP XVIII. He inquires into the ſituation of the young lady with whom he is enamoured; elopes from ſchool; is found by the lieutenant, conveyed to Wincheſter, and ſends a letter with a copy of verſes to his miſtreſs, - - - 99

CHAP. XIX. His meſſenger meets with a misfortune, to which he applies a very extraordinary expedient, that is attended with ſtrange conſequences, - - - - 107

CHAP. XX. Peregrine is ſummoned to attend his uncle, is more and more hated by his own mother; appeals to his father, whoſe condeſcenſion is defeated by the dominion of his wife, - 112

CHAP. XXI. Trunnion is enraged at the conduct of Pickle. Peregrine reſents the injuſtice of his mother, to whom he explains his ſentiments in a letter. Is entered at the univerſity of Oxford, where he ſignalizes himſelf as a youth of an enterpriſing genius, 116

CHAP. XXII. He is inſulted by his tutor, whom he lampoons; makes conſiderable progreſs in polite literature; and, in an excurſion to Windſor, meets with Emilia by accident, and is very coldly received, - - - - - 122

CHAP. XXIII. After ſundry unſucceſsful efforts, he finds means to come to an explanation with his miſtreſs; and a reconciliation enſues, - - - - 128

CHAP. XXIV. He achieves an adventure at the aſſembly, and quarrels with his governor, - - 136

CHAP. XXV. He receives a letter from his aunt, breaks with the commodore, and diſobliges the lieutenant, who, nevertheleſs, undertakes his cauſe, - - - - 142

CHAP. XXVI. He becomes melancholy and deſpondent; is favoured with a condeſcending letter from his uncle, reconciles himſelf to his governor, and ſets out with Emilia and her friend for Mrs. Gauntlet's houſe, - - - 148

CHAP. XXVII. They meet with a dreadful alarm on the road; arrive at their journey's end. Peregrine is introduced to Emily's brother; theſe two young gentlemen miſunderſtand each other. Pickle departs for the garriſon, - - 153

CHAP. XXVIII. Peregrine is overtaken by Mr. Gauntlet, with whom he fights a duel, and contracts an intimate friendſhip. He arrives at the garriſon, and finds his mother as implacable as ever. He is inſulted by his brother Gam, whoſe preceptor he diſciplines with a horſe-whip, - - - - 159

CHAP. XXIX. He projects a plan of revenge, which is executed againſt the curate, - - - - 165

CHAP. XXX. Mr. Sackbut and his pupil conſpire againſt Peregrine, who being apprized of their deſign by his ſiſter, takes meaſures for counterworking their ſcheme, which is executed by miſtake upon Mr. Gauntlet. This young ſoldier meets with a cordial reception from the commodore, who generouſly decoys him into his own intereſt, - - - 170

Page.

CHAP. XXXI. The two young gentlemen diſplay their talents for gallantry, in the courſe of which they are involved in a ludicrous circumſtance of diſtreſs, and afterwards take vengeance on the author of their miſhap, - - 177

CHAP. XXXII. The commodore ſends a challenge to Gamaliel, and is impoſed upon by a waggiſh invention of the lieutenant, Peregrine, and Gauntlet, - - - 182

CHAP. XXXIII. Peregrine takes leave of his aunt and ſiſter, ſets out from the garriſon, parts with his uncle and Hatchway on the road, and with his governor arrives in ſafety at Dover, - 186

CHAP. XXXIV. He adjuſts the method of his correſpondence with Gauntlet; meets by accident with an Italian Charlatan, and a certain apothecary, who proves to be a noted character, - 189

CHAP. XXXV. He embarks for France; is overtaken by a ſtorm; is ſurpriſed with the appearance of Pipes; lands at Calais, and has an affair with the officers of the cuſtom-houſe, - 195

CHAP. XXXVI. He makes a fruitleſs attempt in gallantry; departs for Boulogne, where he ſpends the evening with certain Engliſh exiles, - - - 202

CHAP. XXXVII. Proceeds for the capital. Takes up his lodging at Bernay, where he is overtaken by Mr. Hornbeck, whoſe head he longs to fortify, - - - 208

CHAP. XXXVIII. They ſet out in company, breakfaſt at Abbeville, dine at Amiens, and about eleven o'clock arrive at Chantilly, where Peregrine executes a plan which he had concerted upon Hornbeck, - - - 212

CHAP. XXXIX. He is involved in an adventure at Paris, and taken priſoner by the city guard. Becomes acquainted with a French nobleman, who introduces him into the beau monde, 216

CHAP. XL. Acquires a diſtinct idea of the French government; quarrels with a mouſquetaire, whom he afterwards fights and vanquiſhes, after having puniſhed him for interfering in his amorous recreations, - - - 222

CHAP. XLI. Mr. Jolter threatens to leave him on account of his miſconduct, which he promiſes to rectify; but his reſolution is defeated by the impetuoſity of his paſſions. He meets accidentally with Mrs. Hornbeck, who elopes with him from her huſband, but is reſtored by the interpoſition of the Britiſh ambaſſador, - - - - 229

CHAP. XLII. Peregrine reſolves to return to England, is diverted with the odd characters of two of his countrymen, with whom he contracts an acquaintance in the apartments of the Palais Royal, 236

CHAP. XLIII. He introduces his new friends to Mr. Jolter, with whom the doctor enters into a diſpute upon government, which had well nigh terminated in open war, - - 244

CHAP. XLIV The doctor prepares an entertainment in the manner of the ancients, which is attended with divers ridiculous circumſtances, - - - - 248

CHAP. XLV. The painter is perſuaded to accompany Pickle to a maſquerade in woman's apparel; is engaged in a troubleſome adventure, and with his companion conveyed to the Baſtile; 257

CHAP. XLVI. By the fidelity of Pipes, Jolter is informed of his pupil's fate. Confers with the phyſician. Applies to the ambaſſador, who with great difficulty obtains the diſcharge of the priſoners, on certain conditions, - - 262

Page

CHAP. XLVII. Peregrine makes himſelf merry at the expence of the painter, who curſes his landlady, and breaks with the doctor, 266

CHAP. XLVIII. Pallet conceives an hearty contempt for his fellow-traveller, and attaches himſelf to Pickle, who, nevertheleſs, perſecutes him with his miſchievous talent, upon the road to Flanders, 272

CHAP. XLIX. Nor is the phyſician ſacred from his ridicule. They reach Arras, where our adventurer engages in play with two French officers, who next morning give the landlord an intereſting proof of their importance, - - 279

CHAP. L. Peregrine moralizes upon their behaviour, which is condemned by the doctor, and defended by the governor. They arrive in ſafety at Liſle, dine at an ordinary, viſit the citadel. The phyſician quarrels with a North Briton, who is put in arreſt, 283

CHAP. LI. Pickle engages with a knight of Malta, in a converſation upon the Engliſh ſtage, which is followed by a diſſertation on the theatres of the ancients, by the doctor, - - 288

CHAP. LII. An adventure happens to Pipes, in conſequence of which he is diſmiſſed from Peregrine's ſervice. The whole company ſet out for Ghent in the diligence. Our hero is captivated by a lady in that carriage, intereſts her ſpiritual director in his behalf, 293

CHAP. LIII. He makes ſome progreſs in her affections; is interrupted by a diſpute between Jolter and a Jew; appeaſes the wrath of the Capuchin, who procures for him an interview with his fair enſlaver, in which he finds himſelf deceived, - 299

CHAP. LIV. He makes another effort towards the accompliſhment of his wiſh, which is poſtponed by a ſtrange accident, - 303

CHAP. LV. They depart from Ghent. Our hero engages in a political diſpute with his miſtreſs, whom he offends, and pacifies with ſubmiſſion. He practiſes an expedient to detain his carriage at Aloſt, and confirms the prieſt in his intereſt, - - 309

CHAP. LVI. The French coquet entraps the heart of the Jew, againſt whom Pallet enters into a conſpiracy; by which Peregrine is again diſappointed, and the Hebrew's incontinence expoſed, 312

CHAP. LVII. Pallet endeavouring to unravel the myſtery of the treatment he had received, falls out of the frying pan into the fire, - - - - 316

CHAP. LVIII. Peregrine, almoſt diſtracted with his diſappointment, conjures the fair Fleming to permit his viſits at Bruſſels. She withdraws from his purſuit, - - 326

CHAP. LIX. Peregrine meets with Mrs. Hornbeck, and is conſoled for his loſs. His valet de chambre is embroiled with her duenna, whom, however, he finds means to appeaſe, - - 331

CHAP. LX. Hornbeck is informed of his wife's adventure with Peregrine, for whom he prepares a ſtratagem, which is rendered ineffectual by the information of Pipes. The huſband is ducked for his intention, and our hero apprehended by the patrole, - 335

CHAP. LXI. Peregrine is releaſed. Jolter confounded at his myſterious conduct. A conteſt happens between the poet and painter, who are reconciled by the mediation of their fellow travellers, 340

CHAP. LXII. The travellers depart for Antwerp, at which place the painter gives a looſe to his enthuſiaſm, - - 346

CHAP. LXIII. Peregrine artfully foments a quarrel between Pallet and the phyſician, who fight a duel on the ramparts, - 352

CHAP. LXIV. The doctor exults in his victory. They ſet out for Rotterdam, where they are entertained by two Dutch gentlemen

Page.

in a yacht, which is overturned in the Maes, to the manifeſt hazard of the painter's life. They ſpend the evening with their entertainers, and next day viſit a cabinet of curioſities, - 360

CHAP. LXV. They proceed to the Hague; from whence they depart for Amſterdam, where they ſee a Dutch tragedy. Viſit the muſic houſe, in which Peregrine quarrels with the captain of a man of war. They paſs through Haerlem, in their way to Leyden. Return to Rotterdam, where the company ſeparates, and our hero, with his attendants, arrive in ſafety at Harwich, 365

CHAP. LXVI. Peregrine delivers his letters of recommendation at London, and returns to the garriſon, to the unſpeakable joy of the commodore and his whole family, - - 370

CHAP. LXVII. Sees his ſiſter happily married. Viſits Emilia, who receives him according to his deſerts, - - 377

CHAP. LXVIII. He attends his uncle with great affection during a fit of illneſs. Sets out again for London; meets with his friend Godfrey, who is prevailed upon to accompany him to Bath; on the road to which place, they chance to dine with a perſon who entertains them with a curious account of a certain company of adventurers, - - - 382

CHAP. LXIX. Godfrey executes a ſcheme at Bath, by which a whole company of ſharpers is ruined, - - 386

CHAP. LXX. The two friends eclipſe all their competitors in gallantry, and practiſe a pleaſant project of revenge upon the phyſicians of the place, - - - - 391

CHAP. LXXI. Peregrine humbles a noted hector, and meets with a ſtrange character at the houſe of a certain lady, - 398

CHAP. LXXII. He cultivates an acquaintance with the miſanthrope, who favours him with a ſhort ſketch of his own hiſtory, - 403

CHAP. LXXIII. Peregrine arrives at the garriſon, where he receives the laſt admonitions of Commodore Trunnion, who next day reſigns his breath, and is buried according to his own directions. Some gentlemen in the country make a fruitleſs attempt to accommodate matters betwixt Mr. Gamaliel Pickle and his eldeſt ſon, - - - - 409

CHAP. LXXIV. The young gentleman having ſettled his domeſtic affairs, arrives in London, and ſets up a gay equipage. He meets with Emilia, and is introduced to her uncle, - - 415

CHAP. LXXV. He proſecutes his deſign upon Emilia with great art and perſeverance, - - - 420

CHAP. LXXVI. He prevails upon Emilia to accompany him to a maſquerade, makes a treacherous attempt upon her affection, and meets with a deſerved repulſe, - - 424

CHAP. LXXVII. He endeavours to reconcile himſelf to his miſtreſs, and expoſtulates with the uncle, who forbids him the houſe, 430

CHAP. LXXVIII. He projects a violent ſcheme, in conſequence of which he is involved in a moſt fatiguing adventure, which greatly tends towards the augmentation of his chagrin, - 434

CHAP. LXXIX. Peregrine ſends a meſſage to Mrs. Gauntlet, who rejects his propoſal. He repairs to the garriſon, - 442

CHAP. LXXX. He returns to London, and meets with Cadwallader, who entertains him with many curious particulars. Crabtree ſounds the ducheſs, and undeceives Pickle, who, by an extraordinary accident, becomes acquainted with another Lady of quality, 446

ADVERTISEMENT

TO THE

SECOND EDITION.

AT length Peregrine Pickle makes his appearance in a new edition, in ſpite of all the art and induſtry that were uſed to ſtifle him in the birth, by certain bookſellers and others, who were at uncommon pains to miſrepreſent the work and calumniate the author.

The performance was decried as an immoral piece, and a ſcurrilous libel; the author was charged with having defamed the characters of particular perſons, to whom he lay under conſiderable obligations: And ſome formidable critics declared, that the book was void of humour, character, and ſentiment.

Theſe charges, had they been ſupported by proof, would have certainly damned the writer and all his works; and even, unſupported as they were, had an unfavourable effect with the public: But, luckily for him, his real character was not unknown; and ſome readers were determined to judge for themſelves, rather than truſt implicitly to the allegations of his enemies. The book was found not altogether unworthy of their recommendation; a very large impreſſion has been ſold in England; another was bought up in a neighbouring kingdom; the work has been tranſlated into the French language; and the demand for the original lately increaſed in England. It was the author's duty, therefore, as well as his intereſt, to oblige the public with this edition, which he has endeavoured to render leſs

unworthy of their acceptance, by retrenching the ſuperfluties of the firſt, reforming its manners, and correcting its expreſſion. Divers unintereſting incidents are wholly ſuppreſſed: Some humorous ſcenes he has endeavoured to heighten, and he flatters himſelf that he has expunged every adventure, phraſe, and inſinuation, that could be conſtrued by the moſt delicate reader into a treſpaſs upon the rules of decorum.

He owns, with contrition, that, in one or two inſtances, he gave way too much to the ſuggeſtions of perſonal reſentment, and repreſented characters as they appeared to him at that time, through the exaggerating medium of prejudice. But he has in this impreſſion endeavoured to make atonement for theſe extravagancies. Howſoever he may have erred in point of judgment or diſcretion, he defies the whole world to prove that he was ever guilty of one act of malice, ingratitude, or diſhonour. This declaration he may be permitted to make, without incurring the imputation of vanity or preſumption, conſidering the numerous ſhafts of envy, rancour, and revenge, that have lately, both in private and in public, been levelled at his reputation.

Note. *The two Letters relating to the Memoirs of a Lady of Quality, inſerted at the beginning of the next volume, were ſent to the editor by a perſon of honour.*

THE

ADVENTURES

OF

PEREGRINE PICKLE.

CHAPTER I.

An account of Mr. Gamaliel Pickle. The diſpoſition of his ſiſter deſcribed. He yields to her ſolicitations, and retires to the country.

In a certain county of England, bounded on one ſide by the ſea, and at the diſtance of one hundred miles from the metropolis, lived Gamaliel Pickle, Eſq. the father of that hero whoſe adventures we purpoſe to record. He was the ſon of a merchant in London, who (like Rome), from ſmall beginnings, had raiſed himſelf to the higheſt honours of the city, and acquired a plentiful fortune, though, to his infinite regret, he died before it amounted to a plum, conjuring his ſon, as he reſpected the laſt injunction of a parent, to imitate his induſtry, and adhere to his maxims, until he ſhould have made up the deficiency, which was a ſum conſiderably leſs than fifteen thouſand pounds.

This pathetic remonſtrance had the deſired effect upon his repreſentative, who ſpared no pains to fulfil the requeſt of the deceaſed, but exerted all the capacity with which nature had endowed him, in a ſeries of efforts, which, however, did not ſucceed; for, by the time he had been fifteen years in trade, he found himſelf five thouſand pounds worſe than he was when he firſt took poſſeſſion of his father's effects; a circumſtance that af-

fected him ſo nearly, as to detach his inclinations from buſineſs, and induce him to retire from the world, to ſome place where he might at leiſure deplore his misfortunes, and, by frugality, ſecure himſelf from want, and the apprehenſions of a jail, with which his imagination was inceſſantly haunted. He was often heard to expreſs his fears of coming upon the pariſh, and to bleſs God, that, on account of his having been ſo long a houſekeeper, he was entitled to that proviſion. In ſhort, his talents were not naturally active, and there was a ſort of inconſiſtency in his character; for, with all the deſire of amaſſing which any citizen could poſſibly entertain, he was encumbered by a certain indolence and ſluggiſhneſs that prevailed over every intereſted conſideration, and even hindered him from profiting by the ſingleneſs of apprehenſion, and moderation of appetites, which have ſo frequently conduced to the acquiſition of immenſe fortunes, qualities which he poſſeſſed in a very remarkable degree. Nature, in all probability, had mixed little or nothing inflammable in his compoſition; or, whatever ſeeds of exceſs ſhe might have ſown within him, were effectually ſtifled and deſtroyed by the auſterity of his education.

The ſallies of his youth, far from being inordinate or criminal, never exceeded the bounds of that decent jollity, which an extraordinary pot, on extraordinary occaſions, may be ſuppoſed to have produced in a club of ſedate book-keepers, whoſe imaginations were neither very warm nor luxuriant. Little ſubject to refined ſenſations, he was ſcarce ever diſturbed with violent emotions of any kind. The paſſion of love never interrupted his tranquillity; and if, as Mr. Creech ſays after Horace,

> Not to admire is all the art I know,
> To make men happy, and to keep them ſo,

Mr. Pickle was undoubtedly poſſeſſed of that invaluable ſecret; at leaſt he was never known to betray the faineſt ſymptom of tranſport, except one evening at the club, where he obſerved, with ſome demonſtrations of vivacity, that he had dined upon a delicate loin of veal.

Notwithſtanding this appearance of phlegm, he could not help feeling his diſappointments in trade; and, upon the failure of a certain underwriter, by which he loſt five

hundred pounds, declared his deſign of relinquiſhing buſineſs, and retiring to the country. In this reſolution he was comforted and encouraged by his only ſiſter Mrs. Grizzle, who had managed his family ſince the death of his father, and was now in the thirtieth year of her maidenhood, with a fortune of five thouſand pounds, and a large ſtock of economy and devotion.

Theſe qualifications, one would think, might have been the means of abridging the term of her celibacy, as ſhe never expreſſed any averſion to wedlock; but it ſeems ſhe was too delicate in her choice to find a mate to her inclination in the city; for I cannot ſuppoſe that ſhe remained ſo long unſolicited, though the charms of her perſon were not altogether enchanting, nor her manner over and above agreeable. Excluſive of a very wan (not to call it ſallow) complexion, which perhaps was the effects of her virginity and mortification, ſhe had a caſt in her eyes that was not at all engaging, and ſuch an extent of mouth, as no art or affectation could contract into any proportionable dimenſion: Then her piety was rather peeviſh than reſigned, and did not in the leaſt diminiſh a certain ſtatelineſs in her demeanour and converſation, that delighted in communicating the importance and honour of her family, which, by the bye, was not to be traced two generations back, by all the power of heraldry or tradition.

She ſeemed to have renounced all the ideas ſhe had acquired before her father ſerved the office of ſheriff; and the era which regulated the dates of all her obſervations, was the mayoralty of her papa. Nay, ſo ſolicitous was this good lady for the ſupport and propagation of the family name, that, ſuppreſſing every ſelfiſh motive, ſhe actually prevailed upon her brother to combat with his own diſpoſition, and even ſurmount it ſo far, as to declare a paſſion for the perſon whom he afterwards wedded, as we ſhall ſee in the ſequel. Indeed ſhe was the ſpur that inſtigated him in all his extraordinary undertakings; and I queſtion whether or not he would have been able to diſengage himſelf from that courſe of life in which he had ſo long mechanically moved, unleſs he had been rouſed and actuated by her inceſſant exhortations. London, ſhe obſerved, was a receptacle of ini-

quity, where an honeſt unſuſpecting man was every day in danger of falling a ſacrifice to craft; where innocence was expoſed to continual temptations, and virtue eternally perſecuted by malice and ſlander; where every thing was ruled by caprice and corruption, and merit utterly diſcouraged and deſpiſed. This laſt imputation ſhe pronounced with ſuch emphaſis and chagrin, as plainly denoted how far ſhe conſidered herſelf as an example of what ſhe advanced; and really the charge was juſtified by the conſtructions that were put upon her retreat by her female friends, who, far from imputing it to the laudable motives that induced her, inſinuated, in ſarcaſtic commendations, that ſhe had good reaſon to be diſſatisfied with a place where ſhe had been ſo long overlooked; and that it was certainly her wiſeſt courſe to make her laſt effort in the country, where, in all probability, her talents would be leſs eclipſed, and her fortune more attractive.

Be this as it will, her admonitions, though they were powerful enough to convince, would have been inſufficient to overcome the languor and *vis inertiæ* of her brother, had ſhe not reinforced her arguments, by calling in queſtion the credit of two or three merchants, with whom he was embarked in trade.

Alarmed at theſe hints of intelligence, he exerted himſelf effectually; he withdrew his money from trade, and laying it out in bank ſtock and India bonds, removed to a houſe in the country, which his father had built near the ſea-ſide, for the convenience of carrying on a certain branch of traffic in which he had been deeply concerned.

Here then Mr. Pickle fixed his habitation for life, in the ſix-and-thirtieth year of his age; and though the pangs he felt at parting with his intimate companions, and quitting all his former connections, were not quite ſo keen as to produce any dangerous diſorder in his conſtitution, he did not fail to be extremely diſconcerted at his firſt entrance into a ſcene of life to which he was totally a ſtranger. Not but that he met with abundance of people in the country, who, in conſideration of his fortune, courted his acquaintance, and breathed nothing but friendſhip and hoſpitality: Yet even the trouble of receiving and returning theſe civilities, was an intolerable

fatigue to a man of his habits and diſpoſition. He therefore left the care of the ceremonial to his ſiſter, who indulged herſelf in all the pride of formality, while he himſelf, having made a diſcovery of a public houſe in the neighbourhood, went thither every evening, and enjoyed his pipe and cann; being very well ſatisfied with the behaviour of the landlord, whoſe communicative temper was a great comfort to his own taciturnity; for he ſhunned all ſuperfluity of ſpeech, as much as he avoided any other unneceſſary expence.

CHAPTER II.

He is made acquainted with the characters of Commodore Trunnion and his adherents; meets with them by accident, and contracts an intimacy with that commander.

THIS loquacious publican ſoon gave him ſketches of all the characters in the county, and, among others, deſcribed that of his next neighbour, Commodore Trunnion, which was altogether ſingular and odd. "The commodore and your worſhip (ſaid he) will in a ſhort time be hand and glove; he has a power of money; and ſpends it like a prince—that is in his own way—for, to be ſure, he is a little humourſome, as the ſaying is, and ſwears woundily; though I'll be ſworn he means no more harm than a ſucking babe. Lord help us! it will do your honour's heart good to hear him tell a ſtory, as how he lay alongſide of the French, yard-arm and yard-arm, board and board, and of heaving grapplings, and ſtink-pots, and grapes, and round and double-headed partridges, crows and carters—Laud have mercy upon us! he has been a great warrior in his time, and loſt an eye and a heel in the ſervice—Then he does not live like any other Chriſtian land-man; but keeps garriſon in his houſe, as if he were in the midſt of his enemies, and makes his ſervants turn out in the night, watch and watch (as he calls it) all the year round. His habitation is defended by a ditch, over which he has laid a draw-bridge, and planted his court-yard with patereroes continually load-

ed with ſhot, under the direction of one Mr. Hatchway, who had one of his legs ſhot away, while he acted as lieutenant on board the commodore's ſhip; and now being on half pay, lives with him as his companion. The lieutenant is a very brave man, a great joker, and, as the ſaying is, hath got the length of his commander's foot; though he has another favourite in the houſe, called Tom Pipes, that was his boatſwain's mate, and now keeps the ſervants in order. Tom is a man of few words, but an excellent hand at a ſong concerning the boatſwain's whiſtle, huſsle-cap, and chuck-farthing—there is not ſuch another pipe in the county. So that the commodore lives very happy in his own manner; thof he be ſometimes thrown into perilous paſſions and quandaries, by the application of his poor kinſmen, whom he can't abide, becauſe as how ſome of them were the firſt occaſion of his going to ſea. Then he ſweats with agony at the ſight of an attorney; juſt for all the world, as ſome people have an antipathy to a cat; for it ſeems he was once at law, for ſtriking one of his officers, and caſt in a ſwinging ſum. He is moreover exceedingly afflicted with goblins that diſturb his reſt, and keep ſuch a racket in his houſe, that you would think (God bleſs us)! all the devils in hell had broke looſe upon him. It was no longer ago than laſt year about this time, that he was tormented the livelong night by two miſchievous ſpirits that got into his chamber, and played a thouſand pranks about his hammock (for there is not one bed within his walls). Well, Sir, he rung his bell, called up all his ſervants, got lights, and made a thorough ſearch; but the devil a goblin was to be found. He had no ſooner turned in again, and the reſt of the family gone to ſleep, than the foul fiends began their game anew. The commodore got up in the dark, drew his cutlaſs, and attacked them both ſo manfully, that, at five minutes, every thing in the apartment went to pieces. The lieutenant, hearing the noiſe, came to his aſſiſtance. Tom Pipes, being told what was the matter, lighted his match, and, going down to the yard, fired all the paterêroes as ſignals of diſtreſs. Well, to be ſure, the whole pariſh was in a pucker: Some thought the French had landed; others imagined the commodore's houſe was beſet by thieves; for my

own part, I called up two dragoons that are quartered upon me; and they ſwore with deadly oaths, it was a gang of ſmugglers engaged with a party of their regiment that lies in the next village; and mounting their horſes like luſty fellows, rode up into the country as faſt as their beaſts could carry them. Ah, maſter! theſe are hard times, when an induſtrious body cannot earn his bread without fear of the gallows. Your worſhip's father (God reſt his ſoul)! was a good gentleman, and as well reſpected in this pariſh as e'er a he that walks upon neat's leather. And if your honour ſhould want a ſmall parcel of fine tea or a few ankers of right Nants, I'll be bound you ſhall be furniſhed to your heart's content. But, as I was ſaying, the hubbub continued till morning, when the parſon being ſent for, conjured the ſpirits into the Red Sea; and the houſe has been pretty quiet ever ſince. True it is, Mr. Hatchway makes a mock of the whole affair; and told his commander in this very bleſſed ſpot, that the two goblins were no other than a couple of jackdaws which had fallen down the chimney, and made a flapping with their wings up and down the apartment. But the commodore, who is very choleric, and does not like to be jeered, fell into a main high paſſion, and ſtormed like a perfect hurricane, ſwearing that he knew a devil from a jack-daw as well as e'er a man in the three kingdoms. He owned, indeed, that the birds were found, but denied that they were the occaſion of the uproar. For my own part, maſter, I believe much may be ſaid on both ſides of the queſtion; thof, to be ſure, the devil is always going about, as the ſaying is."

This circumſtantial account, extraordinary as it was, never altered one feature in the countenance of Mr. Pickle, who, having heard it to an end, took the pipe from his mouth, ſaying, with a look of infinite ſagacity and deliberation, "I do ſuppoſe he is of the Corniſh Trunnions. What ſort of a woman is his ſpouſe?" "Spouſe! cried the other, odds heart! I don't think he would marry the Queen of Sheba. Lack-a-day! Sir, he won't ſuffer his own maids to lie in the garriſon, but turns them into an out-houſe, every night before the watch is ſet. Bleſs your honour's ſoul, he is, as it were, a very oddiſh kind of a genleman. Your worſhip would have ſeen him before

now; for, when he is well, he and my good maſter Hatchway come hither every evening, and drink a couple of canns of rumbo apiece; but he has been confined to his houſe this fortnight by a plaguy fit of the gout, which, I'll aſſure your worſhip, is a good penny out of my pocket."

At that inſtant, Mr. Pickle's ears were ſaluted with ſuch a ſtrange noiſe as even diſcompoſed the muſcles of his face, which gave immediate indications of alarm. This compoſition of notes at firſt reſembled the crying of quails and croaking of bull-frogs; but, as it approached nearer, he could diſtinguiſh articulate ſounds pronounced with great violence, in ſuch a cadence as one would expect to hear from a human creature ſcolding through the organs of an aſs. It was neither ſpeaking nor braying, but a ſurpriſing mixture of both, employed in the utterrance of terms abſolutely unintelligible to our wondering merchant, who had juſt opened his mouth to expreſs his curioſity, when the landlord, ſtarting up at the well-known ſound, cried, "Odds niggers! there is the commodore with his company, as ſure as I live;" and with his apron began to wipe the duſt off an elbow chair placed at one ſide of the fire, and kept ſacred for the eaſe and convenience of this infirm commander. While he was thus occupied, a voice ſtill more uncouth than the former, bauled aloud, "Ho! the houſe, a hoy!" Upon which the publican, clapping a hand to each ſide of his head, with his thumbs fixed to his ears, rebellowed in the ſame tone, which he had learned to imitate, "Hilloah." The voice again exclaimed, "Have you got any attorneys aboard!" and when the landlord replied, "No, no;" this man of ſtrange expectation came in, ſupported by his two dependents, and diſplayed a figure every way anſwerable to the oddity of his character. He was in ſtature at leaſt ſix feet high, though he had contracted an habit of ſtooping, by living ſo long on board; his complexion was tawny, and his aſpect rendered hideous by a large ſcare acroſs his noſe, and a patch that covered the place of one eye. Being ſeated in his chair with great formality, the landlord complimented him upon his being able to come abroad again; and having, in a whiſper, communicated the name of his fellow gueſt, whom the commodore already knew by re-

port, went to prepare, with all imaginable diſpatch, the firſt allowance of his favourite liquor, in three ſeparate canns (for each was accommodated with his own portion apart), while the lieutenant ſat down on the blind ſide of his commander; and Tom Pipes, knowing his diſtance, with great modeſty, took his ſtation in the rear. After a pauſe of ſome minutes, the converſation was begun by this ferocious chief, who, fixing his eye upon the lieutenant with a ſternneſs of countenance not to be deſcribed, addreſſed him in theſe words: "Damn my eyes! Hatchway, I always took you to be a better ſeamen than to overſet our chaiſe in ſuch fair weather. Blood! did'nt I tell you we were running bump aſhore, and bid you ſet in the lee-brace, and haul upon a wind?" "Yes, replied the other, with an arch ſneer, I do confeſs as how you did give ſuch orders, after you had run us foul of a poſt, ſo as that the carraige lay along, and could not right herſelf." "I run you foul of a poſt! cried the commander; damn my heart! you're a pretty dog, an't you, to tell me ſo aboveboard to my face? Did I take charge of the chaiſe? Did I ſtand at the helm?" "No, anſwered Hatchway; I muſt confeſs you did not ſteer; but howſomever, you cunned all the way, and ſo, as you could not ſee how the land lay, being blind of your larboard eye, we were faſt aſhore, before you knew any thing of the matter. Pipes, who ſtood abaft, can teſtify the truth of what I ſay." "Damn my limbs! reſumed the commodore, I don't value what you or Pipes ſay a rope yarn. You're a couple of mutinous—I'll ſay no more; but you ſhan't run your rig upon me, damn ye. I am the man that learnt you, Jack Hatchway, to ſplice a rope, and raiſe a perpendicular."

The lieutenant, who was perfectly well acquainted with the trim of his captain, did not chooſe to carry on the altercation any farther; but, taking up his cann, drank to the health of the ſtranger, who very courteouſly returned the compliment, without, however, preſuming to join in the converſation, which ſuffered a conſiderable pauſe. During this interruption, Mr. Hatchway's wit diſplayed itſelf in ſeveral practical jokes upon the commodore, with whom, he knew, it was dangerous to tamper in any other way. Being without the ſphere

of his viſion, he ſecurely pilfered his tobacco, drank his rumbo, made wry faces, and (to uſe the vulgar phraſe) cocked his eye at him, to the no ſmall entertainment of the ſpectators, Mr. Pickle himſelf not excepted, who gave evident tokens of uncommon ſatisfaction at the dexterity of this marine pantomime.

Meanwhile, the captain's choler gradually ſubſided, and he was pleaſed to deſire Hatchway, by the familiar and friendly diminutive of Jack, to read a newſpaper that lay on the table before him. This taſk was accordingly undertaken by the lame lieutenant, who, among other paragraphs, read that which follows, with an elevation of voice that ſeemed to prognoſticate ſomething extraordinary: "We are informed, that Admiral Bower will very ſoon be created a Britiſh Peer, for his eminent ſervices during the war, particularly in his late engagement with the French fleet." Trunnion was thunderſtruck at this piece of intelligence. The mug dropped from his hand, and ſhivered into a thouſand pieces; his eye gliſtened like that of a rattleſnake, and ſome minutes elapſed before he could pronounce, "Avaſt! overhaul that article again." It was no ſooner read the ſecond time, than ſmiting the table with his fiſt, he ſtarted up, and with the moſt violent emphaſis of rage and indignation, exclaimed, "Damn my heart and liver! 'tis a land lie, d'ye ſee; and I will maintain it to be a lie, from the ſprit-ſail yard to the mizen-top-ſail haul-yards! Blood and thunder! Will. Bower a peer of this realm! a fellow of yeſterday, that ſcarce knows a maſt from a manger; a ſnotty-noſe boy, whom I myſelf have ordered to the gun, for ſtealing eggs out of the hen-coops! and I, Hauſer Trunnion, who commanded a ſhip before he could keep a reckoning, am laid aſide, d'ye ſee, and forgotten! If ſo be, as this be the caſe, there is a rotten plank in our conſtitution, which ought to be hove down and repaired, damn my eyes! For my own part, d'ye ſee, I was none of your Guinea pigs; I did not riſe in the ſervice by parliamenteering intereſt, or a handſome bitch of a wife. I was not hoiſted over the bellies of better men, nor ſtrutted athwart the quarter-deck in a laced doublet, and thingumbobs at the wriſts. Damn my limbs! I have been a hard-working man, and

ſerved all offices on board from cook's ſhifter to the command of a veſſel. Hear, you Tunley, there's the hand of a ſeamen, you dog." So ſaying, he laid hold on the landlord's fiſt, and honoured him with ſuch a ſqueeze, as compelled him to roar with great vociferation, to the infinite ſatisfaction of the commodore, whoſe features were a little unbended, by this acknowledgment of his vigour; and he thus proceeded in a leſs outrageous ſtrain: "They make a damned noiſe about this engagement with the French; but, egad! it was no more than a bumboat battle, in compariſon with ſome that I have ſeen. There was old Rook and Jennings, and another whom I'll be damned before I name, that knew what fighting was. As for my own ſhare, d'ye ſee, I am none of thoſe that hollow in their own commendation; but if ſo be that I were minded to ſtand my own trumpeter, ſome of thoſe little fellows that hold their heads ſo high, would be taken all aback, as the ſaying is; they would be aſhamed to ſhow their colours, damn my eyes! I once lay eight glaſſes along-ſide of the Flour de Louſe, a French man of war, though her metal was heavier, and her complement larger by an hundred hands than mine. You, Jack Hatchway, damn ye, what d'ye grin at? D'ye think I tell a ſtory, becauſe you never heard it before?"

"Why, look ye, Sir, anſwered the lieutenant, I am glad to find you can ſtand your own trumpeter on occaſion; thof I wiſh you would change the tune; for that is the ſame you have been piping every watch for theſe ten months paſt. Tunley himſelf will tell you, he has heard it five hundred times." "God forgive you, Mr. Hatchway, ſaid the landlord, interrupting him; as I'm an honeſt man and a houſekeeper, I never heard a ſyllab of the matter."

This declaration, though not ſtrictly true, was extremely agreeable to Mr. Trunnion, who, with an air of triumph, obſerved, "Aha! Jack, I thought I ſhould bring you up, with your jibes and your jokes; but ſuppoſe you had heard it before, is that any reaſon why it ſhouldn't be told to another perſon? There's the ſtranger, belike he has heard it five hundred times too; han't you, brother?" addreſſing himſelf to Mr. Pickle; who,

replied, with a look expreſſing curioſity, "No, never," he thus went on: "Well, you ſeem to be an honeſt quiet ſort of a man; and therefore you muſt know, as I ſaid before, I fell in with a French man of war, Cape Finiſterre, bearing about ſix leagues on the weather bow, and the chaſe three leagues to leeward, going before the wind; whereupon I ſet my ſtudding ſails, and, coming up with her, hoiſted my jack and enſign, and poured in a whole broadſide, before you could count three rattlins in the mizen ſhrouds; for I always keep a good look-out, and love to have the firſt fire." "That I'll be ſworn, ſaid Hatchway; for the day we made the Triumph, you ordered the men to fire when ſhe was hull-to, by the ſame token we below pointed the guns at a flight of gulls; and I won a cann of punch from the gunner, by killing the firſt bird." Exaſperated at this ſarcaſm, he replied with great vehemence, "You lie, lubber! damn your bones! what buſineſs have you to come always athwart my hauſe in this manner? You, Pipes, was upon deck, and can bear witneſs, whether or not I fired too ſoon. Speak, you blood of a —, and that upon the word of a ſeaman; how did the chaſe bear of us, when I gave orders to fire?"

Pipes, who had hitherto ſat ſilent, being thus called upon to give his evidence, after divers ſtrange geſticulations, opened his mouth like a gaſping cod, and with a cadence like that of the eaſt wind ſinging through a cranny, pronounced, "Half a quarter of a league right upon our lee-beam." "Nearer, you porpuſs-fac'd ſwab! (cried the commodore), nearer by twelve fathom; but, howſomever, that's enough to prove the falſehood of Hatchway's jaw—and ſo, brother, d'ye ſee, (turning to Mr. Pickle), I lay along-ſide of the Flour de Louſe, yard-arm and yard-arm, plying our great guns and ſmall arms, and heaving in ſtink-pots, powder-bottles, and hand-grenades, till our ſhot was all expended, double-headed, partridge, and grape; then we loaded with iron crows, marlin ſpikes, and old nails; but finding the Frenchman took a great deal of drubbing, and that he had ſhot away all our rigging, and killed and wounded a great number of our men, d'ye ſee, I reſolved to run him on board upon his quarter, and ſo ordered our grapplings to be got

ready; but Monſieur, perceiving what we were about, filled his topſails and ſheered off, leaving us like a log upon the water, and our ſcuppers running with blood."

Mr. Pickle and the landlord paid ſuch extraordinary attention to the rehearſal of this exploit, that Trunnion was encouraged to entertain them with more ſtories of the ſame nature; after which he obſerved, by way of encomium on the government, that all he had gained in the ſervice was a lame foot and the loſs of an eye. The lieutenant, who could not find in his heart to loſe any opportunity of being witty at the expence of his commander, gave a looſe to his ſatirical talent once more, ſaying, "I have heard as how you came by your lame foot, by having your upper decks overſtowed with liquor, whereby you became crank, and roll'd, d'ye ſee, in ſuch a manner, that, by a pitch of the ſhip, your ſtarboard heel was jammed in one of the ſcuppers; and as for the matter of your eye, that was knocked out by your own crew when the Lightning was paid off: There's poor Pipes, who was beaten into all the colours of the rainbow for taking your part, and giving you time to ſheer off; and I don't find as how you have rewarded him according as he deſerves." As the commodore could not deny the truth of theſe anecdotes, however unſeaſonably they were introduced, he affected to receive them with good humour, as jokes of the lieutenant's own inventing; and replied, "Ay, ay, Jack, every body knows your tongue is no ſlander; but, howſomever, I'll work you to an oil for this, you dog." So ſaying, he lifted up one of his crutches, intending to lay it gently acroſs Mr. Hatchway's pate; but Jack, with great agility, tilted up his wooden leg, with which he warded off the blow, to the no ſmall admiration of Mr. Pickle, and utter aſtoniſhment of the landlord, who, by the bye, had expreſſed the ſame amazement, at the ſame feat, at the ſame hour, every night for three months before. Trunnion then directing his eye to the boatſwain's mate. "You, Pipes, (ſaid he), do you go about and tell people that I did not reward you for ſtanding by me, when I was huſsled by theſe rebellious rapſcallions; damn you, han't you been rated on the books ever ſince?" Tom, who indeed had no words to ſpare, ſat ſmoking

his pipe with great indifference, and never dreamed of paying any regard to theſe interrogations; which being repeated and reinforced with many oaths, that (however) produced no effect, the commodore pulled out his purſe, ſaying. "Here, you bitch's baby, here's ſomething better than a ſmart ticket;" and threw it at his ſilent deliverer, who received and pocketed his bounty, without the leaſt demonſtration of ſurpriſe or ſatisfaction; while the donor turning to Mr. Pickle, "You ſee, brother, (ſaid he), I make good the old ſaying, we ſailors get money like horſes, and ſpend it like aſſes; come, Pipes, let's have the boatſwain's whiſtle, and be jovial." This muſician accordingly applied to his mouth the ſilver inſtrument that hung at a button hole of his jacket, by a chain of the ſame metal, and, though not quite ſo raviſhing as the pipe of Hermes, produced a ſound ſo loud and ſhrill, that the ſtranger (as it were inſtinctively) ſtopped his ears, to preſerve his organs of hearing from ſuch a dangerous invaſion. The prelude being thus executed, Pipes fixed his eyes upon the egg of an oſtrich that depended from the ceiling, and without once moving them from that object, performed the whole cantata in a tone of voice that ſeemed to be the joint iſſue of an Iriſh bagpipe and a ſow-gelder's horn; the commodore, the lieutenant, and landlord joined in the chorus, repeating this elegant ſtanza,

Buſtle, buſtle, brave boys!
Let us ſing, let us toil,
And drink all the while,
Since labour's the price of our joys.

The third line was no ſooner pronounced, than the cann was lifted to every man's mouth with admirable uniformity; and the next word taken up at the end of their draught with a twang equally expreſſive and harmonious. In ſhort, the company began to underſtand one another; Mr. Pickle ſeemed to reliſh the entertainment, and a correſpondence immediately commenced between him and Trunnion, who ſhook him by the hand, drank to further acquaintance, and even invited him to a meſs of pork and peaſe in the garriſon. The compliment was returned, good fellowſhip prevailed, and the night was pretty far advanced when the merchant's man arrived with a lan-

thorn to light his maſter home; upon which the new friends parted, after a mutual promiſe of meeting next evening in the ſame place.

CHAPTER III.

Mrs. Grizzle exerts herſelf in finding a proper match for her brother; who is accordingly introduced to the young lady, whom he marries in due ſeaſon.

I HAVE been the more circumſtantial in opening the character of Trunnion, becauſe he bears a conſiderable ſhare in the courſe of theſe memoirs; but now it is high time to reſume the conſideration of Mrs. Grizzle, who, ſince her arrival in the country, had been engroſſed by a double care, namely that of finding a ſuitable match for her brother, and a comfortable yoke-fellow for herſelf.

Neither was this aim the reſult of any ſiniſter or frail ſuggeſtion, but the pure dictates of that laudable ambition, which prompted her to the preſervation of the family name. Nay, ſo diſintereſted was ſhe in this purſuit, that, poſtponing her neareſt concern, or at leaſt leaving her own fate to the ſilent operation of her charms, ſhe laboured with ſuch indefatigable zeal in behalf of her brother, that, before they had been three months ſettled in the country, the general topic of converſation in the neighbourhood, was an intended match between the rich Mr. Pickle and the fair Miſs Appleby, daughter of a gentleman who lived in the next pariſh, and who, though he had but little fortune to beſtow upon his children, had (to uſe his own phraſe) repleniſhed their veins with ſome of the beſt blood in the country.

This young lady, whoſe character and diſpoſition Mrs. Grizzle had inveſtigated to her own ſatisfaction, was deſtined for the ſpouſe of Mr. Pickle, and an overture accordingly made to her father, who being overjoyed at the propoſal, gave his conſent without heſitation, and even recommended the immediate execution of the project with ſuch eagerneſs, as ſeemed to indicate either a ſuſpicion of Mr. Pickle's conſtancy, or a diſſidence of his own daugh-

ter's complexion, which perhaps he thought too ſanguine to keep much longer cool. The previous point being thus ſettled, our merchant, at the inſtigation of Mrs. Grizzle, went to viſit his future father-in-law, and was introduced to the daughter, with whom he had, that ſame afternoon, an opportunity of being alone. What paſſed in that interview, I never could learn, though, from the character of the ſuitor, the reader may juſtly conclude, that ſhe was not much teized with the impertinence of his addreſſes. He was not, I believe, the leſs welcome for that reaſon; certain it is, ſhe made no objection to his taciturnity, and when her father communicated his reſolution, acquieſced with the moſt pious reſignation. But Mrs. Grizzle, in order to give the lady a more favourable idea of his intellects than what his converſation could poſſibly inſpire, was reſolved to dictate a letter, which her brother ſhould tranſcribe and tranſmit to his miſtreſs, as the produce of his own underſtanding, and had actually compoſed a very tender billet for this purpoſe; yet her intention was entirely fruſtrated by the miſapprehenſion of the lover himſelf, who, in conſequence of his ſiſter's repeated admonitions, anticipated her ſcheme, by writing for himſelf, and diſpatching the letter one afternoon, while Mrs. Grizzle was viſiting at the parſon's.

Neither was this ſtep the effect of his vanity or precipitation; but having been often aſſured by his ſiſter, that it was abſolutely neceſſary for him to make a declaration of his love in writing, he took this opportunity of acting in conformity with her advice, when his imagination was unengaged or undiſturbed by any other ſuggeſtion, without ſuſpecting the leaſt that ſhe intended to ſave him the trouble of exerciſing his own genius. Left, therefore, as he imagined, to his own inventions, he ſat down and produced the following morceau, which was tranſmitted to Miſs Appleby, before his ſiſter and counſellor had the leaſt intimation of the affair.

Miſs SALLY APPLEBY.

"MADAM,

"UNDERSTANDING you have a parcel of heart, warranted ſound, to be diſpoſed of, ſhall be willing to treat

for ſaid commodity, on reaſonable terms; doubt not ſhall agree for ſame; ſhall wait of you for further information, when and where you ſhall appoint. This the needful from

Your's, &c.

GAM. PICKLE."

This laconic epiſtle, ſimple and unadorned as it was, met with as cordial a reception from the perſon to whom it was addreſſed, as if it had been couched in the moſt elegant terms that delicacy of paſſion and cultivated genius could ſupply; nay, I believe, was the more welcome, on account of its mercantile plainneſs: Becauſe, when an advantageous match is in view, a ſenſible woman often conſiders the flowery profeſſions and rapturous exclamations of love as enſnaring ambiguities, or at beſt impertinent preliminaries, that retard the treaty they are deſigned to promote; whereas Mr. Pickle removed all diſagreeable uncertainty, by deſcending at once to the moſt intereſting particular.

She had no ſooner, as a dutiful child, communicated this billet-doux to her father, than he, as a careful parent, viſited Mr. Pickle, and, in preſence of Mrs. Grizzle, demanded a formal explanation of his ſentiments with regard to his daughter Sally. Mr. Gamaliel, without any ceremony, aſſured him he had a reſpect for the young woman, and, with his good leave, would take her for better for worſe. Mr. Appleby, after having expreſſed his ſatisfaction that he had fixed his affections in his family, comforted the lover with the aſſurance of his being agreeable to the young lady, and they forthwith proceeded to the articles of the marriage-ſettlement, which being diſcuſſed and determined, a lawyer was ordered to engroſs them; the wedding-clothes were bought, and, in ſhort, a day was appointed for the celebration of their nuptials, to which every body of any faſhion in the neighbourhood was invited. Among theſe Commodore Trunnion and Mr. Hatchway were not forgotten, being the ſole companions of the bridegroom, with whom, by this time, they had contracted a ſort of intimacy at their nocturnal rendezvous.

have been ſo forward in deſtroying her own expectations, by adviſing and promoting the event at which they were now ſo happily aſſembled; but ſhe hoped ſhe ſhould always have virtue enough to poſtpone any intereſted conſideration, when it ſhould happen to claſh with the happineſs of her friends. Finally, ſuch was her modeſty and ſelf-denial, that ſhe induſtriouſly informed thoſe whom it might concern, that ſhe was no leſs than three years older than the bride; though, had ſhe added ten to the reckoning, ſhe would have committed no miſtake in point of computation.

To contribute as much as lay in her power to the ſatisfaction of all preſent, ſhe, in the afternoon, regaled them with a tune on the harpſichord, accompanied with her voice, which, though not the moſt melodious in the world, I dare ſay, would have been equally at their ſervice, could ſhe have vied with Philomel in ſong; and as the laſt effort of her complaiſance, when dancing was propoſed, ſhe was prevailed upon, at the requeſt of her new ſiſter, to open the ball in perſon.

In a word, Mrs. Grizzle was the principal figure in this feſtival, and almoſt eclipſed the bride, who, far from ſeeming to diſpute the pre-eminence, very wiſely allowed her to make the beſt of her talents; contenting herſelf with the lot to which fortune had already called her, and which ſhe imagined would not be the leſs deſirable, if her ſiſter-in-law were detached from the family.

I believe I need ſcarce advertiſe the reader, that, during this whole entertainment, the commodore and his lieutenant were quite out of their element; and this, indeed, was the caſe with the bridegroom himſelf, who, being utterly unacquainted with any ſort of polite commerce, found himſelf under a very diſagreeable reſtraint during the whole ſcene.

Trunnion, who had ſcarce ever been on ſhore till he was paid off, and never once in his whole life in the company of any females above the rank of thoſe who herd upon the Point at Portſmouth, was more embarraſſed about his behaviour, than if he had been ſurrounded at ſea by the whole French navy. He had never pronounced the word Madam ſince he was born; ſo

that, far from entering into converſation with the ladies, he would not even return the compliment, or give the leaſt nod of civility when they drank to his health; and I verily believe, would rather have ſuffered ſuffocation than allowed the ſimple phraſe, *your ſervant*, to proceed from his mouth. He was altogether as inflexible with reſpect to the attitudes of his body; for, either through obſtinacy or baſhfulneſs, he ſat upright without motion, inſomuch that he provoked the mirth of a certain wag, who addreſſing himſelf to the lieutenant, aſked whether that was the commodore himſelf, or the wooden lion that uſed to ſtand at his gate? An image to which, it muſt be owned, Mr. Trunnion's perſon bore no faint reſemblance.

Mr. Hatchway, who was not quite ſo unpoliſhed as the commodore, and had certain notions that ſeemed to approach the ideas of common life, made a leſs uncouth appearance; but then he was a wit, and though of a very peculiar genius, partook largely of that diſpoſition which is common to all wits, who never enjoy themſelves, except when their talents meet with thoſe marks of diſtinction and veneration, which (in their own opinion) they deſerve.

Theſe circumſtances being premiſed, it is not to be wondered at, if this triumvirate made no objections to the propoſal, when ſome of the grave perſonages of the company made a motion for adjourning into another apartment, where they might enjoy their pipes and bottles, while the young folks indulged themſelves in the continuance of their own favourite diverſion. Thus reſcued, as it were, from a ſtate of annihilation, the firſt uſe the two lads of the caſtle made of their exiſtence, was to ply the bridegroom ſo hard with bumpers, that, in leſs than an hour, he made divers efforts to ſing, and ſoon after was carried to bed, deprived of all manner of ſenſation, to the utter diſappointment of the bridemen and maids, who, by this accident, were prevented from throwing the ſtocking, and performing certain other ceremonies practiſed on ſuch occaſions. As for the bride, ſhe bore this misfortune with great good humour; and indeed, on all occaſions, behaved like a diſcreet woman,

perfectly well acquainted with the nature of her own ſituation.

CHAPTER V.

Mrs. Pickle aſſumes the reins of government in her own family; her ſiſter-in-law undertakes an enterpriſe of great moment; but is for ſome time diverted from her purpoſe by a very intereſting conſideration.

WHATEVER deference, not to ſay ſubmiſſion, ſhe had paid to Mrs. Grizzle before ſhe was ſo nearly allied to her family, ſhe no ſooner became Mrs. Pickle, than ſhe thought it incumbent upon her to act up to the dignity of the character; and the very day after the marriage, ventured to diſpute with her ſiſter-in-law on the ſubject of her own pedigree, which ſhe affirmed to be more honourable in all reſpects than that of her huſband; obſerving that ſeveral younger brothers of her houſe had arrived at the ſtation of Lord Mayor of London, which was the higheſt pitch of greatneſs that any of Mr. Pickle's predeceſſors had ever attained.

This preſumption was like a thunderbolt to Mrs. Grizzle, who began to perceive that ſhe had not ſucceeded quite ſo well as ſhe imagined, in ſelecting for her brother a gentle and obedient yoke-fellow, who would always treat her with that profound reſpect which ſhe thought due to her ſuperior genius, and be entirely regulated by her advice and direction: However, ſhe ſtill continued to manage the reins of government in the houſe, reprehending the ſervants as uſual; an office ſhe performed with great capacity, and in which ſhe ſeemed to take ſingular delight, until Mrs. Pickle, on pretence of conſulting her eaſe, told her one day ſhe would take that trouble upon herſelf, and for the future aſſume the management of her own family. Nothing could be more mortifying to Mrs. Grizzle than ſuch a declaration, to which, after a conſiderable pauſe, and ſtrange diſtortion of look, ſhe replied, "I ſhall never refuſe or repine at any trouble that may conduce to my brother's advantage." "Dear madam," anſwered the ſiſter, "I am

infinitely obliged to your kind concern for Mr. Pickle's intereſt, which I conſider as my own, but I cannot bear to ſee you a ſufferer by your friendſhip: and, therefore, inſiſt upon exempting you from the fatigue you have borne ſo long."

In vain did the other proteſt that ſhe took pleaſure in the taſk; Mrs. Pickle aſcribed the aſſurance to her exceſs of complaiſance, and expreſſed ſuch tenderneſs of zeal for her dear ſiſter's health and tranquillity, that the reluctant maiden found herſelf obliged to reſign her authority, without enjoying the leaſt pretext for complaining of her being depoſed.

This diſgrace was attended by a fit of peeviſh devotion that laſted three or four weeks; during which period, ſhe had the additional chagrin of ſeeing the young lady gain an aſcendency over the mind of her brother, who was perſuaded to ſet up a gay equipage, and improve his houſe-keeping, by an augmentation in his expence, to the amount of a thouſand a year at leaſt; though his alteration in the economy of his houſehold effected no change in his own diſpoſition, or manner of life; for as ſoon as the painful ceremony of receiving and returning viſits was performed, he had recourſe again to the company of his ſea friends, with whom he ſpent the beſt part of his time. But if he was ſatisfied with his condition, the caſe was otherwiſe with Mrs. Grizzle, who finding her importance in the family greatly diminiſhed, her attractions neglected by all the male-ſex in the neighbourhood, and the withering hand of time hang threatening over her head, began to feel the horror of eternal virginity, and, in a ſort of deſperation, reſolved at any rate to reſcue herſelf from that uncomfortable ſituation. Thus determined, ſhe formed a plan, the execution of which, to a ſpirit leſs enterpriſing and ſufficient than hers, would have appeared altogether impracticable; this was no other than to make a conqueſt of the commodore's heart, which the reader will eaſily believe was not very ſuſceptible of tender impreſſions; but, on the contrary, fortified with inſenſibility and prejudice againſt the charms of the whole ſex, and particularly prepoſſeſſed to the prejudice of that claſs diſtinguiſhed by the appellation of old maids, in which Mrs. Grizzle was by this time unhappily rank-

ed. She nevertheleſs took the field, and, having inveſted this ſeemingly impregnable fortreſs, began to break ground one day, when Trunnion dined at her brother's, by ſpringing certain enſnaring commendations on the honeſty and ſincerity of ſea-faring people, paying a particular attention to his plate, and affecting a ſimper of approbation at every thing he ſaid, which by any means ſhe could conſtrue into a joke, or with modeſty be ſuppoſed to hear; nay, even when he left decency on the left hand (which was often the caſe), ſhe ventured to reprimand his freedom of ſpeech with a gracious grin, ſaying, "Sure you gentlemen belonging to the ſea have ſuch an odd way with you." But all this complacency was ſo ineffectual, that, far from ſuſpecting the true cauſe of it, the commodore, that very evening, at the club, in preſence of her brother, with whom by this time he could take any manner of freedom, did not ſcruple to damn her for a ſquinting, block-faced, chattering piſs-kitchen; and immediately after drank deſpair to all old maids. The toaſt Mr. Pickle pledged without the leaſt heſitation, and next day intimated to his ſiſter, who bore the indignity with ſurpriſing reſignation, and did not therefore deſiſt from her ſcheme, unpromiſing as it ſeemed to be, until her attention was called off, and engaged in another care, which, for ſome time, interrupted the progreſs of this deſign. Her ſiſter had not been married many months, when ſhe exhibited evident ſymptoms of pregnancy, to the general ſatisfaction of all concerned, and the inexpreſſible joy of Mrs. Grizzle, who (as we have already hinted) was more intereſted in the preſervation of the family name, than in any other conſideration whatever. She therefore no ſooner diſcovered appearances to juſtify and confirm her hopes, than poſtponing her own purpoſe, and laying aſide that pique and reſentment ſhe had conceived from the behaviour of Mrs. Pickle, when ſhe ſuperſeded her authority, or perhaps conſidering her in no other light than that of the vehicle which contained and was deſtined to convey her brother's heir to light, ſhe determined to exert her uttermoſt in nurſing, tending, and cheriſhing her, during the term of her important charge. With this view ſhe purchaſed Culpepper's Midwifery, which, with that ſagacious performance dig-

nified with Ariſtotle's name, ſhe ſtudied with indefatigable care, and diligently peruſed the Complete Houſewife, together with Quincy's Diſpenſatory, culling every jelly, marmalade, and conſerve which theſe authors recommend as either ſalutary or toothſome, for the benefit and comfort of her ſiſter-in-law, during her geſtation. She reſtricted her from eating roots, pot-herbs, fruit, and all ſorts of vegetables; and one day, when Mrs. Pickle had plucked a peach with her own hand, and was in the very act of putting it between her teeth, Mrs. Grizzle perceived the raſh attempt, and running up to her, fell upon her knees in the garden, entreating her, with tears in her eyes, to reſiſt ſuch a pernicious appetite. Her requeſt was no ſooner complied with, than, recollecting that, if her ſiſter's longing was baulked, the child might be affected with ſome diſagreeable mark, or deplorable diſeaſe, ſhe begged as earneſtly that ſhe would ſwallow the fruit, and, in the mean time, ran for ſome cordial water of her own compoſing, which ſhe forced upon her ſiſter, as an antidote to the poiſon ſhe had received.

This exceſſive zeal and tenderneſs did not fail to be very troubleſome to Mrs. Pickle, who having revolved divers plans for the recovery of her own eaſe, at length determined to engage Mrs. Grizzle in ſuch employment as would interrupt that cloſe attendance which ſhe found ſo teazing and diſagreeable. Neither did ſhe wait long for an opportunity of putting her reſolution in practice. The very next day, a gentleman happening to dine with Mr. Pickle, unfortunately mentioned a pine-apple, part of which he had eaten a week before at the houſe of a nobleman who lived in another part of the country, at the diſtance of an hundred miles at leaſt.

The name of this fatal fruit was no ſooner pronounced than Mrs. Grizzle, who inceſſantly watched her ſiſter's looks, took the alarm, becauſe ſhe thought they gave certain indications of curioſity and deſire; and, after having obſerved that ſhe herſelf could never eat pine-apples, which were altogether unnatural productions, extorted by the force of artificial fire, out of filthy manure, aſked with a faultering voice, if Mrs. Pickle was not of her way of thinking? This young lady, who wanted neither ſlyneſs nor penetration, at once divined her meaning,

and replied with ſeeming unconcern, that for her own part, ſhe ſhould never repine, if there was not a pine-apple in the univerſe, provided ſhe could indulge herſelf with the fruits of her own country.

This anſwer was calculated for the benefit of the ſtranger, who would certainly have ſuffered for his imprudence by the reſentment of Mrs. Grizzle, had her ſiſter expreſſed the leaſt reliſh for the fruit in queſtion. It had the deſired effect, and re-eſtabliſhed the peace of the company, which was not a little endangered by the gentleman's want of conſideration. Next morning, however, after breakfaſt, the pregnant lady, in purſuance of her plan, yawned (as it were by accident) full in the face of her maiden ſiſter, who being infinitely diſturbed by this convulſion, affirmed it was a ſymptom of longing, and inſiſted upon knowing the object in deſire, when Mrs. Pickle, aſſuming an affected ſmile, told her ſhe had eaten a moſt delicious pine-apple in her ſleep. This declaration was attended with an immediate ſcream, uttered by Mrs. Grizzle, who inſtantly perceiving her ſiſter ſurpriſed at the exclamation, claſped her in her arms, and aſſured her, with a ſort of a hyſterical laugh, that ſhe could not help ſcreaming with joy, becauſe ſhe had it in her power to gratify her dear ſiſter's wiſh; a lady in the neighbourhood having promiſed to ſend her, in a preſent, a couple of delicate pine-apples, which ſhe would that very day go in queſt of.

Mrs. Pickle would by no means conſent to this propoſal, on pretence of ſparing the other unneceſſary fatigue; and aſſured her, that if ſhe had any deſire to eat a pine-apple, it was ſo faint, that the diſappointment could produce no bad conſequence. But this aſſurance was conveyed in a manner (which ſhe knew very well how to adopt) that, inſtead of diſſuading, rather ſtimulated Mrs. Grizzle to ſet out immediately, not on a viſit to that lady, whoſe promiſe ſhe herſelf had feigned with a view of conſulting her ſiſter's tranquillity, but on a random ſearch through the whole country for this unlucky fruit, which was like to produce ſo much vexation and prejudice to her and her father's houſe.

During three whole days and nights, did ſhe, attended by a valet, ride from place to place without ſucceſs, unmindful of her health, and careleſs of her reputation, that began to ſuffer from the nature of her inquiry, which was purſued with ſuch peculiar eagerneſs and diſtraction, that every body with whom ſhe converſed looked upon her as an unhappy perſon, whoſe intellects were not a little diſordered.

Baffled in all her reſearches within the county, ſhe at length reſolved to viſit that very nobleman, at whoſe houſe the officious ſtranger had been (for her) ſo unfortunately regaled, and actually arrived in a poſt-chaiſe at the place of his habitation, where ſhe introduced her buſineſs as an affair on which the happineſs of a whole family depended. By virtue of a preſent to his Lordſhip's gardener ſhe procured the Heſperian fruit, with which ſhe returned in triumph.

CHAPTER VI.

Mrs. Grizzle is indefatigable in gratifying her ſiſter's longings. Peregrine is born, and managed contrary to the directions and remonſtrances of his aunt, who is diſguſted upon that account, and reſumes the plan which ſhe had before rejected.

THE ſucceſs of this device would have encouraged Mrs. Pickle to practiſe more of the ſame ſort upon her ſiſter-in-law, had ſhe not been deterred by a violent fever which ſeized her zealous ally, in conſequence of the fatigue and uneaſineſs ſhe had undergone; which, while it laſted, as effectually conduced to her repoſe, as any other ſtratagem ſhe could invent. But Mrs. Grizzle's health was no ſooner reſtored, than the other, being as much incommoded as ever, was obliged, in her own defence, to have recourſe to ſome other contrivance; and managed her artifices in ſuch a manner, as leaves it at this day a doubt whether ſhe was really ſo whimſical and capricious in her appetites as ſhe herſelf pretended to be; for her longings were not reſtricted to the demands of the palate and ſtomach, but alſo affected all the other or-

gans of ſenſe, and even invaded her imagination, which at this period ſeemed to be ſtrangely diſeaſed.

One time ſhe longed to pinch her huſband's ear; and it was with infinite difficulty that his ſiſter could prevail upon him to undergo the operation. Yet this taſk was eaſy, in compariſon with another ſhe undertook for the gratification of Mrs. Pickle's unaccountable deſire; which was no other than to perſuade the commodore to ſubmit his chin to the mercy of the big-bellied lady, who ardently wiſhed for an opportunity of plucking three black hairs from his beard. When this propoſal was firſt communicated to Mr. Trunnion by the huſband, his anſwer was nothing but a dreadful effuſion of oaths, accompanied with ſuch a ſtare, and delivered in ſuch a tone of voice, as terrified the poor beſeecher into immediate ſilence; ſo that Mrs. Grizzle was fain to take the whole enterpriſe upon herſelf, and next day went to the garriſon accordingly, where, having obtained entrance by means of the lieutenant, who, while his commander was aſleep, ordered her to be admitted for the joke's ſake, ſhe waited patiently till he turned out, and then accoſted him in the yard, where he uſed to perform his morning walk. He was thunderſtruck at the appearance of a woman in a place which he had hitherto kept ſacred from the whole ſex, and immediately began to utter an apoſtrophe to Tom Pipes, whoſe turn it was then to watch; when Mrs. Grizzle, falling on her knees before him, conjured him with many pathetic ſupplications, to hear and grant her requeſt, which was no ſooner ſignified, than he bellowed in ſuch an outrageous manner, that the whole court re-echoed the opprobrious term *bitch*, and the word *damnation*, which he repeated with ſurpriſing volubility, without any ſort of propriety or connection; and retreated into his penetralia, leaving the baffled devotee in the humble poſture ſhe had ſo unſucceſsfully choſen to melt his obdurate heart.

Mortifying as this repulſe muſt have been to a lady of her ſtately diſpoſition, ſhe did not relinquiſh her aim, but endeavoured to intereſt the commodore's counſellors and adherents in her cauſe. With this view ſhe ſolicited the intereſt of Mr. Hatchway, who, being highly pleaſed with a circumſtance ſo productive of mirth and diverſion,

readily entered into her meaſures, and promiſed to employ his whole influence for her ſatisfaction; and, as for the boatſwain's mate, he was rendered propitious by the preſent of a guinea, which ſhe ſlipped into his hand. In ſhort, Mrs. Grizzle was continually engaged in this negotiation for the ſpace of ten days, during which the commodore was ſo inceſſantly peſtered with her remonſtrances, and the admonitions of his aſſociates, that he ſwore his people had a deſign upon his life, which becoming a burden to him, he at laſt complied, and was conducted to the ſcene like a victim to the altar, or rather like a reluctant bear, when he is led to the ſtake amidſt the ſhouts and cries of butchers and their dogs. After all, this victory was not quite ſo deciſive as the conquerors imagined; for the patient being ſet, and the performer prepared with a pair of pincers, a ſmall difficulty occurred: She could not for ſome time diſcern one black hair on the whole ſuperficies of Mr. Trunnion's face; when Mrs. Grizzle, very much alarmed and diſconcerted, had recourſe to a magnifying glaſs that ſtood upon her toilet; and, after a moſt accurate examination, diſcovered a fibre of a duſky hue, to which the inſtrument being applied, Mrs. Pickle pulled it up by the roots, to the no ſmall diſcompoſure of the owner, who feeling the ſmart much more ſevere than he had expected, ſtarted up, and ſwore he would not part with another hair to ſave them all from damnation.

Mr. Hatchway exhorted him to patience and reſignation; Mrs. Grizzle repeated her entreaties with great humility; but finding him deaf to all her prayers, and abſolutely bent upon leaving the houſe, ſhe claſped his knees, and begged for the love of God that he would have compaſſion upon a diſtreſſed family, and endure a little more for the ſake of the poor infant, who would otherwiſe be born with a gray beard upon its chin. Far from being melted, he was rather exaſperated by this reflection; to which he replied with great indignation, "Damn you for a yaw-ſighted-bitch! he'll be hanged long enough before he has any beard at all:" So ſaying, he diſengaged himſelf from her embraces, flung out at the door, and halted homewards with ſuch ſurpriſing ſpeed, that the lieutenant could not overtake him until

he had arrived at his own gate; and Mrs. Grizzle was ſo much affected with his eſcape, that her ſiſter, in pure compaſſion, deſired ſhe would not afflict herſelf, proteſting that her own wiſh was already gratified, for ſhe had plucked three hairs at once, having from the beginning been dubious of the commodore's patience. But the labours of this aſſiduous kinſwoman did not end with the achievement of this adventure; her eloquence or induſtry was employed without ceaſing, in the performance of other taſks impoſed by the ingenious craft of her ſiſter-in-law, who, at another time, conceived an inſuppreſſible affection for a fricaſſee of frogs, which ſhould be the genuine natives of France; ſo that there was a neceſſity for diſpatching a meſſenger on purpoſe to that kingdom: But, as ſhe could not depend upon the integrity of any common ſervant, Mrs. Grizzle undertook that province, and actually ſet ſail in a cutter for Boulogne, from whence ſhe returned in eight-and-forty hours with a tub full of thoſe live animals, which, being dreſſed according to art, her ſiſter would not taſte them, on pretence that her fit of longing was paſt; but then her inclinations took a different turn, and fixed themſelves upon a curious implement belonging to a lady of quality in the neighbourhood, which was reported to be a very great curioſity; this was no other than a porcelain chamber-pot of admirable workmanſhip, contrived by the honourable owner, who kept it for her own private uſe, and cheriſhed it as an utenſil of ineſtimable value.

Mrs. Grizzle ſhuddered at the firſt hint ſhe received of her ſiſter's deſire to poſſeſs this piece of furniture, becauſe ſhe knew it was not to be purchaſed; and the lady's character, which was none of the moſt amiable in point of humanity and condeſcenſion, forbade all hopes of borrowing it for a ſeaſon; ſhe therefore attempted to reaſon down this capricious appetite, as an extravagance of imagination which ought to be combated and repreſſed; and Mrs. Pickle, to all appearance, was convinced and ſatisfied by her arguments and advice; but, nevertheleſs, could make uſe of no other convenience, and was threatened with a very dangerous ſuppreſſion. Rouſed at the peril in which ſhe ſuppoſed her to be, Mrs. Grizzle flew to the lady's houſe, and, having obtained a

private audience, diſcloſed the melancholy ſituation of her ſiſter, and implored the benevolence of her ladyſhip; who, contrary to expectation, received her very graciouſly, and conſented to indulge Mrs. Pickle's longing. Mr. Pickle began to be out of humour at the expence to which he was expoſed by the caprice of his wife, who was herſelf alarmed at this laſt accident, and, for the future, kept her fancy within bounds; inſomuch, that, without being ſubject to any more extraordinary trouble, Mrs. Grizzle reaped the long-wiſhed-for fruits of her deareſt expectation in the birth of a fine boy, whom her ſiſter in a few months brought into the world.

I ſhall omit the deſcription of the rejoicings, which were infinite, on this important occaſion, and only obſerve, that Mrs. Pickle's mother and aunt ſtood godmothers, and the commodore aſſiſted at the ceremony as godfather to the child, who was chriſtened by the name of Peregrine, in compliment to the memory of a deceaſed uncle. While the mother was confined to her bed, and incapable of maintaining her own authority, Mrs. Grizzle took charge of the infant by a double claim; and ſuperintended with ſurpriſing vigilance the nurſe and midwife in all the particulars of their reſpective offices, which were performed by her expreſs direction. But no ſooner was Mrs. Pickle in a condition to re-aſſume the management of her own affairs, than ſhe thought proper to alter certain regulations concerning the child, which had obtained in conſequence of her ſiſter's orders, directing, among other innovations, that the bandages with which the infant had been ſo neatly rolled up, like an Egyptian mummy, ſhould be looſened and laid aſide, in order to rid nature of all reſtraint, and give the blood free ſcope to circulate; and with her own hands ſhe plunged him headlong every morning in a tub-full of cold water. This operation ſeemed ſo barbarous to the tender-hearted Mrs. Grizzle, that ſhe not only oppoſed it with all her eloquence, ſhedding abundance of tears over the ſacrifice when it was made, but took horſe immediately, and departed for the habitation of an eminent country phyſician, whom ſhe conſulted in theſe words: "Pray, Doctor, is it not both dangerous and cruel to be the means of letting a poor tender infant periſh, by

ſouſing it in water as cold as ice?" "Yes," replied the doctor, "downright murder, I affirm." "I ſee you are a perſon of great learning and ſagacity," ſaid the other; "and I muſt beg you will be ſo good as to ſignify your opinion in your own hand-writing." The doctor immediately complied with her requeſt, and expreſſed himſelf upon a ſlip of paper to this purpoſe—

Theſe are to certify whom it may concern, that I firmly believe, and it is my unalterable opinion, that whoſoever letteth an infant periſh, by ſouſing it in cold water, even though the ſaid water ſhould not be ſo cold as ice, is in effect guilty of the murder of the ſaid infant—as witneſs my hand,

Comfit Colycynth.

Having obtained this certificate, for which the phyſician was immediately acknowledged, ſhe returned exulting, and hoping, with ſuch authority, to overthrow all oppoſition. Accordingly, next morning, when her nephew was about to undergo his diurnal baptiſm, ſhe produced the commiſſion, whereby ſhe conceived herſelf empowered to over-rule ſuch inhuman proceedings. But ſhe was diſappointed in her expectation, confident as it was; not that Mrs. Pickle pretended to differ in opinion from Dr. Colycynth, "for whoſe character and ſentiments (ſaid ſhe) I have ſuch veneration, that I ſhall carefully obſerve the caution implied in this very certificate, by which, far from condemning my method of practice, he only aſſerts that killing is murder; an aſſeveration, the truth of which, it is to be hoped, I ſhall never diſpute."

Mrs. Grizzle, who, ſooth to ſay, had rather too ſuperficially conſidered the clauſe by which ſhe thought herſelf authoriſed, peruſed the paper with more accuracy, and was confounded at her own want of penetration. Yet, though ſhe was confuted, ſhe was by no means convinced that her objections to the cold bath were unreaſonable; on the contrary, after having beſtowed ſundry opprobrious epithets on the phyſician, for his want of knowledge and candour, ſhe proteſted in the moſt earneſt and ſolemn manner againſt the pernicious practice of dipping the child; a piece of cruelty which, with God's aſſiſtance, ſhe ſhould never ſuffer to be inflicted on her

own iſſue; and waſhing her hands of the melancholy conſequence that would certainly enſue, ſhut herſelf up in her cloſet, to indulge her ſorrow and vexation. She was deceived, however, in her prognoſtic: The boy, inſtead of declining in point of health, ſeemed to acquire freſh vigour from every plunge, as if he had been reſolved to diſcredit the wiſdom and foreſight of his aunt, who, in all probability, could never forgive him for this want of reverence and reſpect. This conjecture is founded upon her behaviour to him in the ſequel of his infancy, during which ſhe was known to torture him more than once, when ſhe had opportunities of thruſting pins into his fleſh, without any danger of being detected. In a word, her affections were in a little time altogether alienated from this hope of her family, whom ſhe abandoned to the conduct of his mother, whoſe province it undoubtedly was to manage the nurture of her own child; while ſhe herſelf reſumed her operations upon the commodore, whom ſhe was reſolved at any rate to captivate and enſlave. And it muſt be owned, that Mrs. Grizzle's knowledge of the human heart never ſhone ſo conſpicuous, as in the methods ſhe purſued for the accompliſhment of this important aim.

Through the rough unpoliſhed huſk that caſed the ſoul of Trunnion, ſhe could eaſily diſtinguiſh a large ſhare of that vanity and ſelf-conceit that generally predominate even in the moſt ſavage breaſt; and to this ſhe conſtantly appealed. In his preſence ſhe always exclaimed againſt the craft and diſhoneſt diſſimulation of the world, and never failed of uttering particular invectives againſt thoſe arts of chicanery in which the lawyers are ſo converſant, to the prejudice and ruin of their fellow-creatures; obſerving, that, in a ſea-faring life, ſo far as ſhe had opportunities of judging or being informed, there was nothing but friendſhip, ſincerity, and a hearty contempt for every thing that was mean or ſelfiſh.

This kind of converſation, with the aſſiſtance of certain particular civilities, inſenſibly made an impreſſion on the mind of the commodore, and that the more effectually, as his former prepoſſeſſions were built upon very ſlender foundations: His antipathy to old maids, which he had conceived upon hearſay, began gradually to di-

miniſh, when he found they were not quite ſuch infernal animals as they had been repreſented; and it was not long before he was heard to obſerve at the club, that Pickle's ſiſter had not ſo much of the core of bitch in her as he had imagined. This negative compliment, by the medium of her brother, ſoon reached the ears of Mrs. Grizzle, who, thus encouraged, redoubled all her arts and attention; ſo that, in leſs than three months after, he in the ſame place diſtinguiſhed her with the epithet of a damned ſenſible jade.

Hatchway taking the alarm at this declaration, which he feared foreboded ſomething fatal to his intereſt, told his commander, with a ſneer, that ſhe had ſenſe enough to bring him to under her ſtern; and he did not doubt but that ſuch an old crazy veſſel would be the better for being taken in tow. "But, howſomever," added this arch adviſer, "I'd have you take care of your upper works; for if once you are made faſt to her poop, agad! ſhe'll ſpank it away, and make every beam in your body crack with ſtraining." Our ſhe-projector's whole plan had like to have been ruined by the effect which this malicious hint had upon Trunnion, whoſe rage and ſuſpicion being wakened at once, his colour changed from tawny to a cadaverous pale, and then ſhifting to a deep and duſky red, ſuch as we ſometimes obſerve in the ſky when it is replete with thunder, he, after his uſual preamble of unmeaning oaths, anſwered in theſe words: "Damn ye, you jury-legged dog, you would give all the ſtowage in your hold to be as ſound as I am; and as for being taken in tow, d'ye ſee, I'm not ſo diſabled but that I can lie my courſe, and perform my voyage without any aſſiſtance; and, agad! no man ſhall ever ſee Hawſer Trunnion lagging aſtern in the wake of e'er a bitch in Chriſtendom."

Mrs. Grizzle, who every morning interrogated her brother with regard to the ſubject of his over-night's converſation with his friends, ſoon received the unwelcome news of the commodore's averſion to matrimony; and, juſtly imputing the greateſt part of his diſguſt to the ſatirical inſinuations of Mr. Hatchway, reſolved to level this obſtruction to her ſucceſs, and actually found means to intereſt him in her ſcheme. She had indeed, on ſome

occaſions, a particular knack at making converts, being probably not unacquaintad with that grand ſyſtem of perſuaſion, which is adopted by the greateſt perſonages of the age, as fraught with maxims much more effectual than all the eloquence of Tully or Demoſthenes, even when ſupported by the demonſtrations of truth: Beſides, Mr. Hatchway's fidelity to his new ally was confirmed by his foreſeeing in his captain's marriage an infinite fund of gratification for his own cynical diſpoſition. Thus, therefore, converted and properly cautioned, he for the future ſuppreſſed all the virulence of his wit againſt the matrimonial ſtate; and, as he knew not how to open his mouth in the poſitive praiſe of any perſon whatever, took all opportunities of excepting Mrs. Grizzle by name from the cenſures he liberally beſtowed upon the reſt of her ſex. "She is not a drunkard, like Nan Caſtick of Deptford (he would ſay); not a nincompoop, like Peg Simper of Woolwich; not a brimſtone, like Kate Coddle of Chatham; nor a ſhrew, like Nell Griffin on the Point Portſmouth (ladies to whom, at different times, they had both paid their addreſſes); but a tight, good-humoured, ſenſible wench, who knows very well how to box her compaſs; well trimmed aloft, and well ſheathed alow, with a good cargo under her hatches." The commodore at firſt imagined this commendation was ironical, but hearing it repeated again and again, was filled with aſtoniſhment at this ſurpriſing change in the lieutenant's behaviour; and, after a long fit of muſing, concluded that Hatchway himſelf harboured a matrimonial deſign on the perſon of Mrs. Grizzle.

Pleaſed with this conjecture, he rallied Jack in his turn, and one night toaſted her health as a compliment to his paſſion; a circumſtance which the lady learned next day by the uſual canal of her intelligence, and interpreting as the reſult of his own tenderneſs for her, ſhe congratulated herſelf upon the victory ſhe had obtained; and, thinking it unneceſſary to continue the reſerve ſhe had hitherto induſtriouſly affected, reſolved from that day to ſweeten her behaviour towards him with ſuch a diſh of affection, as could not fail to perſuade him that he had inſpired her with a reciprocal flame. In conſequence of this determination, he was [illegible]

and, while he ſtaid, treated with ſuch cloying proofs of her regard, that not only the reſt of the company, but even Trunnion himſelf, perceived her drift; and, taking the alarm accordingly, could not help exclaiming, "Oho! I ſee how the land lies, and, if I don't weather the point, I'll be damned." Having thus expreſſed himſelf to his afflicted inamorata, he made the beſt of his way to the garriſon, in which he ſhut himſelf up for the ſpace of ten days, and had no communication with his friends and domeſtics but by looks, which were moſt ſignificantly pictureſque.

CHAPTER VII.

Divers ſtratagems are invented and put in practice, in order to overcome the obſtinacy of Trunnion, who at length is teazed and tortured into the nooſe of wedlock.

THIS abrupt departure and unkind declaration affected Mrs. Grizzle ſo much, that ſhe fell ſick of ſorrow and mortification; and, after having confined herſelf to her bed for three days, ſent for her brother, told him ſhe perceived her end drawing near, and deſired that a lawyer might be brought, in order to write her laſt will. Mr. Pickle, ſurpriſed at her demand, began to act the part of a comforter, aſſuring her that her diſtemper was not at all dangerous; and that he would inſtantly ſend for a phyſician, who would convince her that ſhe was in no manner of jeopardy; ſo that there was no occaſion at preſent to employ any officious attorney in ſuch a melancholy taſk. Indeed, this affectionate brother was of opinion, that a will was altogether ſuperfluous at any rate, as he himſelf was heir at law to his ſiſter's whole real and perſonal eſtate. But ſhe inſiſted upon his compliance with ſuch determined obſtinacy, that he could no longer reſiſt her importunities; and a ſcrivener arriving, ſhe dictated and executed her will, in which ſhe bequeathed to Commodore Trunnion one thouſand pounds, to purchaſe a mourning ring, which ſhe hoped he would wear as a pledge of her friendſhip and affection. Her brother,

though he did not much reliſh this teſtimony of her love, nevertheleſs that ſame evening gave an account of this particular to Mr. Hatchway, who was alſo, as Mr. Pickle aſſured him, generouſly remembered by the teſtatrix.

The lieutenant, fraught with this piece of intelligence, watched for an opportunity, and as ſoon as he perceived the commodore's features a little unbended from that ferocious contraction they had retained ſo long, ventured to inform him that Pickle's ſiſter lay at the point of death, and that ſhe had left him a thouſand pounds in her will. This piece of news overwhelmed him with confuſion, and Mr. Hatchway imputing his ſilence to remorſe, reſolved to take advantage of that favourable moment, and counſelled him to go and viſit the poor young woman, who was dying for love of him. But his admonition happened to be ſomewhat unſeaſonable; for Trunnion no ſooner heard him mention the cauſe of her diſorder, than, his moroſity recurring, he burſt out into a violent fit of curſing, and forthwith betook himſelf again to his hammock, where he lay uttering, in a low growling tone of voice, a repetition of oaths and imprecations, for the ſpace of four and twenty hours, without ceaſing. This was a delicious meal to the lieutenant, who, eager to enhance the pleaſure of the entertainment, and, at the ſame time, conduce to the ſucceſs of the cauſe he had eſpouſed, invented a ſtratagem, the execution of which had all the effect he could deſire. He prevailed upon Pipes, who was devoted to his ſervice, to get upon the top of the chimney belonging to the commodore's chamber, at midnight, and to lower down by a rope a bunch of ſtinking whitings; which being performed, he put a ſpeaking trumpet to his mouth, and hollowed down the vent, in a voice like thunder, "Trunnion! Trunnion! turn out and be ſpliced, or lie ſtill and be damned." This dreadful note, the terror of which was increaſed by the ſilence and darkneſs of the night, as well as the echo of the paſſage through which it was conveyed, no ſooner reached the ears of the aſtoniſhed commodore, than turning his eye towards the place from whence this ſolemn addreſs ſeemed to proceed, he beheld a glittering object that vaniſhed in an inſtant. Juſt as his ſuperſtitious fear had improved the apparition into ſome ſupernatural meſſenger

clothed in ſhining array, his opinion was confirmed by a ſudden exploſion, which he took for thunder, though it was no other than the noiſe of a piſtol fired down the chimney by the boatſwain's mate, according to the inſtructions he had received; and he had time enough to deſcend before he was in any danger of being detected by his commander, who could not for a whole hour recollect himſelf from the amazement and conſternation which had overpowered his faculties.

At length, however, he got up, and rung his bell with great agitation. He repeated the ſummons more than once; but no regard being paid to this alarm, his dread returned with double terror; a cold ſweat bedewed his limbs, his knees knocked together, his hair briſtled up, and the remains of his teeth were ſhattered to pieces in the convulſive vibrations of his jaws.

In the midſt of this agony, he made one deſperate effort, and, burſting open the door of his apartment, bolted into Hatchway's chamber, which happened to be on the ſame floor. There he found the lieutenant in a counterfeit ſwoon, who pretended to wake from his trance in an ejaculation of "Lord have mercy upon us!" And, being queſtioned by the terrified commodore, with regard to what had happened, aſſured him he had heard the ſame voice and clap of thunder by which Trunnion himſelf had been diſcompoſed.

Pipes, whoſe turn it was to watch, concurred in giving evidence to the ſame purpoſe; and the commodore not only owned that he had heard the voice, but likewiſe communicated his viſion, with all the aggravation which his diſturbed fancy ſuggeſted.

A conſultation immediately enſued, in which Mr. Hatchway very gravely obſerved, that the finger of God was plainly perceivable in thoſe ſignals; and that it would be both ſinful and fooliſh to diſregard his commands, eſpecially as the match propoſed was, in all reſpects, more advantageous than any that one of his years and infirmities could reaſonably expect; declaring, that, for his own part, he would not endanger his ſoul and body, by living one day longer under the ſame roof with a man who deſpiſed the holy will of heaven; and Tom Pipes adhered to the ſame pious reſolution.

Trunnion's perſeverance could not reſiſt the number and diverſity of conſiderations that aſſaulted it; he revolved in ſilence all the oppoſite motives that occurred to his reflection; and after having been, to all appearance, bewildered in the labyrinth of his own thoughts, he wiped the ſweat from his forehead, and, heaving a piteous groan, yielded to their remonſtrances, in theſe words: "Well, ſince it muſt be ſo, I think we muſt e'en grapple. But, damn my eyes! 'tis a damn'd hard caſe that a fellow of my years ſhould be compelled, d'ye ſee, to beat up to windward all the reſt of his life, againſt the current of his own inclination."

This important article being diſcuſſed, Mr. Hatchway ſet out in the morning to viſit the deſpairing ſhepherdeſs, and was handſomely rewarded for the enlivening tidings with which he bleſſed her ears. Sick as ſhe was, ſhe could not help laughing heartily at the contrivance, in conſequence of which her ſwain's aſſent had been obtained, and gave the lieutenant ten guineas for Tom Pipes, in conſideration of the part he acted in the farce.

In the afternoon, the commodore ſuffered himſelf to be conveyed to her apartment, like a felon to execution, and was received by her in a languiſhing manner, and genteel deſhabille, accompanied by her ſiſter-in-law; who was, for very obvious reaſons, extremely ſolicitous about her ſucceſs. Though the lieutenant had tutored him, touching his behaviour at this interview; he made a thouſand wry faces before he could pronounce the ſimple ſalutation of How d'ye? to his miſtreſs; and, after his counſellor had urged him with twenty or thirty whiſpers, to each of which he had replied aloud, "Damn your eyes, I won't," he got up, and halting towards the couch on which Mrs. Grizzle reclined in a ſtate of ſtrange expectation, he ſeized her hand, and preſſed it to his lips; but this piece of gallantry he performed in ſuch a reluctant, uncouth, indignant manner, that the nymph had need of all her reſolution to endure the compliment without ſhrinking; and he himſelf was ſo diſconcerted at what he had done, that he inſtantly retired to [illegible] end of the room, where he ſat ſilent, broiling [illegible] and vexation. Mrs. Pickle, like a ſenſible [illegible] ted the place, on pretence of going to the [illegible]

Mr. Hatchway, taking the hint, recollected that he had left his tobacco pouch in the parlour, whither he immediately deſcended, leaving the two lovers to their mutual endearments. Never had the commodore found himſelf in ſuch a diſagreeable dilemma before. He ſat in an agony of ſuſpence, as if he every moment dreaded the diſſolution of nature; and the imploring ſighs of his future bride added, if poſſible, to the pangs of his diſtreſs. Impatient of his ſituation, he rolled his eye around in queſt of ſome relief, and unable to contain himſelf, exclaimed, "Damnation ſeize the fellow and his pouch too! I believe he has ſheered off, and left me here in the ſtays." Mrs. Grizzle, who could not help taking ſome notice of this manifeſtation of chagrin, lamented her unhappy fate in being ſo diſagreeable to him, that he could not put up with her company for a few moments, without repining; and began in very tender terms to reproach him with his inhumanity and indifference. To this expoſtulation he replied, "Zounds! what would the woman have? Let the parſon do his office when he wool; here I am ready to be reeved in the matrimonial block, d'ye ſee, and damn all nonſenſical palaver." So ſaying, he retreated, leaving his miſtreſs not at all diſobliged at his plain dealing. That ſame evening the treaty of marriage was brought upon the carpet, and, by means of Mr. Pickle and the lieutenant, ſettled to the ſatisfaction of all parties, without the intervention of lawyers, whom Mr. Trunnion expreſsly excluded from all ſhare in the buſineſs; making that condition the indiſpenſible preliminary of the whole agreement. Things being brought to this bearing, Mrs. Grizzle's heart dilated with joy; her health, which, by the bye, was never dangerouſly impaired, ſhe recovered as if by inchantment, and a day being fixed for the nuptials, employed the ſhort period of her celibacy in chooſing ornaments for the celebration of her entrance into the married ſtate.

CHAPTER VIII.

Preparations are made for the commodore's wedding, which is delayed by an accident that hurried him the Lord knows whither.

THE fame of this extraordinary conjunction ſpread all over the county; and on the day appointed for their eſpouſals, the church was ſurrounded by an inconceivable multitude. The commodore, to give a ſpecimen of his gallantry, by the advice of his friend Hatchway, reſolved to appear on horſeback on the grand occaſion, at the head of all his male attendants, whom he had rigged with the white ſhirts and black caps formerly belonging to his barge's crew; and he bought a couple of hunters for the accommodation of himſelf and his lieutenant. With this equipage then he ſet out from the garriſon for the church, after having diſpatched a meſſenger to appriſe the bride that he and his company were mounted. She got immediately into the coach, accompanied by her brother and his wife, and drove directly to the place of aſſignation, where ſeveral pews were demoliſhed, and divers perſons almoſt preſſed to death, by the eagerneſs of the crowd that broke in to ſee the ceremony performed. Thus arrived at the altar, and the prieſt in attendance, they waited a whole half hour for the commodore, at whoſe ſlowneſs they began to be under ſome apprehenſion, and accordingly diſmiſſed a ſervant to quicken his pace. The valet having rode ſomething more than a mile, eſpied the whole troop diſpoſed in a long field, croſſing the road obliquely, and headed by the bridegroom and his friend Hatchway, who, finding himſelf hindered by a hedge from proceeding farther in the ſame direction, fired a piſtol, and ſtood over to the other ſide, making an obtuſe angle with the line of his former courſe; and the reſt of the ſquadron followed his example, keeping always in the rear of each other, like a flight of wild geeſe.

Surpriſed at this ſtrange method of journeying, the meſſenger came up, and told the commodore that his lady and her company expected him in the church, where they had tarried a conſiderable time, and were beginning to be very uneaſy at his delay; and therefore deſired he

would proceed with more expedition. To this meſſage Mr. Trunnion replied, "Hark ye, brother, don't you ſee we make all poſſible ſpeed? go back, and tell thoſe who ſent you, that the wind has ſhifted ſince we weighed anchor, and that we are obliged to make very ſhort trips in tacking, by reaſon of the narrowneſs of the channel; and that, as we lie within ſix points of the wind, they muſt make ſome allowance for variation and leeway." "Lord, ſir! ſaid the valet, what occaſion have you to go zig-zag in that manner? Do but clap ſpurs to your horſes, and ride ſtraight forward, and I'll engage you ſhall be at the church-porch in leſs than a quarter of an hour." "What! right in the wind's eye? (anſwered the commander) ahey! brother, where did you learn your navigation? Hawſer Trunnion is not to be taught at this time of day how to lie his courſe, or keep his own reckoning. And as for you, brother, you beſt know the trim of your own frigate." The courier finding he had to do with people who would not be eaſily perſuaded out of their own opinions, returned to the temple, and made a report of what he had ſeen and heard, to the no ſmall conſolation of the bride, who had begun to diſcover ſome ſigns of diſquiet. Compoſed, however, by this piece of intelligence, ſhe exerted her patience for the ſpace of another half hour, during which period, ſeeing no bridegroom arrive, ſhe was exceedingly alarmed; ſo that all the ſpectators could eaſily perceive her perturbation, which manifeſted itſelf in frequent palpitations, heart-heavings, and alterations of countenance, in ſpite of the aſſiſtance of a ſmelling-bottle, which ſhe inceſſantly applied to her noſtrils.

Various were the conjectures of the company, on this occaſion; Some imagined he had miſtaken the place of rendezvous, as he had never been at church ſince he firſt ſettled in that pariſh; others believed he had met with ſome accident, in conſequence of which his attendants had carried him back to his own houſe; and a third ſet, in which the bride herſelf was thought to be comprehended, could not help ſuſpecting that the commodore had changed his mind. But all theſe ſuppoſitions, ingenious as they were, happened to be wide of the true cauſe that detained him, which was no other than this.

—The commodore and his crew had, by dint of turning, almoſt weathered the parſon's houſe that ſtood to windward of the church, when the notes of a pack of hounds unluckily reached the ears of the two hunters which Trunnion and the lieutenant beſtrode. Theſe fleet animals no ſooner heard the enlivening ſound, than, eager for the chaſe, they ſprung away all of a ſudden, and ſtrained every nerve to partake of the ſport, flew acroſs the fields with incredible ſpeed, overleaped hedges and ditches, and every thing in their way, without the leaſt regard to their unfortunate riders. The lieutenant, whoſe ſteed had got the heels of the other, finding it would be great folly and preſumption in him to pretend to keep the ſaddle with his wooden leg, very wiſely took the opportunity of throwing himſelf off in his paſſage through a field of rich clover, among which he lay at his eaſe; and ſeeing his captain advancing at full gallop, hailed him with the ſalutation of "What cheer? ho!" The commodore, who was in infinite diſtreſs, eyeing him aſkance, as he paſſed, replied with a faltering voice, "O damn you! you are ſafe at an anchor; I wiſh to God I were as faſt moored." Nevertheleſs, conſcious of his diſabled heel, he would not venture to try the experiment which had ſucceeded ſo well with Hatchway, but reſolved to ſtick as cloſe as poſſible to his horſe's back, until Providence ſhould interpoſe in his behalf. With this view he dropped his whip, and with his right hand laid faſt hold on the pummel, contracting every muſcle in his body to ſecure himſelf in the ſeat, and grinning moſt formidably, in conſequence of this exertion. In this attitude he was hurried on a conſiderable way, when all of a ſudden his view was comforted by a five bar gate that appeared before him, as he never doubted that there the career of his hunter muſt neceſſarily end. But, alas! he reckoned without his hoſt: Far from halting at this obſtruction, the horſe ſprung over it with amazing agility, to the utter confuſion and diſorder of his owner, who loſt his hat and periwig in the leap, and now began to think in good earneſt, that he was actually mounted on the back of the devil. He recommended himſelf to God, his reflection forſook him, his eye-ſight and all his other ſenſes failed, he quitted the reins, and, faſtening by inſtinct on the mane, was in this

condition conveyed into the midſt of the ſportſmen, who were aſtoniſhed at the ſight of ſuch an apparition. Neither was their ſurpriſe to be wondered at, if we reflect on the figure that preſented itſelf to their view. The commodore's perſon was at all times an object of admiration; much more ſo on this occaſion, when every ſingularity was aggravated by the circumſtances of his dreſs and diſaſter.

He had put on, in honour of his nuptials, his beſt coat of blue broad cloth, cut by a tailor of Ramſgate, and trimmed with five dozen of braſs buttons, large and ſmall; his breeches were of the ſame piece, faſtened at the knees with large bunches of tape; his waiſtcoat was of red pluſh, lapelled with green velvet, and garniſhed with vellum holes; his boots bore an infinite reſemblance, both in colour and ſhape, to a pair of leather buckets; his ſhoulder was graced with a broad buff belt, from whence depended a huge hanger, with a hilt like that of a backſword; and on each ſide of his pummel appeared a ruſty piſtol, rammed in a caſe covered with a bear-ſkin. The loſs of his tie-periwig and laced hat, which were curioſities of the kind, did not at all contribute to the improvement of the picture, but, on the contrary, by exhibiting his bald pate, and the natural extenſion of his lanthorn jaws, added to the peculiarity and extravagance of the whole. Such a ſpectacle could not have failed of diverting the whole company from the chaſe, had his horſe thought proper to purſue a different route, but the beaſt was too keen a ſporter to chooſe any other way than that which the ſtag followed; and therefore, without ſtopping to gratify the curioſity of the ſpectators, he, in a few minutes, outſtripped every hunter in the field. There being a deep hollow way betwixt him and the hounds, rather than ride round about the length of a furlong to a path that croſſed the lane, he tranſported himſelf, at one jump, to the unſpeakable aſtoniſhment and terror of a waggoner who chanced to be underneath, and ſaw this phenomenon fly over his carriage. This was not the only adventure he achieved. The ſtag having taken a deep river that lay in his way, every man directed his courſe to a bridge in the neighbourhood; but our bridegroom's courſer, deſpiſing all ſuch conveniences, plunged

into the ſtream without heſitation, and ſwam in a twinkling to the oppoſite ſhore. This ſudden immerſion into an element, of which Trunnion was properly a native, in all probability helped to recruit the exhauſted ſpirits of his rider, who, at his landing on the other ſide, gave ſome tokens of ſenſation, by hollowing aloud for aſſiſtance, which he could not poſſibly receive, becauſe his horſe ſtill maintained the advantage he had gained, and would not allow himſelf to be overtaken.

In ſhort, after a long chaſe, that laſted ſeveral hours, and extended to a dozen miles at leaſt, he was the firſt in at the death of the deer, being ſeconded by the lieutenant's gelding, which, actuated by the ſame ſpirit, had, without a rider, followed his companion's example.

Our bridegroom finding himſelf at laſt brought up, or, in other words, at the end of his career, took the opportunity of the firſt pauſe, to deſire the huntſmen would lend him a hand in diſmounting; and was by their condeſcenſion ſafely placed on the graſs, where he ſat ſtaring at the company as they came in, with ſuch wildneſs of aſtoniſhment in his looks, as if he had been a creature of another ſpecies, dropt among them from the clouds.

Before they had fleſhed the hounds, however, he recollected himſelf, and ſeeing one of the ſportſmen take a ſmall flaſk out of his pocket and apply it to his mouth, judged the cordial to be no other than neat Coniac, which it really was! and expreſſing a deſire of participation, was immediately accommodated with a moderate doſe, which perfectly completed his recovery.

By this time he and his two horſes had engroſſed the attention of the whole crowd; while ſome admired the elegant proportion and uncommon ſpirit of the two animals, the reſt contemplated the ſurpriſing appearance of their maſter, whom before they had only ſeen *en paſſant*; and at length one of the gentlemen accoſting him very courteouſly, ſignified his wonder at ſeeing him in ſuch an equipage, and aſked him if he had not dropped his companion by the way. "Why, look ye, brother, (replied the commodore), mayhap you think me an odd ſort of a fellow, ſeeing me in this trim, eſpecially as I have loſt part of my rigging; but this here is the caſe,

d'ye ſee: I weighed anchor from my own houſe this morning at ten A. M. with fair weather, and a favourable breeze at ſouth-ſouth-eaſt, being bound to the next church on the voyage of matrimony; but howſomever, we had not run down a quarter of a league, when the wind ſhifting, blowed directly in our teeth; ſo that we were forced to tack all the way, d'ye ſee, and had almoſt beat up within ſight of the port, when theſe ſons of bitches of horſes, which I had bought but two days before (for my own part, I believe they are devils incarnate), luffed round in a trice, and then refuſing the helm, drove away like lightning with me and my lieutenant, who ſoon came to anchor in an exceeding good birth. As for my own part, I have been carried over rocks, and flats, and quick-ſands; among which I have pitched away a ſpecial good tie-periwig, and an iron bound hat; and at laſt, thank God! am got into ſmooth water and ſafe riding; but if ever I venture my carcaſe upon ſuch a hare'um ſcare'um blood of a bitch again, my name is not Hawſer Trunnion, damn my eyes!"

One of the company, ſtruck with this name, which he had often heard, immediately laid hold on his declaration at the cloſe of this ſingular account; and obſerving that his horſes were very vicious, aſked how he intended to return? "As for that matter, (replied Mr. Trunnion), I am reſolved to hire a ſledge or waggon, or ſuch a thing as a jack-aſs; for I'll be damn'd if ever I croſs the back of a horſe again." "And what do you propoſe to do with theſe creatures? (ſaid the other, pointing to the hunters) they ſeem to have ſome mettle; but then they are mere colts, and will take the devil and all of breaking. Methinks this hinder one is ſhoulder-ſlipped." "Damn them, (cried the commodore), I wiſh both their necks were broke, thof the two coſt me forty good yellow-boys." "Forty guineas! (exclaimed the ſtranger, who was a 'ſquire and a jockey, as well as owner of the pack) Lord! Lord! how a man may be impoſed upon! Why, theſe cattle are clumſy enough to go to plough; mind what a flat counter; do but obſerve how ſharp this here one is in the withers; then he's fired in the further fetlock." In ſhort, this connoiſſeur in horſe-fleſh, having diſcovered in them all the defects which

can poſſibly be found in that ſpecies of animals, offered to give him ten guineas for the two, ſaying he would convert them into beaſts of burden.—The owner, who (after what had happened) was very well diſpoſed to liſten to any thing that was ſaid to their prejudice, implicitly believed the truth of the ſtranger's aſſeverations, diſcharged a furious volley of oaths againſt the raſcal who had taken him in, and forthwith ſtruck a bargain with the 'ſquire, who paid him inſtantly for his purchaſe; in conſequence of which he won the plate at the next Canterbury races.

This affair being tranſacted to the mutual ſatisfaction of both parties, as well as to the general entertainment of the company, who laughed in their ſleeves at the dexterity of their friend, Trunnion was ſet upon the 'ſquire's own horſe, and led by his ſervant in the midſt of this cavalcade, which proceeded to a neighbouring village, where they had beſpoke dinner, and where our bridegroom found means to provide himſelf with another hat and wig. With regard to his marriage, he bore his diſappointment with the temper of a philoſopher; and the exerciſe he had undergone having quickened his appetite, ſat down at table in the midſt of his new acquaintance, making a very hearty meal, and moiſtening every morſel with a draught of the ale, which he found very much to his ſatisfaction.

CHAPTER IX.

He is found by the lieutenant; reconducted to his own houſe; married to Mrs. Grizzle, who meets with a ſmall misfortune in the night, and aſſerts her prerogative next morning; in conſequence of which, her huſband's eye is endangered.

MEANWHILE Lieutenant Hatchway made ſhift to hobble to the church, where he informed the company of what had happened to the commodore; and the bride behaved with great decency on the occaſion; for, as ſoon as ſhe underſtood the danger to which her future huſband was expoſed, ſhe fainted in the arms of her ſiſter-in-law, to

the ſurpriſe of all the ſpectators, who could not comprehend the cauſe of her diſorder; and when ſhe was recovered by the application of ſmelling-bottles, earneſtly begged that Mr. Hatchway and Tom Pipes would take her brother's coach, and go in queſt of their commander.

This taſk they readily undertook, being eſcorted by all the reſt of his adherents on horſeback; while the bride and her friends were invited to the parſon's houſe, and the ceremony deferred till another occaſion.

The lieutenant, ſteering his courſe as near the line of direction in which Trunnion went off, as the coach-road would permit, got intelligence of his track from one farm-houſe to another; for ſuch an apparition could not fail of attracting particular notice; and one of the horſemen having picked up his hat and wig in a bye path, the whole troop entered the village where he was lodged, about four o'clock in the afternoon. When they underſtood he was ſafely houſed at the George, they rode up to the door in a body, and expreſſed their ſatisfaction in three cheers; which were returned by the company within, as ſoon as they were inſtructed in the nature of the ſalute by Trunnion, who by this time had entered into all the jollity of his new friends, and was indeed more than half ſeas over. The lieutenant was introduced to all preſent as his ſworn brother, and had ſomething toſſed up for his dinner. Tom Pipes and the crew were regaled in another room; and a freſh pair of horſes being put to the coach, about ſix in the evening the commodore, with all his attendants, departed for the garriſon, after having ſhook hands with every individual in the houſe.

Without any farther accident, he was conveyed in ſafety to his own gate, before nine, and committed to the care of Pipes, who carried him inſtantly to his hammock, while the lieutenant was driven away to the place where the bride and her friends remained in great anxiety, which vaniſhed when he aſſured them that his commodore was ſafe, being ſucceeded by abundance of mirth and pleaſantry at the account he gave of Trunnion's adventure.

Another day was fixed for the nuptials; and, in order to baulk the curioſity of idle people, which had giv-

en great offence, the parſon was prevailed upon to perform the ceremony in the garriſon, which all that day was adorned with flags and pendants diſplayed, and at night illuminated by the direction of Hatchway, who alſo ordered the pateraroes to be fired as ſoon as the marriage knot was tied. Neither were the other parts of the entertainment neglected by this ingenious contriver, who produced undeniable proofs of his elegance and art in the wedding ſupper, which had been committed to his management and direction. This genial banquet was entirely compoſed of ſea-diſhes; a huge pillaw, conſiſting of a large piece of beef ſliced, a couple of fowls, and half a peck of rice, ſmoked in the middle of the board; a diſh of hard fiſh ſwimming in oil, appeared at each end, the ſides being furniſhed with a meſs of that ſavoury compoſition known by the name of lob's courſe, and a plate of ſalmagundy. The ſecond courſe diſplayed a gooſe of a monſtrous magnitude, flanked with two Guinea hens, a pig barbecu'd, an hock of ſalt pork in the midſt of a peaſe pudding, a leg of mutton roaſted, with potatoes, and another boiled with yams. The third ſervice was made up with a loin of freſh pork with apple ſauce, a kid ſmothered with onions, and a terrapin baked in the ſhell; and laſt of all, a prodigious ſea pye was preſented, with an infinite volume of pancakes and fritters. That every thing might be anſwerable to the magnificence of this delicate feaſt, he had provided vaſt quantities of ſtrong beer, ſlip, rumbo, and burnt brandy, with plenty of Barbadoes water, for the ladies; and hired all the fiddles within ſix miles, who, with the addition of a drum, bag-pipe, and Welch-harp, regaled the gueſts with a moſt melodious concert.

The company, who were not at all exceptious, ſeemed extremely well pleaſed with every particular of the entertainment; and the evening being ſpent in the moſt ſocial manner, the bride was by her ſiſter conducted to her apartment, where, however, a trifling circumſtance had like to have deſtroyed the harmony which had been hitherto maintained.

I have already obſerved, that there was not one ſtanding bed within the walls; therefore the reader will not wonder that Mrs. Trunnion was out of humour, when ſhe found herſelf under the neceſſity of being confined

who reſcued him from the hands of his adverſaries, and, in the midſt of her condolence, imputed his misfortune to the inconſiderate roughneſs of his own diſpoſition.

He breathed nothing but revenge, and made ſome efforts to chaſtiſe the inſolence of the workmen, who, as ſoon as they underſtood his quality, aſked forgiveneſs for what they had done, with great humility, proteſting that they did not know he was maſter of the houſe. But, far from being ſatisfied with this apology, he groped about for the bell (the inflammation of his eye having utterly deprived him of ſight), and the rope being, by the precaution of the delinquents, conveyed out of his reach, began to ſtorm with incredible vociferation, like a lion roaring in the toil, pouring forth innumerable oaths and execrations, and calling by name Hatchway and Pipes, who, being within hearing, obeyed the extraordinary ſummons, and were ordered to put the carpenters in irons, for having audaciouſly aſſaulted him in his own houſe.

His myrmidons ſeeing he had been evil-entreated, were exaſperated at the inſult he had ſuffered, which they conſidered as an affront upon the dignity of the garriſon: the more ſo, as the mutineers ſeemed to put themſelves in a poſture of defence, and ſet their authority at defiance: They therefore unſheathed their cutlaſſes, which they commonly wore as badges of their commiſſion; and a deſperate engagement, in all probability, would have enſued, had not the lady of the caſtle interpoſed, and prevented the effects of their animoſity, by aſſuring the lieutenant that the commodore had been the aggreſſor, and that the workmen finding themſelves attacked in ſuch an extraordinary manner, by a perſon whom they did not know, were obliged to act in their own defence, by which he had received that unlucky contuſion.

Mr. Hatchway no ſooner learnt the ſentiments of Mrs. Trunnion, than ſheathing his indignation, he told the commodore that he ſhould always be ready to execute his lawful commands, but that he could not in conſcience be concerned in oppreſſing poor people who had been guilty of no offence.

This unexpected declaration, together with the behaviour of his wife, who in his hearing deſired the carpenters to reſume their work, filled the breaſt of Trunnion

with rage and mortification. He pulled off his woollen night-cap, pummeli'd his bare pate, beat the floor alternately with his feet, ſwore his people had betrayed him, and curſed himſelf to the loweſt pit of hell, for having admitted ſuch a cockatrice into his family. But all theſe exclamations did not avail; they were among the laſt eſſays of his reſiſtance to the will of his wife, whoſe influence among his adherents had already ſwallowed up his own, and who now peremptorily told him, that he muſt leave the management of every thing within doors to her, who underſtood beſt what was for his honour and advantage. She then ordered a poultice to be prepared for his eye, which being applied, he was committed to the care of Pipes, by whom he was led about the houſe like a blind bear growling for prey, while his induſtrious yoke-fellow executed every circumſtance of the plan ſhe had projected; ſo that, when he recovered his viſion, he was an utter ſtranger in his own houſe.

CHAPTER X.

The commodore being in ſome caſes reſtive, his lady has recourſe to artifice in the eſtabliſhment of her throne. She exhibits ſymptoms of pregnancy, to the unſpeakable joy of Trunnion, who nevertheleſs is baulked in his expectation.

THESE innovations were not effected without many loud objections on his part; and divers curious dialogues paſſed between him and his yoke-fellow, who always came off victorious from the diſpute; inſomuch that his countenance gradually fell; he began to ſuppreſs, and at length entirely devoured his chagrin; the terrors of ſuperior authority were plainly perceivable in his features, and in leſs than three months he became a thorough-paced huſband. Not that his obſtinacy was extinguiſhed, though overcome; in ſome things he was as inflexible and muliſh as ever; but then he durſt not kick ſo openly, and was reduced to the neceſſity of being paſſive in his reſentments. Mrs. Trunnion, for example, propoſed that a coach and ſix ſhould be purchaſed, as ſhe could not ride on horſeback, and the chaiſe was a ſcandalous carriage for a per-

ſon of her condition; the commodore, conſcious of his own inferior capacity in point of reaſoning, did not think proper to diſpute the propoſal, but lent a deaf ear to her remonſtrances, though they were enforced with every argument which ſhe thought could ſooth, terrify, ſhame, or decoy him into compliance: In vain did ſhe urge the exceſs of affection ſhe had for him, as meriting ſome return of tenderneſs and condeſcenſion; he was even proof againſt certain menacing hints ſhe gave, touching the reſentment of a ſlighted woman; and he ſtood out againſt all the conſiderations of dignity or diſgrace, like a bulwark of braſs. Neither was he moved to any indecent or unkind expreſſions of contradiction, even when ſhe upbraided him with his ſordid diſpoſition, and put him in mind of the fortune and honour he had acquired by his marriage, but ſeemed to retire within himſelf, like a tortoiſe when attacked, that ſhrinks within its ſhell, and ſilently endured the ſcourge of her reproaches, without ſeeming ſenſible of the ſmart.

This, however, was the only point in which ſhe had been baffled ſince her nuptials; and as ſhe could by no means digeſt the miſcarriage, ſhe tortured her invention for ſome new plan, by which ſhe might augment her influence and authority: What her genius refuſed was ſupplied by accident; for ſhe had not lived four months in the garriſon, when ſhe was ſeized with frequent qualms and retchings, her breaſts began to harden, and her ſtomach to be remarkably prominent; in a word, ſhe congratulated herſelf on the ſymptoms of her own fertility, and the commodore was tranſported with joy at the proſpect of an heir of his own begetting.

She knew this was the proper ſeaſon for vindicating her own ſovereignty, and accordingly employed the means which nature had put in her power. There was not a rare piece of furniture and apparel for which ſhe did not long; and one day as ſhe went to church, ſeeing Lady Stately's equipage arrive, ſhe ſuddenly fainted away. Her huſband, whoſe vanity had never been ſo perfectly gratified as with this promiſed harveſt of his own ſowing, took the alarm immediately, and in order to prevent relapſes of that kind, which might be attended with fatal conſequences to his hope, gave her leave to beſpeak a coach,

horſes, and liveries, to her own liking. Thus authoriſed, ſhe in a very little time exhibited ſuch a ſpecimen of her own taſte and magnificence, as afforded ſpeculation to the whole country, and made Trunnion's heart quake within him, becauſe he foreſaw no limits to her extravagance, which alſo manifeſted itſelf in the moſt expenſive preparations for her lying-in.

Her pride, which had hitherto regarded the repreſentative of her father's houſe, ſeemed now to loſe all that hereditary reſpect, and prompt her to outſhine and undervalue the elder branch of her family. She behaved to Mrs. Pickle with a ſort of civil reſerve that implied a conſcious ſuperiority, and an emulation in point of grandeur immediately commenced between the two ſiſters. She every day communicated her importance to the whole pariſh, under pretence of taking the air in her coach, and endeavoured to extend her acquaintance among people of faſhion. Nor was this an undertaking attended with great difficulty; for all perſons whatever, capable of maintaining a certain appearance, will always find admiſſion into what is called the beſt company, and be rated in point of character according to their own valuation, without ſubjecting their pretenſions to the ſmalleſt doubt or examination. In all her viſits and parties, ſhe ſeized every opportunity of declaring her preſent condition, obſerving that ſhe was forbid by her phyſicians to taſte ſuch a pickle, and that ſuch a diſh was poiſon to a woman in her way; nay, where ſhe was on a footing of familiarity, ſhe affected to make wry faces, and complained that the young rogue began to be very unruly, writhing herſelf into divers contortions, as if ſhe had been grievouſly incommoded by the metal of this future Trunnion. The huſband himſelf did not behave with all the moderation that might have been expected: At the club he frequently mentioned this circumſtance of his own vigour as a pretty ſucceſsful feat to be performed by an old fellow of fifty-five, and confirmed the opinion of his ſtrength by redoubled ſqueezes of the landlord's hand, which never failed of extorting a ſatisfactory certificate of his might. When his companions drank to the *Hans en kelder*, or Jack in the low cellar, he could not help diſplaying an extraordinary complacence of countenance, and ſignified his intention of

ſending the young dog to ſea, as ſoon as he ſhould be able to carry a cartridge, in hopes of ſeeing him an officer before his own death.

This hope helped to conſole him under the extraordinary expence to which he was expoſed by the profuſion of his wife, eſpecially when he conſidered that his compliance with her prodigality would be limited to the expiration of the nine months, of which the beſt part was by this time elapſed; Yet, in ſpite of all this philoſophical reſignation, her fancy ſometimes ſoared to ſuch a ridiculous and intolerable pitch of inſolence and abſurdity, that his temper forſook him, and he could not help wiſhing in ſecret, that her pride might be confounded in the diſſipation of her moſt flattering hopes, even though he himſelf ſhould be a principal ſufferer by the diſappointment. Theſe, however, were no other than the ſuggeſtions of temporary diſguſts, that commonly ſubſided as ſuddenly as they aroſe, and never gave the leaſt diſturbance to the perſon who inſpired them, becauſe he took care to conceal them carefully from her knowledge.

Meanwhile ſhe happily advanced in her reckoning, with the promiſe of a favourable iſſue; the term of her computation expired, and in the middle of the night ſhe was viſited by certain warnings that ſeemed to beſpeak the approach of the critical moment. The commodore got up with great alacrity, and called the midwife, who had been ſeveral days in the houſe; the goſſips were immediately ſummoned, and the moſt intereſting expectations prevailed; but the ſymptoms of labour gradually vaniſhed, and, as the matrons ſagely obſerved, this was no more than a falſe alarm.

Two nights after they received a ſecond intimation; and as ſhe was ſenſibly diminiſhed in the waiſt, every thing was ſuppoſed to be in a fair way: Yet this viſitation was not more concluſive than the former; her pains wore off in ſpite of all her endeavours to encourage them, and the good women betook themſelves to their reſpective homes, in expectation of finding the third attack deciſive, alluding to the well known maxim, that *number three is always fortunate*. For once, however, this apothegm failed; the next call was altogether as ineffectual as the former; and moreover attended with a phenome-

non which to them was equally ſtrange and inexplicable: This was no other than ſuch a reduction in the ſize of Mrs. Trunnion as might have been expected after the birth of a full-grown child. Startled at ſuch an unaccountable event, they ſat in cloſe divan; and, concluding that the caſe was in all reſpects unnatural and prodigious, deſired that a meſſenger might be immediately diſpatched for ſome male practitioner in the art of midwifery.

The commodore, without gueſſing the cauſe of their perplexity, ordered Pipes immediately on this piece of duty; and in leſs than two hours they were aſſiſted by the advice of a ſurgeon of the neighbourhood, who boldly affirmed that the patient had never been with child. This aſſeveration was like a clap of thunder to Mr. Trunnion, who had been, during eight whole days and nights, in continual expectation of being hailed with the appellation of father.

After ſome recollection, he ſwore the ſurgeon was an ignorant fellow, and that he would not take his word for what he advanced, being comforted and confirmed in his want of faith by the inſinuations of the midwife, who ſtill perſiſted to feed Mrs. Trunnion with hopes of a ſpeedy and ſafe delivery; obſerving, that ſhe had been concerned in many a caſe of the ſame nature, where a fine child was found, even after all ſigns of the mother's pregnancy had diſappeared. Every twig of hope, how ſlender ſoever it may be, is eagerly caught hold on by people who find themſelves in danger of being diſappointed. To every queſtion propoſed by her to the lady with the preambles of "Han't you?" or "Don't you?" an anſwer was made in the affirmative, whether agreeable to truth or not; becauſe the reſpondent could not find in her heart to diſown any ſymptom that might favour the notion ſhe had ſo long indulged.

This experienced proficient in the obſtetric art was therefore kept in cloſe attendance for the ſpace of three weeks, during which the patient had ſeveral returns of what ſhe pleaſed herſelf with believing to be labour pains, till at length ſhe and her huſband became the ſtanding joke of the pariſh; and this infatuated couple could ſcarce be prevailed upon to part with their hopes, even when ſhe appeared as lank as a greyhound, and they were furniſhed

with other unqueſtionable proofs of their having been deceived. But they could not for ever remain under the influence of this ſweet deluſion, which at laſt faded away, and was ſucceeded by a paroxyſm of ſhame and confuſion, that kept the huſband within doors for the ſpace of a whole fortnight, and confined his lady to her bed for a ſeries of weeks, during which ſhe ſuffered all the anguiſh of the moſt intenſe mortification; yet even this was ſubdued by the lenient hand of time.

The firſt reſpite from her chagrin was employed in the ſtrict diſcharge of what are called the duties of religion, which ſhe performed with the moſt rancorous ſeverity, ſetting on foot a perſecution in her own family, that made the houſe too hot for all the menial ſervants, even ruffled the almoſt invincible indifference of Tom Pipes, haraſſed the commodore himſelf out of all patience, and ſpared no individual but Lieutenant Hatchway, whom ſhe never ventured to diſoblige.

CHAPTER XI.

Mrs. Trunnion erects a tyranny in the garriſon, while her huſband conceives an affection for his nephew Perry, who manifeſts a peculiarity of diſpoſition even in his tender years.

HAVING exerciſed herſelf three months in ſuch pious amuſements, ſhe appeared again in the world; but her misfortune had made ſuch an impreſſion on her mind, that ſhe could not bear the ſight of a child, and trembled whenever the converſation happened to turn upon a chriſtening. Her temper, which was naturally none of the ſweeteſt, ſeemed to have imbibed a double proportion of ſouring from her diſappointment; of conſequence her company was not much coveted, and ſhe found very few people diſpoſed to treat her with thoſe marks of conſideration which ſhe looked upon as her due. This neglect detached her from the ſociety of an unmannerly world; ſhe concentred the energy of all her talents in the government of her own houſe, which groaned accordingly under her arbitrary ſway; and, in the brandy bottle, found ample conſolation for all the affliction ſhe had undergone.

As for the commodore, he in a little time weathered his diſgrace, after having ſuſtained many ſevere jokes from the lieutenant; and now his chief aim being to be abſent from his own houſe as much as poſſible, he frequented the public houſe more than ever, more aſſiduouſly cultivated the friendſhip of his brother-in-law Mr. Pickle; and, in the courſe of their intimacy, conceived an affection for his nephew Perry, which did not end but with his life. Indeed it muſt be owned that Trunnion was not naturally deficient in the ſocial paſſions of the ſoul, which, though they were ſtrangely warped, diſguiſed, and overborne, by the circumſtance of his boiſterous life and education, did not fail to manifeſt themſelves occaſionally through the whole courſe of his behaviour.

As all the hopes of propagating his own name had periſhed, and his relations lay under the interdiction of his hate, it is no wonder that, through the familiarity and friendly intercourſe ſubſiſting between him and Mr. Gamaliel, he contracted a liking for the boy, who by this time entered the third year of his age, and was indeed a very handſome, healthy, and promiſing child; and what ſeemed to ingratiate him ſtill more with his uncle, was a certain oddity of diſpoſition, for which he had been remarkable, even from his cradle. It is reported of him, that, before the firſt year of his infancy was elapſed, he uſed very often, immediately after being dreſſed, in the midſt of the careſſes which were beſtowed upon him by his mother, while ſhe indulged herſelf in the contemplation of her own happineſs, all of a ſudden, to alarm her with a fit of ſhrieks and cries, which continued with great violence till he was ſtripped to the ſkin with the utmoſt expedition, by order of his affrighted parent, who thought his tender body was tortured by the miſapplication of ſome unlucky pin; and when he had given them all this diſturbance and unneceſſary trouble, he would lie ſprawling and laughing in their faces, as if he ridiculed the impertinence of their concern. Nay, it is affirmed, that one day, when an old woman, who attended in the nurſery, had by ſtealth conveyed a bottle of cordial waters to her mouth, he pulled his nurſe by the ſleeve, and, by a ſlight glance detecting the theft, tipt her the wink with a particular ſlyneſs of countenance, as if he had ſaid with a

ſneer, "Ay, ay, that is what you muſt all come to." But theſe inſtances of reflection in a babe nine months old are ſo incredible, that I look upon them as *ex poſt facto* obſervations, founded upon imaginary recollection, when he was in a more advanced age, and his peculiarities of temper became much more remarkable—of a piece with the ingenious diſcoveries of thoſe ſagacious obſervers who can diſcern ſomething evidently characteriſtic in the features of any noted perſonage, whoſe character they have previouſly heard explained; yet, without pretending to ſpecify at what period of his childhood this ſingularity firſt appeared, I can with great truth declare, that, when he firſt attracted the notice and affection of his uncle, it was plainly perceivable.

One would imagine he had marked out the commodore as a proper object of ridicule, for almoſt all his little childiſh ſatire was levelled againſt him. I will not deny that he might have been influenced in this particular by the example and inſtruction of Mr. Hatchway, who delighted in ſuperintending the firſt eſſays of his genius. As the gout had taken up its reſidence in Mr. Trunnion's great toe, from whence it never removed, no not for a day, little Perry took great pleaſure in treading by accident on this infirm member; and when his uncle, incenſed by the pain, uſed to damn him for a hell-begotten brat, he would appeaſe him in a twinkling, by returning the curſe with equal emphaſis, and aſking what was the matter with old Hannibal Tough? an appellation by which the lieutenant had taught him to diſtinguiſh this grim commander.

Neither was this the only experiment he tried upon the patience of the commodore, with whoſe noſe he uſed to take indecent freedoms, even while he was fondled on his knee; in one month he put him to the expence of two guineas in ſeal-ſkin, by picking his pocket of divers tobacco pouches, all of which he in ſecret committed to the flames. Nor did the caprice of his diſpoſition abſtain from the favourite beverage of Trunnion, who more than once ſwallowed a whole draught, in which his brother's ſnuff-box had been emptied, before he perceived the diſagreeable infuſion: And one day, when the commodore had chaſtiſed him by a gentle tap with his cane, he

fell flat on the floor, as if he had been deprived of all ſenſe and motion, to the terror and amazement of the ſtriker; and, after having filled the whole houſe with confuſion and diſmay, opened his eyes, and laughed heartily at the ſucceſs of his own impoſition.

It would be an endleſs, and perhaps no very agreeable taſk, to enumerate all the unlucky pranks he played upon his uncle and others, before he attained the fourth year of his age; about which time he was ſent, with an attendant, to a day-ſchool in the neighbourhood, that (to uſe his good mother's own expreſſion) he might be out of harm's way. Here, however, he made little progreſs, except in miſchief, which he practiſed with impunity, becauſe the ſchool-miſtreſs would run no riſk of diſobliging a lady of fortune, by exerciſing unneceſſary ſeverities upon her only child. Nevertheleſs, Mrs. Pickle was not ſo blindly partial as to be pleaſed with ſuch unſeaſonable indulgence. Perry was taken out of the hands of this courteous teacher, and committed to the inſtruction of a pedagogue, who was ordered to adminiſter ſuch correction as the boy ſhould (in his opinion) deſerve. This authority he did not neglect to uſe; his pupil was regularly flogged twice a day; and, after having been ſubjected to this courſe of diſcipline for the ſpace of eighteen months, declared the moſt obſtinate, dull, and untoward genius that ever had fallen under his cultivation; inſtead of being reformed, he ſeemed rather hardened and confirmed in his vicious inclinations, and was dead to all ſenſe of fear as well as ſhame. His mother was extremely mortified at theſe ſymptoms of ſtupidity, which ſhe conſidered as an inheritance derived from the ſpirit of his father, and conſequently unſurmountable by all the efforts of human care. But the commodore rejoiced over the ruggedneſs of his nature; and was particularly pleaſed, when, upon inquiry, he found that Perry had beaten all the boys in the ſchool; a circumſtance from which he prognoſticated every thing that was fair and fortunate in his future fate; obſerving that, at his age, he himſelf was juſt ſuch another. The boy, who was now turned of ſix, having profited ſo little under the birch of his unſparing governor, Mrs. Pickle was counſelled to ſend him to a boarding ſchool not far from London, which

was kept by a certain perſon very eminent for his ſucceſsful method of education. This advice ſhe the more readily embraced, becauſe at that time ſhe found herſelf pretty far gone with another child, that ſhe hoped would conſole her for the diſappointment ſhe had met with in the unpromiſing talents of Perry, or at any rate divide her concern, ſo as to enable her to endure the abſence of either.

CHAPTER XII.

Peregrine is ſent to a boarding-ſchool: becomes remarkable for his genius and ambition.

THE commodore underſtanding her determination, to which her huſband did not venture to make the leaſt objection, intereſted himſelf ſo much in behalf of his favourite, as to fit him out at his own charge, and accompany him in perſon to the place of his deſtination; where he defrayed the expence of his entrance, and left him to the particular care and inſpection of the uſher, who having been recommended to him as a perſon of parts and integrity, received per advance a handſome conſideration for the taſk he undertook.

Nothing could be better judged than this piece of liberality; the aſſiſtant was actually a man of learning, probity, and good ſenſe; and, though obliged by the ſcandalous adminiſtration of fortune to act in the character of an inferior teacher, had, by his ſole capacity and application, brought the ſchool to that degree of reputation, which it never could have obtained from the talents of his ſuperior. He had eſtabliſhed an economy, which, though regular, was not at all ſevere, by enacting a body of laws ſuited to the age and comprehenſion of every individual; and each tranſgreſſor was fairly tried by his peers, and puniſhed according to the verdict of the jury. No boy was ſcourged for want of apprehenſion, but a ſpirit of emulation was raiſed by well-timed praiſe and artful compariſon, and maintained by a diſtribution of ſmall prizes, which were adjudged to thoſe who ſig-

nalized themſelves either by their induſtry, ſobriety, or genius. This tutor, whoſe name was Jennings, began with Perry, according to his conſtant maxim, by examining the ſoil; that is, ſtudying his temper, in order to conſult the bias of his diſpoſition, which was ſtrangely perverted by the abſurd diſcipline he had undergone. He found him in a ſtate of ſullen inſenſibility, which the child had gradually contracted in a long courſe of ſtupifying correction; and at firſt he was not in the leaſt actuated by that commendation which animated the reſt of his ſchool-fellows; nor was it in the power of reproach to excite his ambition, which had been buried, as it were, in the grave of diſgrace; the uſher therefore had recourſe to contemptuous neglect, with which he affected to treat this ſtubborn ſpirit; foreſeeing, that, if he retained any ſeeds of ſentiment, this weather would infallibly raiſe them into vegetation: his judgment was juſtified by the event; the boy in a little time began to make obſervations; he perceived the marks of diſtinction with which virtue was rewarded, grew aſhamed of the deſpicable figure he himſelf made among his companions, who, far from courting, rather ſhunned his converſation, and actually pined at his own want of importance.

Mr. Jennings ſaw and rejoiced at his mortification, which he ſuffered to proceed as far as poſſible, without endangering his health. The child loſt all reliſh for diverſion, lothed his food, grew penſive, ſolitary, and was frequently found weeping by himſelf. Theſe ſymptoms plainly evinced the recovery of his feelings, to which his governor thought it now high time to make application; and therefore by little and little altered his behaviour from the indifference he had put on, to the appearance of more regard and attention. This produced a favourable change in the boy, whoſe eyes ſparkled with ſatisfaction one day, when his maſter expreſſed himſelf with a ſhow of ſurpriſe in theſe words: "So, Perry! I find you don't wan't genius, when you think proper to uſe it." Such encomiums kindled the ſpirit of emulation in his little breaſt; he exerted himſelf with ſurpriſing alacrity, by which he ſoon acquitted himſelf of the imputation of dullneſs, and obtained ſundry [illegible] ſilver pennies, [illegible]

acknowledgments of his application: His ſchool-fellows now ſolicited his friendſhip as eagerly as they had avoided it before; and, in leſs than a twelvemonth after his arrival, this ſuppoſed dunce was remarkable for the brightneſs of his parts; having in that ſhort period learnt to read Engliſh perfectly well, made great progreſs in writing, enabled himſelf to ſpeak the French language without heſitation, and acquired ſome knowledge in the rudiments of the Latin tongue. The uſher did not fail to tranſmit an account of his proficiency to the commodore, who received it with tranſport, and forthwith communicated the happy tidings to the parents.

Mr. Gamaliel Pickle, who was never ſubject to violent emotions, heard them with a ſort of phlegmatic ſatisfaction, that ſcarce manifeſted itſelf either in his countenance or expreſſions; nor did the child's mother break forth into that rapture and admiration which might have been expected, when ſhe underſtood how much the talents of her firſt-born had exceeded the hope of her warmeſt imagination. Not but that ſhe profeſſed herſelf well pleaſed with Perry's reputation; though ſhe obſerved that, in theſe commendations, the truth was always exaggerated by ſchoolmaſters, for their own intereſt; and pretended to wonder that the uſher had not mingled more probability with his praiſe. Trunnion was offended at her indifference and want of faith, and believing that ſhe refined too much in her diſcernment, ſwore that Jennings had declared the truth, and nothing but the truth; for he himſelf had propheſied from the beginning that the boy would turn out a credit to his family. But by this time Mrs. Pickle was bleſſed with a daughter, whom ſhe had brought into the world about ſix months before the intelligence arrived; ſo that her care and affection being otherwiſe engroſſed, the praiſe of Perry was the leſs greedily devoured. The abatement of her fondneſs was an advantage to his education, which would have been retarded, and perhaps ruined, by pernicious indulgence and prepoſterous interpoſition, had her love conſidered him as an only child; whereas, her concern being now diverted to another object, that ſhared, at leaſt, one half of her affection, he was left to the management of his preceptor, who tutored him according to his own

plan, without any let or interruption. Indeed, all his ſagacity and circumſpection were but barely ſufficient to keep the young gentleman in order; for, now that he had won the palm of victory from his rivals in point of ſcholarſhip, his ambition dilated, and he was ſeized with the deſire of ſubjecting the whole ſchool by the valour of his arm. Before he could bring his project to bear, innumerable battles were fought with various ſucceſs; every day a bloody noſe and complaint were preſented againſt him, and his own viſage commonly bore ſome livid marks of obſtinate contention. At length, however, he accompliſhed his aim; his adverſaries were ſubdued, his proweſs acknowledged, and he obtained the laurel in war as well as in wit. Thus triumphant, he was intoxicated with ſucceſs. His pride roſe in proportion to his power, and, in ſpite of all the endeavours of Jennings, who practiſed every method he could invent for curbing his licentious conduct, without depreſſing his ſpirit, he contracted a large proportion of inſolence, which a ſeries of misfortunes that happened to him in the ſequel could ſcarce effectually tame. Nevertheleſs there was a fund of good nature and generoſity in his compoſition: and though he eſtabliſhed a tyranny among his comrades, the tranquillity of his reign was maintained by the love rather than by the fear of his ſubjects.

In the midſt of all this enjoyment of empire, he never once violated that reſpectful awe with which the uſher had found means to inſpire him; but he by no means preſerved the ſame regard for the principal maſter, an old illiterate German quack, who had formerly practiſed corn-cutting among the quality, and ſold coſmetic waſhes to the ladies, together with teeth powders, hair-dying liquors, prolific elixirs, and tinctures to ſweeten the breath. Theſe noſtrums, recommended by the art of cringing, in which he was conſummate, ingratiated him ſo much with people of faſhion, that he was enabled to ſet up ſchool with five and twenty boys of the beſt families, whom he boarded on his own terms, and undertook to inſtruct in the French and Latin languages, ſo as to qualify them for the colleges of Weſtminſter and Eaton. While this plan was in its infancy, he was ſo fortunate as to meet with Jennings, who, for the paltry

conſideration of thirty pounds a-year, which his neceſſities compelled him to accept, took the whole trouble of educating the children upon himſelf, contrived an excellent ſyſtem for that purpoſe, and, by his aſſiduity and knowledge, executed all the particulars to the entire ſatisfaction of thoſe concerned, who, by the bye, never inquired into his qualifications, but ſuffered the other to enjoy the fruits of his labour and ingenuity.

Over and above a large ſtock of avarice, ignorance, and vanity, this ſuperior had certain ridiculous peculiarities in his perſon, ſuch as a haunch upon his back, and diſtorted limbs, that ſeemed to attract the ſatirical notice of Peregrine, who, young as he was, took offence at his want of reverence for his uſher, over whom he ſometimes choſe opportunities of diſplaying his authority, that the boys might not diſplace their veneration. Mr. Keypſtick, therefore, ſuch as I have deſcribed him, incurred the contempt and diſpleaſure of this enterpriſing pupil, who now, being in the tenth year of his age, had capacity enough to give him abundance of vexation. He underwent many mortifying jokes from the invention of Pickle and his confederates; ſo that he began to entertain ſuſpicion of Mr. Jennings, who, he could not help thinking, had been at the bottom of them all, and ſpirited up principles of rebellion in the ſchool, with a view of making himſelf independent. Poſſeſſed with this chimera, which was void of all foundation, the German deſcended ſo low as to tamper in private with the boys, from whom he hoped to draw ſome very important diſcovery; but he was diſappointed in his expectation; and this mean practice reaching the ears of his uſher, he voluntarily reſigned his employment. Finding intereſt to obtain holy orders in a little time after, he left the kingdom, hoping to find a ſettlement in ſome of our American plantations.

The departure of Mr. Jennings pròduced a great revolution in the affairs of Keypſtick, which declined from that moment, becauſe he had neither authority to enforce obedience, nor prudence to maintain order among his ſcholars; ſo that the ſchool degenerated into anarchy and confuſion, and he himſelf dwindled in the opinion of his employers, who looked upon him as ſuperannuated, and withdrew their children from his tuition.

Peregrine, ſeeing this diſſolution of their ſociety, and finding himſelf every day deprived of ſome companion, began to repine at his ſituation, and reſolved, if poſſible, to procure his releaſe from the juriſdiction of the perſon whom he both deteſted and deſpiſed. With this view he went to work, and compoſed the following billet, addreſſed to the commodore, which was the firſt ſpecimen of his compoſition in the epiſtolary way:

"Honoured and loving uncle,

"HOPING you are in good health, this ſerves to inform you, that Mr. Jennings is gone, and Mr. Keypſtick will never meet with his fellow. The ſchool is already almoſt broke up, and the reſt daily going away; and I beg of you of all love to have me fetched away alſo, for I cannot bear to be any longer under one who is a perfect ignoramus, who ſcarce knows the declination of *muſa*, and is more fit to be a ſcare-crow than a ſchool-maſter; hoping you will ſend for me ſoon, with my love to my aunt, and my duty to my honoured parents, craving their bleſſing and yours. And this is all at preſent, from honoured uncle, your well-beloved and dutiful nephew and godſon, and humble ſervant to command till death,

PEREGRINE PICKLE."

Trunnion was overjoyed at the receipt of this letter, which he looked upon as one of the greateſt efforts of human genius, and as ſuch communicated the contents to his lady, whom he had diſturbed for the purpoſe in the middle of her devotion, by ſending a meſſage to her cloſet, whither it was her cuſtom very frequently to retire. She was out of humour at being interrupted, and therefore did not peruſe this ſpecimen of her nephew's underſtanding with all the reliſh that the commodore himſelf had enjoyed; on the contrary, after ſundry paralytical endeavours to ſpeak (for her tongue ſometimes refuſed its office), ſhe obſerved that the boy was a pert jackanapes, and deſerved to be ſeverely chaſtiſed for treating his betters with ſuch diſreſpect. Her huſband undertook his godſon's defence, repreſenting, with great warmth, that he knew Keypſtick to be a good for nothing pimping old raſcal, and that Perry ſhowed a great deal of

ſpirit and good ſenſe in deſiring to be taken from under his command; he therefore declared that the boy ſhould not live a week longer with ſuch a ſhambling ſon of a bitch, and ſanctioned his declaration with abundance of oaths.

Mrs. Trunnion, compoſing her countenance into a look of religious demureneſs, rebuked him for his profane way of talking; and aſked in a magiſterial tone, if he intended never to lay aſide that brutal behaviour! Irritated at this reproach, he anſwered in terms of indignation, that he knew how to behave himſelf as well as e'er a woman that wore a head, bade her mind her own affairs, and, with another repetition of oaths, gave her to underſtand that he would be maſter in his own houſe.

This inſinuation operated upon her ſpirits like friction upon a glaſs globe; her face gleamed with reſentment, and every pore ſeemed to emit particles of flame. She replied with incredible fluency of the bittereſt expreſſions. He retorted equal rage in broken hints and incoherent imprecations. She rejoined with redoubled fury, and in concluſion he was fain to betake himſelf to flight, ejaculating curſes againſt her; and muttering ſomething concerning the brandy-bottle, which, however, he took care ſhould never reach her ears.

From his own houſe he went directly to viſit Mrs. Pickle, to whom he imparted Peregrine's epiſtle, with many encomiums upon the boy's promiſing parts; and finding his commendations but coldly received, deſired ſhe would permit him to take his godſon under his own care.

This lady, whoſe family was now increaſed by another ſon, who ſeemed to engroſs her care for the preſent, had not ſeen Perry during a courſe of four years, and, with regard to him, was perfectly weaned of that infirmity known by the name of maternal fondneſs; ſhe therefore conſented to the commodore's requeſt with great condeſcenſion, and a polite compliment to him on the concern he had all along manifeſted for the welfare of the child.

CHAPTER XIII.

The commodore takes Peregrine under his own care. The boy arrives at the garriſon; is ſtrangely received by his own mother; enters into a confederacy with Hatchway and Pipes, and executes a couple of waggiſh enterpriſes upon his aunt.

TRUNNION having obtained this permiſſion, that very afternoon diſpatched the lieutenant in a poſt-chaiſe to Keypſtick's houſe, from whence, in two days, he returned with our young hero; who being now in the eleventh year of his age, had outgrown the expectation of all his family, and was remarkable for the beauty and elegance of his perſon. His godfather was tranſported at his arrival, as if he had been actually the iſſue of his own loins. He ſhook him heartily by the hand, turned him round and round, ſurveyed him from top to bottom, bade Hatchway take notice how handſomely he was built; ſqueezed his hand again, ſaying, "Damn ye, you dog, I ſuppoſe you don't value ſuch an old crazy ſon of a bitch as me a rope's end. You have forgot how I wont to dandle you on my knee, when you was a little urchin no bigger than the Davit, and played a thouſand tricks upon me, burning my bacco-pouches, and poiſoning my rumbo: O! damn ye, you can grin faſt enough, I ſee; I warrant you have learnt more things than writing and the Latin lingo." Even Tom Pipes expreſſed uncommon ſatisfaction on this joyful occaſion: and coming up to Perry, thruſt forth his ſore paw, and accoſted him with the ſalutation of "What cheer, my young maſter? I am glad to ſee thee with all my heart." Theſe compliments being paſſed, his uncle halted to the door of his wife's chamber, at which he ſtood hollowing, "Here's your kinſman Perry, belike you won't come and bid him welcome."—"Lord! Mr. Trunnion, ſaid ſhe, why will you continually haraſs me in this manner with your impertinent intruſion?" "I harrow you, replied the commodore; 'ſblood! I believe your upper works are damaged; I only came to inform you that here was your couſin, whom you have not ſeen theſe four long years; and I'll be damn'd if there is ſuch another of his age within the king's dominions, d'ye ſee, either for make or mettle; he's a credit to the name, d'ye

ſee; but damn my eyes, I'll ſay no more of the matter; if you come, you may; if you won't, you may let it alone."—"Well, I won't come then (anſwered his yoke-fellow), for I am at preſent more agreeably employed."—"Oho! you are? I believe ſo too;" cried the commodore, making wry faces, and mimicking the action of dram-drinking. Then addreſſing himſelf to Hatchway, "Prithee Jack (ſaid he), go and try thy ſkill on that ſtubborn hulk; if any body can bring her about, I know you wool." The lieutenant accordingly taking his ſtation at the door, conveyed his perſuaſion in theſe words: "What, won't you turn out and hail little Perry? It will do your heart good to ſee ſuch a handſome young dog; I'm ſure he is the very moral of you, and as like as if he had been ſpit out of your own mouth, as the ſaying is; do ſhow a little reſpect for your kinſman, can't you?"—To this remonſtrance ſhe replied in a mild tone of voice, "Dear Mr. Hatchway, you are always teazing one in ſuch a manner; ſure I am, no body can tax me with unkindneſs, or want of natural affection;" ſo ſaying, ſhe opened the door, and advancing to the hall where her nephew ſtood, received him very graciouſly, and obſerved that he was the very image of her papa.

In the afternoon he was conducted by the commodore to the houſe of his parents; and, ſtrange to tell, no ſooner was he preſented to his mother, than her countenance changed, ſhe eyed him with tokens of affliction and ſurpriſe, and, burſting into tears, exclaimed her child was dead, and this was no other than an impoſtor whom they had brought to defraud her ſorrow. Trunnion was confounded at this unaccountable paſſion, which had no other foundation than caprice and whim; and Gamaliel himſelf was ſo diſconcerted and unſettled in his own belief, which began to waver, that he knew not how to behave towards the boy, whom his godfather immediately carried back to the garriſon, ſwearing all the way that Perry ſhould never croſs their threſhold again with his good-will. Nay, ſo much was he incenſed at this unnatural and abſurd renunciation, that he refuſed to carry on any further correſpondence with Pickle, until he was appeaſed by his ſolicitations and ſubmiſſion, and Peregrine owned as his ſon and heir. But this acknowledgment

was made without the privity of his wife, whoſe vicious averſion he was obliged, in appearance, to adopt. Thus exiled from his father's houſe, the young gentleman was left entirely to the diſpoſal of the commodore, whoſe affection for him daily increaſed, inſomuch that he could ſcarce prevail upon himſelf to part with him, when his education abſolutely required that he ſhould be otherwiſe diſpoſed of.

In all probability, this extraordinary attachment was, if not produced, at leaſt rivetted, by that peculiar turn in Peregrine's imagination, which we have already obſerved; and which, during his reſidence in the caſtle, appeared in ſundry ſtratagems he practiſed upon his uncle and aunt, under the auſpices of Mr. Hatchway, who aſſiſted him in the contrivance and execution of all his ſchemes. Nor was Pipes exempted from a ſhare in their undertakings; for, being a truſty fellow, not without dexterity in ſome caſes, and altogether reſigned to their will, they found him a ſerviceable inſtrument for their purpoſe, and uſed him accordingly.

The firſt ſample of their art was exhibited upon Mrs. Trunnion. They terrified that good lady with ſtrange noiſes when ſhe retired to her devotion. Pipes was a natural genius in the compoſition of diſcords; he could imitate the ſound produced by the winding of a jack, the filing of a ſaw, and the ſwinging of a malefactor hanging in chains; he could counterfeit the braying of an aſs, the ſcreeching of a night owl, the caterwauling of cats, the howling of a dog, the ſqueaking of a pig, the crowing of a cock; and he had learned the war hoop uttered by the Indians in North America. Theſe talents were exerted ſucceſſively at different times and places, to the terror of Mrs. Trunnion, the diſcompoſure of the commodore himſelf, and the conſternation of all the ſervants in the caſtle.—Peregrine, with a ſheet over his clothes, ſometimes tumbled before his aunt in the twilight, when her organs of viſion were a little impaired by the cordial ſhe had ſwallowed; and the boatſwain's mate taught him to ſhoe cats with walnut-ſhells, ſo that they made a moſt dreadful clattering in their nocturnal excurſions. The mind of Mrs. Trunnion was not a little diſturbed by theſe alarms, which, in her opinion, portended

he could not withſtand the momentum of the blow, which in an inſtant laid him flat on the floor, deprived of all ſenſe and motion; and Trunnion hopped up ſtairs to dinner, applauding himſelf in ejaculations all the way for the vengeance he had taken on ſuch an impudent pettifogging miſcreant.

The attorney no ſooner awaked from his trance, into which he had been ſo unexpectedly lulled, than he caſt his eyes around in queſt of evidence, by which he might be enabled the more eaſily to prove the injury he had ſuſtained; but not a ſoul appearing, he made ſhift to get upon his legs again, and, with the blood trickling over his noſe, followed one of the ſervants into the dining-room, reſolved to come to an explanation with the aſſailant, and either extort money from him by way of ſatisfaction, or provoke him to a ſecond application before witneſſes. With this view he entered the room in a peal of clamour, to the amazement of all preſent, and the terror of Mrs. Trunnion, who ſhrieked at the appearance of ſuch a ſpectacle; and addreſſing himſelf to the commodore, "I'll tell you what, Sir, ſaid he, if there be law in England, I'll make you ſmart for this here aſſault: You think you have ſcreened yourſelf from a proſecution, by ſending all your ſervants out of the way, but that circumſtance will appear upon trial to be a plain proof of the malice prepenſe with which the fact was committed; eſpecially when corroborated by the evidence of this here letter, under your own hand, whereby I am deſired to come to your own houſe to tranſact an affair of conſequence." So ſaying, he produced the writing, and read the contents in theſe words:

Mr. ROGER RAVINE.

SIR,

BEING in a manner priſoner in my own houſe, I deſire you will give me a call preciſely at three o'clock in the afternoon, and inſiſt upon ſeeing me yourſelf, as I have an affair of great conſequence, in which your particular advice is wanted by your humble ſervant,

HAWSER TRUNNION.

The one-eyed commander, who had been ſatisfied

with the chaſtiſement he had already beſtowed upon the plaintiff, hearing him read this audacious piece of forgery, which he conſidered as the effect of his own villany, ſtarted up from table, and ſeizing a huge turkey that lay in a diſh before him, would have applied it, ſauce and all, by way of poultice to his wound, had he not been reſtrained by Hatchway, who laid faſt hold on both his arms, and fixed him to his chair again, adviſing the attorney to ſheer off with what he had got.—Far from following this ſalutary counſel, he redoubled his threats, and ſet Trunnion at defiance, telling him he was not a man of true courage, although he had commanded a ſhip of war, or elſe he would not have attacked any perſon in ſuch a cowardly and clandeſtine manner. This provocation would have anſwered his purpoſe effectually, had not his adverſary's indignation been repreſſed by the ſuggeſtions of the lieutenant, who deſired his friend in a whiſper to be eaſy, for he would take care to have the attorney toſſed in a blanket for his preſumption. This propoſal, which he received with great approbation, pacified him in a moment; he wiped the ſweat from his forehead, and his features relaxed into a grim ſmile.

Hatchway diſappeared, and Ravine proceeded with great fluency of abuſe, until he was interrupted by the arrival of Pipes, who, without any expoſtulation, led him out by the hand, and conducted him to the yard, where he was put into a carpet, and in a twinkling ſent into the air by the ſtrength and dexterity of five ſtout operators, whom the lieutenant had ſelected from the number of domeſtics for that ſingular ſpell of duty.

In vain did the aſtoniſhed vaulter beg for the love of God and paſſion of Chriſt, that they would take pity upon him, and put an end to his involuntary gambols; they were deaf to his prayers and proteſtations, even when he ſwore, in the moſt ſolemn manner, that, if they would ceaſe tormenting him, he would forget and forgive what was paſt, and depart in peace to his own habitation; and continued the game till they were fatigued with the exerciſe.

Ravine being diſmiſſed in a moſt melancholy plight, brought an action of aſſault and battery againſt the commodore, and ſubpœna'd all the ſervants as evidences in

the cauſe; but as none of them had ſeen what happened, he did not find his account in the proſecution, though he himſelf examined all the witneſſes, and, among other queſtions, aſked, Whether they had not ſeen him come in like another man? and whether they had ever ſeen any other man in ſuch a condition as that in which he had crawled off? But this laſt interrogation they were not obliged to anſwer, becauſe it had reference to the ſecond diſcipline he had undergone, in which they, and they only, were concerned; and no perſon is bound to give teſtimony againſt himſelf.

In ſhort, the attorney was nonſuited, to the ſatisfaction of all who knew him, and found himſelf under the neceſſity of proving that he had received, in courſe of poſt, the letter, which was declared in court a ſcandalous forgery, in order to prevent an indictment with which he was threatened by the commodore, who little dreamed that the whole affair had been planned and executed by Peregrine and his aſſociates.

The next enterpriſe in which this triumvirate engaged, was a ſcheme to frighten Trunnion with an apparition, which they prepared and executed in this manner: To the hide of a large ox, Pipes fitted a leathern vizor of a moſt terrible appearance, ſtretched on the jaws of a ſhark, which he had brought from ſea, and accommodated with a couple of broad glaſſes inſtead of eyes. On the inſide of theſe, he placed two ruſh-lights, and with a compoſition of ſulphur and ſaltpetre, made a pretty large fuſe, which he fixed between two rows of the teeth. This equipage being finiſhed, he, one dark night choſen for the purpoſe, put it on, and following the commodore into a long paſſage in which he was preceded by Perry with a light in his hand, kindled his fire-work with a match, and began to bellow like a bull. The boy, as it was concerted, looking behind him, ſcreamed aloud, and dropped the light, which was extinguiſhed in the fall: When Trunnion, alarmed at his nephew's conſternation, exclaimed, "Zounds! what's the matter?" And, turning about to ſee the cauſe of his diſmay, beheld a hideous phantom vomiting blue flame, which aggravated the horrors of its aſpect. He was inſtantly ſeized with an agony of fear, which diveſted him of his reaſon; never-

theleſs, he, as it were mechanically, raiſed his truſty ſupporter in his own defence, and the apparition advancing towards him, aimed it at this dreadful annoyance with ſuch a convulſive exertion of ſtrength, that, had not the blow chanced to light upon one of the horns, Mr. Pipes would have had no cauſe to value himſelf upon his invention. Miſapplied as it was, he did not fail to ſtagger at the ſhock, and, dreading another ſuch ſalutation, cloſed with the commodore, and having tripped up his heels, retreated with great expedition.

It was then that Peregrine, pretending to recollect himſelf a little, ran with all the marks of diſturbance and affright, and called up the ſervants to the aſſiſtance of their maſter; whom they found in a cold ſweat upon the floor, his features betokening horror and confuſion. Hatchway raiſed him up, and, having comforted him with a cup of Nantz, began to inquire into the cauſe of his diſorder; but he could not extract one word of anſwer from his friend, who, after a conſiderable pauſe, during which he ſeemed to be wrapped up in profound contemplation, pronounced aloud, "By the Lord! Jack, you may ſay what you wool; but I'll be damn'd if it was not Davy Jones himſelf. I know him by his ſaucer-eyes, his three rows of teeth, his horns and tail, and the blue ſmoke that came out of his noſtrils. What does the black-guard hell's baby want with me? I am ſure I never committed murder, except in the way of my profeſſion, nor wronged any man whatſomever ſince I firſt went to ſea." This ſame Davy Jones, according to the mythology of ſailors, is the fiend that preſides over all the evil ſpirits of the deep, and is often ſeen in various ſhapes, perching among the rigging on the eve of hurricanes, ſhipwrecks, and other diſaſters, to which a ſea-faring life is expoſed; warning the devoted wretch of death and woe. No wonder then that Trunnion was diſturbed by a ſuppoſed viſit of this demon, which in his opinion, foreboded ſome dreadful calamity.

CHAPTER XIV.

He is alſo by their device engaged in an adventure with the exciſeman, who does not find his account in his own drollery.

HOWSOEVER prepoſterous and unaccountable that paſſion may be, which prompts perſons, otherwiſe generous and ſympathiſing, to afflict and perplex their fellow-creatures, certain it is, our confederates entertained ſuch a large proportion of it, that, not ſatisfied with the pranks they had already played, they ſtill perſecuted the commodore without ceaſing. In the courſe of his own hiſtory, the particulars of which he delighted to recount, he had often rehearſed an adventure of deer-ſtealing, in which (during the unthinking impetuoſity of his youth) he had been unfortunately concerned. Far from ſucceeding in that achievement, he and his aſſociates had (it ſeems) been made priſoners, after an obſtinate engagement with the keepers, and carried before a neighbouring juſtice of the peace, who uſed Trunnion with great indignity, and with his companions committed him to jail.

His own relations, and in particular an uncle, on whom he chiefly depended, treated him during his confinement with great rigour and inhumanity, and abſolutely refuſed to interpoſe his influence in his behalf, unleſs he would ſign a writing obliging himſelf to go to ſea within thirty days after his releaſe, under the penalty of being proceeded againſt as a felon. The alternative was, either to undergo this voluntary exile, or remain in priſon diſowned and deſerted by every body, and, after all, ſuffer an ignominious trial, that might end in a ſentence of tranſportation for life. He therefore, without much heſitation, embraced the propoſal of his kinſman, and (as he obſerved) was, in leſs than a month after his diſcharge, turned adrift to the mercy of the wind and waves.

Since that period he had never maintained any correſpondence with his relations, all of whom had concurred in ſending him off; nor would he ever pay the leaſt regard to the humiliations and ſupplications of ſome among them, who had proſtrated themſelves before him, on the advancement of his fortune; but he retained a moſt inveterate reſentment againſt his uncle, who was ſtill in be-

ing, though extremely old and infirm, and frequently mentioned his name with all the bitterneſs of revenge.

Perry being perfectly well acquainted with the particulars of this ſtory, which he had heard ſo often repeated, propoſed to Hatchway, that a perſon ſhould be hired to introduce himſelf to the commodore, with a ſuppoſititious letter of recommendation from this deteſted kinſman; an impoſition that, in all likelihood, would afford abundance of diverſion.

The lieutenant reliſhed the ſcheme, and young Pickle having compoſed an epiſtle for the occaſion, the exciſeman of the pariſh, a fellow of great impudence and ſome humour, in whom Hatchway could confide, undertook to tranſcribe and deliver it with his own hand, and alſo perſonate the man in whoſe favour it was feigned to be writ. He accordingly one morning arrived on horſeback at the garriſon, two hours at leaſt before Trunnion uſed to get up, and gave Pipes, who admitted him, to underſtand, that he had a letter for his maſter, which he was ordered to deliver to none but the commodore himſelf. This meſſage was no ſooner communicated, than the indignant chief (who had been waked for the purpoſe) began to curſe the meſſenger for breaking his reſt, and ſwore he would not budge till his uſual time of turning out. This reſolution being conveyed to the ſtranger, he deſired the carrier to go back and tell him, he had ſuch joyful tidings to impart, that he was ſure the commodore would think himſelf amply rewarded for his trouble, even if he had been raiſed from the grave to receive them.

This aſſurance, flattering as it was, would not have been powerful enough to perſuade him, had it not been aſſiſted with the exhortations of his ſpouſe, which never failed to influence his conduct. He therefore crept out of bed, though not without great repugnance, and, wrapping himſelf in his morning gown, was ſupported down ſtairs, rubbing his eye, yawning fearfully, and grumbling all the way. As ſoon as he popped his head into the parlour, the ſuppoſed ſtranger made divers awkward bows, and with a grinning aſpect accoſted him in theſe words: "Your moſt humble ſervant, moſt noble commodore! I hope you are in good health; you look pure and hearty; and, if it was not for that misfortune of your eye, one

would not deſire to ſee a more pleaſant countenance in a ſummer's day. Sure as I am a living ſoul, one would take you to be on this ſide of threeſcore. Laud help us! I ſhould have known you to be a Trunnion, if I had met with you in the midſt of Saliſbury plain, as the ſaying is." The commodore, who was not at all in the humour of reliſhing ſuch an impertinent preamble, interrupted him in this place, ſaying, with a peeviſh accent, "Pſhaw! pſhaw! brother, there's no occaſion to bowſs out ſo much unneceſſary gum; if you can't bring your diſcourſe to bear on the right ſubject, you had much better clap a ſtopper on your tongue, and bring yourſelf up, d'ye ſee: I was told you had ſomething to deliver." "Deliver! (cried the waggiſh impoſtor) odds heart! I have got ſomething for you that will make your very entrails rejoice within your body. Here's a letter from a dear and worthy friend of yours. Take, read it, and be happy. Bleſſings on his old heart! one would think he had renewed his age, like the eagles." Trunnion's expectation being thus raiſed, he called for his ſpectacles, adjuſted them to his eye, took the letter, and, being curious to know the ſubſcription, no ſooner perceived his uncle's name, than he ſtarted back, his lip quivered, and he began to ſhake in every limb with reſentment and ſurpriſe; nevertheleſs, eager to know the ſubject of an epiſtle from a perſon who had never before troubled him with any ſort of addreſs, he endeavoured to recollect himſelf, and peruſed the contents, which were theſe:

"Loving Nephew,

"I doubt not but you will be rejoiced to hear of my welfare; and well you may, conſidering what a kind uncle I have been to you in the days of your youth, and how little you deſerved any ſuch thing; for you was always a graceleſs young man, given to wicked courſes and bad company, whereby you would have come to a ſhameful end, had it not been for my care in ſending you out of miſchief's way. But this is not the cauſe of my preſent writing. The bearer, Mr. Timothy Trickle, is a diſtant relation of yours, being the ſon of the couſin of your aunt Margery, and is not over and above well as to worldly matters. He thinks of going to London, to ſee for ſome

poſt in the exciſe or cuſtoms, if ſo be that you will recommend him to ſome great man of your acquaintance, and give him a ſmall matter to keep him till he is provided. I doubt not, nephew, but you will be glad to ſerve him, if it was no more but for the reſpect you bear to me, who am,

Loving nephew,
Your affectionate uncle,
And ſervant to command,
TOBIAH TRUNNION."

It would be a difficult taſk for the inimitable Hogarth himſelf to exhibit the ludicrous expreſſion of the commodore's countenance, while he read this letter. It was not a ſtare of aſtoniſhment, a convulſion of rage, or a ghaſtly grin of revenge, but an aſſociation of all three, that took poſſeſſion of his features. At length he hawked up, with incredible ſtraining, the interjection Ah! that ſeemed to have ſtuck ſome time in his windpipe, and thus gave vent to his indignation: "Have I come along ſide of you at laſt, you old ſtinking curmudgeon! you lie, you louſy hulk, you lie!—you did all in your power to founder me when I was a ſtripling; and, as for being graceleſs, and wicked, and keeping bad company, you tell a damned lie again, you thief; there was not a more peaceable lad in the county, and I kept no bad company but your own, d'ye ſee. Therefore, you Trickle, or what's your name, tell the old raſcal that ſent you hither, that I ſpit in his face, and call him horſe; that I tear his letter into rags, ſo; and that I trample upon it as I would upon his own villanous carcaſe, d'ye ſee." So ſaying, he danced in a ſort of frenzy upon the fragments of the paper, which he had ſcattered about the room, to the inexpreſſible ſatisfaction of the triumvirate, who beheld the ſcene.

The exciſeman having got between him and the door, which was left open for his eſcape, in caſe of neceſſity, affected great confuſion and ſurpriſe at his behaviour, ſaying, with an air of mortification, "Lord be merciful unto me! is this the way you treat your own relations, and the recommendation of your beſt friend? Surely all gratitude and virtue has left this ſinful world! What

will couſin Tim, and Dick, and Tom, and good mother Pipkin, and her daughters, couſins Sue, and Prue, and Peg, with all the reſt of our kinsfolk, ſay, when they hear of this unconſcionable reception that I have met with? Conſider, Sir, that ingratitude is worſe than the ſin of witchcraft, as the Apoſtle wiſely obſerves; and do not ſend me away with ſuch unchriſtian uſage, which will lay a heavy load of guilt upon your poor miſerable ſoul." "What, you are on a cruiſe for a poſt, brother Trickle, an't ye? (ſaid Trunnion, interrupting him), we ſhall find a poſt for you in a trice, my boy. Here, Pipes, take this ſaucy ſon of a bitch, belay him to the whipping-poſt in the yard. I'll teach you to rowce me in the morning with ſuch impertinent meſſages." Pipes, who wanted to carry the joke farther than the exciſeman dreamed of, laid hold of him in a twinkling, and executed the orders of his commander, notwithſtanding all his nods, winking, and ſignificant geſtures, which the boatſwain's mate would by no means underſtand: ſo that he began to repent of the part he acted in this performance, which was like to end ſo tragically, and ſtood faſtened to the ſtake, in a very diſagreeable ſtate of ſuſpence, caſting many a rueful look over his left ſhoulder (while Pipes was abſent in queſt of a cat and nine tails), in expectation of being relieved by the interpoſition of the lieutenant, who did not, however, appear. Tom, returning with the inſtrument of correction, undreſſed the delinquent in a trice, and whiſpering in his ear, that he was very ſorry for being employed in ſuch an office, but durſt not for his ſoul diſobey the orders of his commander, flouriſhed the ſcourge about his head, and, with admirable dexterity, made ſuch a ſmarting application to the offender's back and ſhoulders, that the diſtracted gauger performed ſundry new cuts with his feet, and bellowed hideouſly with pain, to the infinite ſatisfaction of the ſpectators. At length, when he was almoſt flea'd from his rump to the nape of his neck, Hatchway, who had purpoſely abſented himſelf hitherto, appeared in the yard, and, interpoſing in his behalf, prevailed upon Trunnion to call off the executioner, and ordered the malefactor to be releaſed.

The exciſeman, mad with the cataſtrophe he had undergone, threatened to be revenged upon his employers,

by making a candid confeſſion of the whole plot; but the lieutenant giving him to underſtand, that, in ſo doing, he would bring upon himſelf a proſecution for fraud, forgery, and impoſture, he was fain to put up with his loſs, and ſneaked out of the garriſon, attended with a volley of curſes diſcharged upon him by the commodore, who was exceedingly irritated by the diſturbance and diſappointment he had undergone.

CHAPTER XV.

The commodore detects the machinations of the conſpirators, and hires a tutor for Peregrine, whom he ſettles at Wincheſter ſchool.

THIS was not the leaſt affliction he ſuffered from the unwearied endeavours and inexhauſted invention of his tormentors, who haraſſed him with ſuch a variety of miſchievous pranks, that he began to think all the devils in hell had conſpired againſt his peace; and accordingly became very ſerious and contemplative on the ſubject.

In the courſe of his meditations, when he recollected and compared the circumſtances of every mortification to which he had been lately expoſed, he could not help ſuſpecting that ſome of them muſt have been contrived to vex him; and, as he was not ignorant of his lieutenant's diſpoſition, nor unacquainted with the talents of Peregrine, he reſolved to obſerve them both for the future with the utmoſt care and circumſpection. This reſolution, aided by the incautious conduct of the conſpirators, whom, by this time, ſucceſs had rendered heedleſs and indiſcreet, was attended with the deſired effect. He in a little time detected Perry in a new plot, and, by dint of a little chaſtiſement, and a great many threats, extorted from him a confeſſion of all the contrivances in which he had been concerned. The commodore was thunderſtruck at the diſcovery, and ſo much incenſed againſt Hatchway, for the part he had acted in the whole, that he deliberated with himſelf, whether he ſhould demand ſatisfaction with ſword and piſtol, or diſmiſs him

from the garriſon, and renounce all friendſhip with him at once. But he had been ſo long accuſtomed to Jack's company, that he could not live without him; and, upon more cool reflection, perceiving that what he had done was rather the effect of wantonneſs than malice, which he himſelf would have laughed to ſee take place upon any other perſon, he determined to devour his chagrin, and extend his forgiveneſs even to Pipes, whom, in the firſt ſally of his paſſion, he had looked upon in a more criminal light than that of a ſimple mutineer. This determination was ſeconded by another, which he thought abſolutely neceſſary for his own repoſe, and in which his own intereſt, and that of his nephew concurred.

Peregrine, who was now turned of twelve, had made ſuch advances under the inſtruction of Jennings, that he often diſputed upon grammar, and was ſometimes thought to have the better in his conteſts with the pariſh prieſt, who, notwithſtanding this acknowledged ſuperiority of his antagoniſt, did great juſtice to his genius, which he aſſured Mr. Trunnion would be loſt for want of cultivation, if the boy was not immediately ſent to proſecute his ſtudies at ſome proper ſeminary of learning.

This maxim had been more than once inculcated upon the commodore by Mrs. Trunnion, who, over and above the deference ſhe paid to the parſon's opinion, had a reaſon of her own for wiſhing to ſee the houſe clear of Peregrine, at whoſe prying diſpoſition ſhe began to be very uneaſy. Induced by theſe motives, which were joined by the ſolicitation of the youth himſelf, who ardently longed to ſee a little more of the world, his uncle determined to ſend him forthwith to Wincheſter, under the immediate care and inſpection of a governor, to whom he allowed a very handſome appointment for that purpoſe. This gentleman, whoſe name was Mr. Jacob Jolter, had been ſchool-fellow with the parſon of the pariſh, who recommended him to Mrs. Trunnion as a perſon of great worth and learning, in every reſpect qualified for the office of a tutor. He likewiſe added, by way of eulogium, that he was a man of exemplary piety, and particularly zealous for the honour of the church of which he was a member, having been many years in holy orders, though he did not then exerciſe any function of the prieſthood.

Indeed Mr. Jolter's zeal was ſo exceedingly fervent, as on ſome occaſions to get the better of his diſcretion; for, being an high churchman, and of conſequence a malcontent, his reſentment was habituated into an unſurmountable prejudice againſt the preſent diſpoſition of affairs, which, by confounding the nation with the miniſtry, ſometimes led him into erroneous, not to ſay abſurd calculations; otherwiſe a man of good morals, well verſed in mathematics and ſchool divinity, ſtudies which had not at all contributed to ſweeten and unbend the natural ſourneſs and ſeverity of his complexion.

This gentleman being deſtined to the charge of ſuperintending Perry's education, every thing was prepared for their departure; and Tom Pipes, in conſequence of his own petition, put into livery, and appointed footman to the young ſquire. But, before they ſet out, the commodore paid the compliment of communicating his deſign to Mr. Pickle, who approved of the plan, though he durſt not venture to ſee the boy; ſo much was he intimidated by the remonſtrances of his wife, whoſe averſion to her firſt-born became every day more inveterate and unaccountable. This unnatural caprice ſeemed to be ſupported by a conſideration which (one would imagine) might have rather vanquiſhed her diſguſt. Her ſecond ſon Gam, who was now in the fourth year of his age, had been rickety from the cradle, and as remarkably unpromiſing in appearance as Perry was agreeable in his perſon. As the deformity increaſed, the mother's fondneſs was augmented, and the virulence of her hate againſt the other ſon ſeemed to prevail in the ſame proportion.

Far from allowing Perry to enjoy the common privileges of a child, ſhe would not ſuffer him to approach his father's houſe, expreſſed uneaſineſs whenever his name happened to be mentioned, ſickened at his praiſe, and in all reſpects behaved like a moſt rancorous ſtepmother. Though ſhe no longer retained that ridiculous notion of his being an impoſtor, ſhe ſtill continued to abhor him, as if ſhe really believed him to be ſuch; and when any perſon deſired to know the cauſe of her ſurpriſing diſlike, ſhe always loſt her temper, and peeviſhly replied, that ſhe had reaſons of her own, which ſhe was not obliged to declare; nay, ſo much was ſhe infected by this vicious

partiality, that ſhe broke off all commerce with her ſiſter-in-law and the commodore, becauſe they favoured the poor child with their countenance and protection.

Her malice, however, was fruſtrated by the love and generoſity of Trunnion, who, having adopted him as his own ſon, equipped him accordingly, and carried him and his governor in his own coach to the place of deſtination, where they were ſettled on a very genteel footing, and every thing regulated according to their deſires.

Mrs. Trunnion behaved with great decency at the departure of her nephew, to whom, with a great many pious advices and injunctions to behave with ſubmiſſion and reverence towards his tutor, ſhe preſented a diamond ring of ſmall value, and a gold medal, as tokens of her affection and eſteem. As for the lieutenant, he accompanied them in the coach; and ſuch was the friendſhip he had contracted for Perry, that, when the commodore propoſed to return, after having accompliſhed the intent of his journey, Jack abſolutely refuſed to attend him, and ſignified his reſolution to ſtay where he was.

Trunnion was the more ſtartled at this declaration, as Hatchway was become ſo neceſſary to him in almoſt all the purpoſes of his life, that he foreſaw he ſhould not be able to exiſt without his company. Not a little affected with this conſideration, he turned his eye ruefully upon the lieutenant, ſaying, in a piteous tone, "What! leave me at laſt, Jack, after we have weathered ſo many hard gales together? Damn my limbs! I thought you had been more of an honeſt heart: I looked upon you as my foremaſt, and Tom Pipes as my mizen; now he is carried away; if ſo be as you go too, my ſtanding rigging being decayed, d'ye ſee, the firſt ſquall will bring me by the board. Damn ye, if in caſe I have given offence, can't you ſpeak above board, and I ſhall make you amends."

Jack being aſhamed to own the true ſituation of his thoughts, after ſome heſitation, anſwered with perplexity and incoherence, "No, damme! that an't the caſe neither; to be ſure you always uſed me in an officer-like manner, that I muſt own, to give the devil his due, as the ſaying is; but for all that, this here is the caſe, I have ſome thoughts of going to ſchool myſelf to learn your Latin lingo; for, as the ſaying is, *Better late mend than*

never. And I am informed as how one can get more for the money here than any where elſe."

In vain did Trunnion endeavour to convince him of the folly of going to ſchool at his years, by repreſenting that the boys would make game of him, and that he would become a laughing-ſtock to all the world; he perſiſted in his reſolution to ſtay, and the commodore was fain to have recourſe to the mediation of Pipes and Perry, who employed their influence with Jack, and at laſt prevailed upon him to return to the garriſon, after Trunnion had promiſed he ſhould be at liberty to viſit them once a month. This ſtipulation being ſettled, he and his friend took leave of the pupil, governor, and attendant, and next morning ſet out for their habitation, which they reached in ſafety that ſame night.

Such was Hatchway's reluctance to leave Peregrine, that he is ſaid, for the firſt time in his life, to have looked miſty at parting: Certain I am, that, on the road homewards, after a long pauſe of ſilence, which the commodore never dreamed of interrupting, he exclaimed all of a ſudden, "I'll be damn'd if the dog ha'n't given me ſome ſtuff to make me love him." Indeed there was ſomething congenial in the diſpoſition of theſe two friends, which never failed to manifeſt itſelf in the ſequel, howſoever different their education, circumſtances, and connections happened to be.

CHAPTER XVI.

Peregrine diſtinguiſhes himſelf among his ſchool-fellows, expoſes his tutor, and attracts the particular notice of the maſter.

THUS left to the proſecution of his ſtudies, Peregrine was in a little time a diſtinguiſhed character, not only for his acuteneſs of apprehenſion, but alſo for that miſchievous fertility of fancy, of which we have already given ſuch pregnant examples. But, as there was a great number of ſuch luminaries in this new ſphere to which he belonged, his talents were not ſo conſpicuous, while they ſhone in his ſingle capacity, as they afterwards appeared,

when they concentred and reflected the rays of the whole conſtellation.

At firſt he confined himſelf to piddling game, exerciſing his genius upon his own tutor, who attracted his attention, by endeavouring to ſeaſon his mind with certain political maxims, the fallacy of which he had diſcernment enough to perceive. Scarce a day paſſed in which he did not find means to render Mr. Jolter the object of ridicule; his violent prejudices, ludicrous vanity, awkward ſolemnity, and ignorance of mankind, afforded continual food for the raillery, petulance, and ſatire of his pupil, who never neglected an opportunity of laughing, and making others laugh at his expence.

Sometimes, in their parties, by mixing brandy in his wine, he decoyed this pedagogue into a debauch, during which his caution forſook him, and he expoſed himſelf to the cenſure of the company. Sometimes, when the converſation turned upon intricate ſubjects, he practiſed upon him the Socratic method of confutation, and, under pretence of being informed, by an artful train of puzzling queſtions, inſenſibly betrayed him into ſelf-contradiction.

All the remains of authority which he had hitherto preſerved over Peregrine ſoon vaniſhed; ſo that, for the future, no ſort of ceremony ſubſiſted between them, and all Mr. Jolter's precepts were conveyed in hints of friendly advice, which the other might either follow or neglect at his own pleaſure. No wonder then that Peregrine gave a looſe to his inclinations, and, by dint of genius, and an enterpriſing temper, made a figure among the younger claſs of heroes in the ſchool.

Before he had been a full year at Wincheſter, he had ſignalized himſelf in ſo many achievements in defiance to the laws and regulations of the place, that he was looked upon with admiration, and actually choſen *Dux*, or leader, by a large body of his cotemptoraries. It was not long before his fame reached the ears of the maſter, who ſent for Mr. Jolter, communicated to him the informations he had received, and deſired him to check the vivacity of his charge, and redouble his vigilance in time to come, elſe he ſhould be obliged to make a public example of his pupil for the benefit of the ſchool.

The governor, conſcious of his own unimportance, was not a little diſconcerted at this injunction, which it was not in his power to fulfil by any compulſive means. He therefore went home in a very penſive mood, and, after mature deliberation, reſolved to expoſtulate with Peregrine in the moſt familiar terms, and endeavour to diſſuade him from practices which might affect his character as well as intereſt. He accordingly frankly told him the ſubject of the maſter's diſcourſe, repreſented the diſgrace he might incur by neglecting this warning, and, putting him in mind of his own ſituation, hinted the conſequences of the commodore's diſpleaſure, in caſe he ſhould be brought to diſapprove of his conduct. Theſe inſinuations made the greater impreſſion, as they were delivered with many expreſſions of friendſhip and concern. The young gentleman was not ſo raw but that he could perceive the ſolidity of Mr. Jolter's advice, to which he promiſed to conform, becauſe his pride was intereſted in the affair; and he conſidered his own reformation as the only means of avoiding that infamy which (even in idea) he could not bear.

His governor, finding him ſo reaſonable, profited by theſe moments of reflection, and, in order to prevent a relapſe, propoſed that he ſhould engage in ſome delightful ſtudy, that would agreeably amuſe his imagination, and gradually detach him from thoſe connections which had involved him in ſo many troubleſome adventures. For this purpoſe, he, with many rapturous encomiums, recommended the mathematics, as yielding more rational and ſenſible pleaſures to a youthful fancy than any other ſubject of contemplation, and actually began to read Euclid with him that ſame afternoon.

Peregrine entered upon this branch of learning with all that warmth of application which boys commonly yield on the firſt change of ſtudy; but he had ſcarce advanced beyond the *Pons Aſinorum* when his ardour abated; the teſt of truth by demonſtration did not elevate him to thoſe tranſports of joy with which his preceptor had regaled his expectation; and before he arrived at the fortieth-and-ſeventh propoſition, he began to yawn dreadfully, make abundance of wry faces, and thought himſelf but indifferently paid for his attention, when he ſhared

the vaſt diſcovery of Pythagoras, and underſtood that the ſquare of the hypothenuſe was equal to the ſquares of the other two ſides of a right-angled triangle. He was aſhamed, however, to fail in his undertaking, and perſevered with great induſtry, until he had finiſhed the firſt four books, acquired plain trigonometry, with the method of algebraical calculation and made himſelf well acquainted with the principles of ſurveying. But no conſideration could prevail upon him to extend his inquiries farther in this ſcience, and he returned with double reliſh to his former avocations, like a ſtream, which, being dammed, accummulates more force, and, burſting over its mounds, ruſhes down with double impetuoſity.

Mr. Jolter ſaw with aſtoniſhment and chagrin, but could not reſiſt the torrent. His behaviour was now no other than a ſeries of licence and effrontery; prank ſucceeded prank, and outrage followed outrage, with ſurpriſing velocity. Complaints were every day preferred againſt him; in vain were admonitions beſtowed by the governor in private, and menaces diſcharged by the maſters in public; he diſregarded the firſt, deſpiſed the latter, diveſted himſelf of all manner of reſtraint, and proceeded in his career to ſuch a pitch of audacity, that a conſultation was held upon the ſubject, in which it was determined that this untoward ſpirit ſhould be humbled by a ſevere and ignominious flogging for the very next offence he ſhould commit. In the mean time, Mr. Jolter was deſired to write in the maſter's name to the commodore, requeſting him to remove Tom Pipes from the perſon of his nephew, the ſaid Pipes being a principal actor and abetter in all his malverſations; and to put a ſtop to the monthly viſitations of the mutilated lieutenant, who had never once failed to uſe his permiſſion, but came punctual to a day, always fraught with ſome new invention. Indeed, by this time, Mr. Hatchway was as well known, and much better beloved by every boy in the ſchool, than the maſter who inſtruſted him, and always received by a number of ſcholars, who uſed to attend Peregrine when he went forth to meet his friend, and conduct him to his lodging with public teſtimonies of joy and applauſe.

As for Tom Pipes, he was not ſo properly the attendant of Peregrine, as maſter of the revels to the whole

ſchool. He mingled in all their parties, and ſuperintended their diverſions, deciding between boy and boy, as if he acted by commiſſion under the great ſeal. He regulated their motions by his whiſtle, inſtructed the young boys in the games of huſtle-cap, leap-frog, and chuck-farthing; imparted to thoſe of a more advanced age, the ſciences of cribbage and all-fours, together with the method of ſtorming the caſtle, acting the comedy of Prince Arthur, and other pantomimes, as they are commonly exhibited at ſea; and inſtructed the ſeniors, who were diſtinguiſhed by the appellation of bloods, in cudgel-playing, dancing the St. Giles's hornpipe, drinking flip, and ſmoking tobacco. Theſe qualifications had rendered him ſo neceſſary and acceptable to the ſcholars, that, excluſive of Perry's concern in the affair, his diſmiſſion, in all probability, would have produced ſome dangerous convulſion in the community. Jolter, therefore, knowing his importance, informed his pupil of the directions he had received, and very candidly aſked how he ſhould demean himſelf in the execution; for he durſt not write to the commodore without this previous notice, fearing that the young gentleman, as ſoon as he ſhould get an inkling of the affair, would follow the example, and make his uncle acquainted with certain anecdotes, which it was the governor's intereſt to keep concealed. Peregrine was of opinion that he ſhould ſpare himſelf the trouble of conveying any complaints to the commodore; and if queſtioned by the maſter, aſſure him he had complied with his deſire; at the ſame time he promiſed faithfully to conduct himſelf with ſuch circumſpection for the future, that the maſters ſhould have no temptation to revive the inquiry. But the reſolution attending this extorted promiſe was too frail to laſt, and, in leſs than a fortnight, our young hero found himſelf entangled in an adventure, from which he was not extricated with his uſual good fortune.

CHAPTER XVII.

He is concerned in a dangerous adventure with a certain gardener; ſublimes his ideas, commences gallant, and becomes acquainted with Miſs Emily Gauntlet.

HE and ſome of his companions one day entered a garden in the ſuburbs, and having indulged their appetites, deſired to know what ſatisfaction they muſt make for the fruit they had pulled. The gardener demanded what (in their opinion) was an exorbitant price, and they, with many opprobrious terms, refuſed to pay it. The peaſant being ſurly and untractable, inſiſted upon his right; neither was he deficient or ſparing in the eloquence of vulgar abuſe. His gueſts attempted to retreat; a ſcuffle enſued, in which Peregrine loſt his cap; and the gardener, being in danger, from the number of his foes, called to his wife to let looſe the dog, who inſtantly flew to his maſter's aſſiſtance, and, after having tore the leg of one, and the ſhoulder of another, put the whole body of the ſcholars to flight. Enraged at the indignity which had been offered them, they ſolicited a reinforement of their friends, and, with Tom Pipes at their head, marched back to the field of battle. Their adverſary ſeeing them approach, called his apprentice, who worked at the other end of the ground, to his aſſiſtance, armed him with a mattock, while he himſelf wielded an hoe, bolted his door on the inſide, and, flanked with his man and maſtiff, waited the attack without flinching. He had not remained three minutes in this poſture of defence, when Pipes, who acted as the enemy's forlorn hope, advanced to the gate, with great intrepidity, and clapping his foot to the door, which was none of the ſtouteſt, with the execution and diſpatch of a petard, ſplit it into a thouſand pieces. This ſudden execution had an immediate effect upon the 'prentice, who retreated with great precipitation, and eſcaped at a poſtern. But the maſter placed himſelf like another Hercules in the breach; and when Pipes, brandiſhing his cudgel, ſtepped forward to engage him, levelled his weapon with ſuch force and dexterity at his head, that, had the ſkull been made of penetrable ſtuff, the iron edge muſt have cleft his pate in twain. Caſemated as he

was, the inſtrument cut ſheer even to the bone, on which it ſtruck with ſuch amazing violence, that ſparks of real fire were produced by the colliſion. And let not the incredulous reader pretend to doubt the truth of this phænomenon, until he ſhall have firſt peruſed the ingenious Peter Kolben's Natural Hiſtory of the Cape of Good Hope, where the inhabitants commonly uſe to ſtrike fire with the ſhin-bones of lions, which have been killed in that part of Africa.

Pipes, though a little diſconcerted, far from being diſabled by the blow, in a trice retorted the compliment with his truncheon; which, had not his antagoniſt expeditiouſly flipped his head aſide, would have laid him breathleſs acroſs his own threſhold; but, happily for him, he received the ſalutation upon his right ſhoulder, which craſhed beneath the ſtroke, and the hoe dropped inſtantly from his tingling hand. Tom perceiving, and being unwilling to forego the advantage he had gained, darted his head into the boſom of this ſon of earth, and overtured him on the plain, being himſelf that inſtant aſſaulted by the maſtiff, who faſtened upon the outſide of his thigh. Feeling himſelf incommoded by this aſſailant in his rear, he quitted the proſtrate gardener to the reſentment of his aſſociates, who poured upon him in ſhoals, and, turning about, laid hold with both his hands of this ferocious animal's throat, which he ſqueezed with ſuch incredible force and perſeverence, that the creature quitted his hold, his tongue lolled out of his jaws, the blood ſtarted from his eyes, and he ſwung a lifeleſs trunk between the hands of his vanquiſher.

It was well for his maſter that he did not longer exiſt! for by this time he was overwhelmeed by ſuch a multitude of foes, that his whole body ſcarce afforded points of contact to all the fiſts that drummed upon it, conſequently, to uſe a vulgar phraſe, his wind was almoſt knocked out, before Pipes had leiſure to interpoſe in his behalf, and perſuade his offenders to deſiſt, by repreſenting that the wife had gone to alarm the neighbourhood, and that in all probability they would be intercepted in their return. They accordingly liſtened to his remonſtrances, and marched homewards in triumph, leaving the gardener in the embraces of his mother earth, from

which he had not power to move when he was found by his diſconſolate helpmate and ſome friends, whom ſhe had aſſembled for his aſſiſtance. Among theſe was a blackſmith and farrier, who took cognizance of his carcaſe, every limb of which having examined, he declared there was no bone broke, and, taking out his fleam, blooded him plentifully as he lay. He was then conveyed to his bed, from which he was not able to ſtir during a whole month. His family coming upon the pariſh, a formal complaint was made to the maſter of the ſchool, and Peregrine repreſented as the ringleader of thoſe who committed this barbarous aſſault. An inquiry was immediately ſet on foot, and the articles of impeachment being fully proved, our hero was ſentenced to be ſeverely chaſtiſed in the face of the whole ſchool. This was a diſgrace, the thoughts of which his proud heart could not brook. He reſolved to make his elopement rather than undergo the puniſhment to which he was doomed; and having ſignified his ſentiments to his confederates, they promiſed, one and all, to ſtand by him, and either ſcreen him from the chaſtiſement, or ſhare his fate.

Confiding in this friendly proteſtation, he appeared unconcerned on the day that was appointed for his puniſhment; and, when he was called to his deſtiny, advanced towards the ſcene, attended by the greateſt part of the ſcholars, who intimated their determination to the maſter, and propoſed that Peregrine ſhould be forgiven. The ſuperior behaved with that dignity of demeanour which became his place, repreſented the folly and preſumption of their demand, reprehended them for their audacious proceeding, and ordered every boy to his reſpective ſtation. They obeyed his command, and our unfortunate hero was publicly horſed, *in terrorem* of all whom it might concern.

This diſgrace had a very ſenſible effect upon the mind of Peregrine, who having by this time paſſed the fourteenth year of his age, began to adopt the pride and ſentiments of a man. Thus diſhonourably ſtigmatized, he was aſhamed to appear in public as uſual; he was incenſed againſt his companions for their infidelity and irreſolution, and plunged into a profound reverie that laſted ſeveral weeks, during which he ſhook off his boyiſh

connections, and fixed his view upon objects which he thought more worthy of his attention.

In the courſe of his gymnaſtic exerciſes, at which he was very expert, he contracted intimacies with ſeveral youths who were greatly his ſuperiors in point of age, and who, pleaſed with his aſpiring genius and addreſs, introduced him into parties of gallantry which ſtrongly captivated his inclination. He was by nature particularly adapted for ſucceeding in adventures of this kind; over and above a moſt engaging perſon, that improved with his years, he poſſeſſed a dignified aſſurance, an agreeable ferocity which enhanced the conqueſt of the fair who had the good fortune to enſlave him, unlimited generoſity, and a fund of humour which never failed to pleaſe. Nor was he deficient in the more ſolid accompliſhments of youth: he had profited in his ſtudies beyond expectation, and beſides that ſenſibility of diſcernment which is the foundation of taſte, and in conſequence of which, he diſtinguiſhed and enjoyed the beauties of the claſſics, he had already given ſeveral ſpecimens of a very promiſing poetic talent.

With this complexion and theſe qualifications, no wonder that our hero attracted the notice and affections of the young Delias in town, whoſe hearts had juſt begun to flutter for they knew not what. Inquiries were made concerning his condition; and no ſooner were his expectations known, than he was invited and careſſed by all the parents, while their daughters vied with each other in treating him with particular complacency. He inſpired love and emulation wherever he appeared; envy and jealous rage followed of courſe; ſo that he became a very deſirable, though a very dangerous acquaintance. His moderation was not equal to his ſucceſs: his vanity took the lead of his paſſions, diſſipating his attention, which might otherwiſe have fixed him to one object; and he was poſſeſſed with the rage of increaſing the number of his conqueſts. With this view he frequented public walks, concerts, and aſſemblies, became remarkably rich and faſhionable in his clothes, gave entertainments to the ladies, and was in the utmoſt hazard of turning out a moſt egregious coxcomb.

While his character thus wavered between the ridicule of ſome, and the regard of others, an accident happen-

ed, which, by contracting his view to one object, detached him from thoſe vain purſuits that would in time have plunged him into an abyſs of folly and contempt. Being one evening at the ball which is always given to the ladies at the time of the races, the perſon who acted as maſter of the ceremonies, knowing how fond Mr. Pickle was of every opportunity to diſplay himſelf, came up and told him that there was a fine young creature at the other end of the room, who ſeemed to have a great inclination to dance a minuet, but wanted a partner, the gentleman who attended her being in boots.

Peregrine's vanity being arouſed at this intimation, he went up to reconnoitre the young lady, and was ſtruck with admiration at her beauty. She ſeemed to be of his own age, was tall, and, though ſlender, exquiſitely ſhaped; her hair was auburn, and in ſuch plenty, that the barbarity of dreſs had not been able to prevent it from ſhading both ſides of her forehead, which was high and poliſhed; the contour of her face was oval, her noſe very little raiſed in the aquiline form, that contributed to the ſpirit and dignity of her aſpect; her mouth was ſmall, her lips plump, juicy, and delicious, her teeth regular and white as driven ſnow, her complexion incredibly delicate and glowing with health, and her full blue eyes beamed forth vivacity and love. Her mien was at the ſame time commanding and engaging, her addreſs perfectly genteel, and her whole appearance ſo captivating, that our young Adonis looked, and was overcome.

He no ſooner recollected himſelf from his aſtoniſhment, than he advanced to her with a graceful air of reſpect, and begged ſhe would do him the honour to walk a minuet with him. She ſeemed particularly pleaſed with his application, and very frankly complied with his requeſt. The pair was too remarkable to eſcape the particular notice in the company; Mr. Pickle was well known by almoſt every body in the room; but his partner was altogether a new face, and of conſequence underwent the criticiſm of all the ladies in the aſſembly; one whiſpered, "She has a good complexion, but don't you think ſhe is a little awry?" a ſecond pitied her for her maſculine noſe; a third obſerved, that ſhe was awkward for want of ſeeing company; a fourth diſtinguiſhed ſomething very bold in her coun-

tenance; and, in ſhort, there was not a beauty in her whole compoſition which the glaſs of envy did not pervert into a blemiſh.

The men, however, looked upon her with different eyes: among them her appearance produced an univerſal murmur of applauſe; they encircled the ſpace on which ſhe danced, and were enchanted by her graceful motion. While they launched out in the praiſe of her, they expreſſed their diſpleaſure at the good fortune of her partner, whom they damned for a little finical coxcomb, that was too much engroſſed by the contemplation of his own perſon, to diſcern or deſerve the favour of his fate. He did not hear, therefore could not repine at theſe invectives; but while they imagined he indulged his vanity, a much more generous paſſion had taken poſſeſſion of his heart.

Inſtead of that petulance of gaiety for which he had been diſtinguiſhed in his public appearance, he now gave manifeſt ſigns of confuſion and concern; he danced with an anxiety which impeded his performance, and bluſhed to the eyes at every falſe ſtep he made. Though this extraordinary agitation was overlooked by the men, it could not eſcape the obſervation of the ladies, who perceived it with equal ſurpriſe and reſentment; and when Peregrine led this fair unknown to her ſeat, expreſſed their pique in an affected titter, which broke from every mouth at the ſame inſtant, as if all of them had been informed by the ſame ſpirit.

Peregrine was nettled at this unmannerly mark of diſapprobation, and, in order to increaſe their chagrin, endeavoured to enter into particular converſation with their fair rival. The young lady herſelf, who neither wanted penetration, nor the conſciouſneſs of her own accompliſhments, reſented their behaviour, though ſhe triumphed at the cauſe of it, and gave her partner all the encouragement he could deſire. Her mother, who was preſent, thanked him for his civility, in taking ſuch notice of a ſtranger, and he received a compliment of the ſame nature from the young gentlemen in boots, who was her own brother.

If he was charmed with her appearance, he was quite raviſhed with her diſcourſe, which was ſenſible, ſpirited, and gay. Her frank and ſprightly demeanour excit-

ed his own confidence and good humour; and he deſcribed to her the characters of thoſe females who had honoured them with ſuch a ſpiteful mark of diſtinction, in terms ſo replete with humourous ſatire, that ſhe ſeemed to liſten with particular complacency of attention, and diſtinguiſhed every nymph thus ridiculed with ſuch a ſignificant glance, as overwhelmed her with chagrin and mortification. In ſhort, they ſeemed to reliſh each other's converſation, during which our young Damon acquitted himſelf with great ſkill in all the duties of gallantry; he laid hold of proper opportunities to expreſs his admiration of her charms, had recourſe to the ſilent rhetoric of tender looks, breathed divers inſidious ſighs, and attached himſelf wholly to her during the remaining part of the entertainment.

When the company broke up, he attended her to her lodgings, and took leave of her with a ſqueeze of the hand, after having obtained permiſſion to viſit her next morning, and been informed by the mother that her name was Miſs Emilia Gauntlet.

All night long he cloſed not an eye, but amuſed himſelf with plans of pleaſure, which his imagination ſuggeſted, in conſequence of this new acquaintance. He roſe with the lark, adjuſted his hair into an agreeable negligence of curl, and, dreſſing himſelf in a genteel gray frock, trimmed with ſilver binding, waited with the utmoſt impatience for the hour of ten, which no ſooner ſtruck than he hied him to the place of appointment, and, inquiring for Miſs Gauntlet, was ſhown into a parlour. Here he had not waited above ten minutes, when Emilia entered in a moſt enchanting undreſs, with all the graces of nature playing about her perſon, and in a moment rivetted the chains of his ſlavery beyond the power of accident to unbind.

Her mother being ſtill a-bed, and her brother gone to give orders about the chaiſe, in which they propoſed to return that ſame day to their own habitation, he enjoyed her company *tete a tete* a whole hour, during which he declared his love in the moſt paſſionate terms, and begged that he might be admitted into the number of thoſe admirers whom ſhe permitted to viſit and adore her.

She affected to look upon his vows and proteſta-

the ordinary effects of gallantry, and very obligingly aſſured him, that, were ſhe to live in that place, ſhe ſhould be glad to ſee him often; but, as the ſpot on which ſhe reſided was at a conſiderable diſtance, ſhe could not expect he would go ſo far upon ſuch a trifling occaſion, as to take the trouble of providing himſelf with her mamma's permiſſion.

To this favourable hint he anſwered with all the eagerneſs of the moſt fervid paſſion, that he had uttered nothing but the genuine dictates of his heart; that he deſired nothing ſo much as an opportunity of evincing the ſincerity of his profeſſions; and that, though ſhe lived at the extremity of the kingdom, he would find means to lay himſelf at her feet, provided he could viſit her with her mother's conſent, which he aſſured her he would not fail to ſolicit.

She then gave him to underſtand that her habitation was about ſixteen miles from Wincheſter, in a village which ſhe named, and where (as he could eaſily collect from her diſcourſe) he would be no unwelcome gueſt.

In the midſt of this communication they were joined by Mrs. Gauntlet, who received him with great courteſy, thanking him again for his politeneſs to Emy at the ball, and anticipated his intentions, by ſaying that ſhe ſhould be very glad to ſee him at her houſe, if ever his occaſions ſhould call him that way.

CHAPTER XVIII.

He inquires into the ſituation of this young lady, with whom he is enamoured; elopes from ſchool; is found by the lieutenant, conveyed to Wincheſter, and ſends a letter with a copy of verſes to his miſtreſs.

He was tranſported with pleaſure at this invitation, which he aſſured her he ſhould not neglect; and, after a little more converſation on general topics, took his leave of the charming Emilia, and her prudent mamma, who had perceived the firſt emotions of Mr. Pickle's paſſion for her daughter, and been at ſome pa[illegible] inquire about his family and fortune.

Neither was Peregrine leſs inquiſitive about the ſituation and pedigree of his new miſtreſs, who, he learned, was the only daughter of a field-officer, who died before he had it in his power to make ſuitable proviſion for his children; that the widow lived in a frugal, though decent manner, on her penſion, aſſiſted by the bounty of her relations; that the ſon carried arms as a volunteer in the company which his father had commanded; and that Emilia had been educated in London, at the expence of a rich uncle, who was ſeized with the whim of marrying at the age of fifty-five; in conſequence of which, his niece had returned to her mother, without any viſible dependence, except on her own conduct and qualifications.

This account, though it could not diminiſh his affection, nevertheleſs alarmed his pride; for his warm imagination had exaggerated all his own proſpects; and he began to fear that his paſſion for Emilia might be thought to derogate from the dignity of his ſituation. The ſtruggle between his intereſt and love produced a perplexity which had an evident effect upon his behaviour; he became penſive, ſolitary, and peeviſh, avoided all public diverſions, and grew ſo remarkably negligent in his dreſs, that he was ſcarce diſtinguiſhable by his own acquaintance. This contention of thoughts continued ſeveral weeks, at the end of which the charms of Emilia triumphed over every other conſideration. Having received a ſupply of money from the commodore, who acted towards him with great generoſity, he ordered Pipes to put up ſome linen, and other neceſſaries, in a ſort of knapſack which he could conveniently carry, and, thus attended, ſet out early one morning on foot for the village where his charmer lived, at which he arrived before two o'clock in the afternoon; having choſen this method of travelling, that his route might not be ſo eaſily diſcovered, as it muſt have been, had he hired horſes, or taken a place in the ſtage coach.

The firſt thing he did was to ſecure a convenient lodging at the inn where he dined; then he ſhifted himſelf, and, according to the direction he had received, went to the houſe of Mrs. Gauntlet in a tranſport of joyous expectation. As he approached the gate, his agitation increaſed, he knocked with impatience and concern, the door opened, and he had actually aſked if Mrs. Gauntlet

was at home, before he perceived that the portrefs was no other than his dear Emilia. She was not without emotion at the unexpected ſight of her lover, who inſtantly recogniſing his charmer, obeyed the irreſiſtible impulſe of his love, and caught the fair creature in his arms. Nor did ſhe ſeem offended at this forwardneſs of behaviour, which might have diſpleaſed another of a leſs open diſpoſition, or leſs uſed to the freedom of a ſenſible education; but her natural frankneſs had been encouraged and improved by the eaſy and familiar intercourſe in which ſhe had been bred; and therefore, inſtead of reprimanding him with a ſeverity of look, ſhe with great good humour rallied him upon his aſſurance, which, ſhe obſerved, was undoubtedly the effect of his own conſcious merit, and conducted him into a parlour, where he found her mother, who in very polite terms expreſſed her ſatisfaction at ſeeing him within her houſe.

After tea, Miſs Emy propoſed an evening walk, which they enjoyed through a variety of little copſes and lawns, watered by a moſt romantic ſtream, that quite enchanted the imagination of Peregrine.

It was late before they returned from this agreeable excurſion; and when our lover wiſhed the ladies good night, Mrs. Gauntlet inſiſted upon his ſtaying to ſupper, and treated him with particular demonſtrations of regard and affection. As her economy was not encumbered with an unneceſſary number of domeſtics, her own preſence was often required in different parts of the houſe; ſo that the young gentleman was ſupplied with frequent opportunities of promoting his ſuit, by all the tender oaths and inſinuations that his paſſion could ſuggeſt. He proteſted her idea had taken ſuch entire poſſeſſion of his heart, that, finding himſelf unable to ſupport her abſence one day longer, he had quitted his ſtudies, and left his governor by ſtealth, that he might viſit the object of his adoration, and be bleſſed in her company for a few days without interruption.

She liſtened to his addreſſes with ſuch affability as denoted approbation and delight, and gently chid him as a thoughtleſs truant, but carefully avoided the confeſſion of a mutual flame; becauſe ſhe diſcerned, in the midſt of all his tenderneſs, a levity of pride which ſhe durſt not

venture to truſt with ſuch a declaration. Perhaps ſhe was confirmed in this caution by her mother, who very wiſely, in her civilities to him, maintained a ſort of ceremonious diſtance, which ſhe thought not only requiſite for the honour and intereſt of her family, but likewiſe for her own exculpation, ſhould ſhe ever be taxed with having encouraged or abetted him in the imprudent ſallies of his youth: Yet, notwithſtanding this affected reſerve, he was treated with ſuch diſtinction by both, that he was raviſhed with his ſituation, and became more and more enamoured every day.

While he remained under the influence of this ſweet intoxication, his abſence produced great diſturbance at Wincheſter. Mr. Jolter was grievouſly afflicted at his abrupt departure, which alarmed him the more, as it happened after a long fit of melancholy which he had perceived in his pupil. He communicated his apprehenſions to the maſter of the ſchool, who adviſed him to appriſe the commodore of his nephew's diſappearance, and in the mean time inquire at all the inns in town, whether he had hired horſes, or any ſort of carriage, for his conveyance, or was met with on the road by any perſon who could give an account of the direction in which he travelled.

This ſcrutiny, though performed with great diligence and minuteneſs, was altogether ineffectual; they could obtain no intelligence of the runaway. Mr. Trunnion was well nigh diſtracted at the news of his flight; he raved with great fury at the imprudence of Peregrine, whom, in his firſt tranſports, he damned as an ungrateful deſerter; then he curſed Hatchway and Pipes, who he ſwore had foundered the lad by their pernicious counſels; and, laſtly, transferred his execrations upon Jolter, becauſe he had not kept a better look-out: finally, he made an apoſtrophe to that ſon of a bitch the gout, which for the preſent diſabled him from ſearching for his nephew in perſon. That he might not, however, neglect any means in his power, he immediately diſpatched expreſſes to all the ſea-port towns on that coaſt, that he might be prevented from leaving the kingdom; and the lieutenant, at his own deſire, was ſent acroſs the country, in queſt of this young fugitive.

Four days had he unſucceſsfully carried on his inquiries

with great accuracy, when, reſolving to return by Winchester, where he hoped to meet with ſome hints of intelligence, by which he might profit in his future ſearch, he ſtruck off the common road to take the benefit of a nearer cut, and finding himſelf benighted near a village, took up his lodgings at the firſt inn to which his horſe directed him. Having beſpoke ſomething for ſupper, and retired to his chamber, where he amuſed himſelf with a pipe, he heard a confuſed noiſe of ruſtic jollity, which being all of a ſudden interrupted, after a ſhort pauſe his ear was ſaluted with the voice of Pipes, who, at the ſolicitation of the company, began to entertain them with a ſong.

Hatchway inſtantly recognized the well known ſound, in which indeed he could not poſſibly be miſtaken, as nothing in nature bore the leaſt reſemblance to it; he threw his pipe into the chimney, and, ſnatching up one of his piſtols, ran immediately to the apartment from whence the voice iſſued; he no ſooner entered, than diſtinguiſhing his old ſhip-mate in a crowd of country peaſants, he in a moment ſprung upon him, and, clapping his piſtol to his breaſt, exclaimed, "Damn you, Pipes, you are a dead man, if you don't immediately produce young maſter."

This menacing application had a much greater effect upon the company than upon Tom, who looking at the lieutenant with great tranquillity, replied, "Why, ſo I can, Mr. Hatchway." "What! ſafe and ſound?" cried the other. "As a roach," anſwered Pipes, ſo much to the ſatisfaction of his friend Jack, that he ſhook him by the hand, and deſired him to proceed with his ſong. This being performed, and the reckoning diſcharged, the two friends adjourned to the other room, where the lieutenant was informed of the manner in which the young gentleman had made his elopement from college, as well as of the other particulars of his preſent ſituation, as far as they had fallen within the ſphere of the relator's comprehenſion.

While they ſat thus conferring together, Peregrine, having taken leave of his miſtreſs for the night, came home, and was not a little ſurpriſed when Hatchway, entering his chamber in his ſea attitude, thruſt out his hand

by way of ſalutation. His old pupil received him, as uſual, with great cordiality, and expreſſed his aſtoniſhment at meeting him in that place; but when he underſtood the cauſe and intention of his arrival, he ſtarted with concern, and, his viſage glowing with indignation, told him he was old enough to be judge of his own conduct, and, when he ſhould ſee it convenient, would return of himſelf; but thoſe who thought he was to be compelled to his duty would find themſelves egregiouſly miſtaken.

The lieutenant aſſured him, that, for his own part, he had no intention to offer him the leaſt violence; but at the ſame time he repreſented to him the danger of inceníing the commodore, who was already almoſt diſtracted on account of his abſence; and, in ſhort, conveyed his arguments, which were equally obvious and valid, in ſuch expreſſions of friendſhip and reſpect, that Peregrine yielded to his remonſtrances, and promiſed to accompany him next day to Wincheſter.

Hatchway, overjoyed at the ſucceſs of his negotiation, went immediately to the hoſtler, and beſpoke a poſt-chaiſe for Mr. Pickle and his man, with whom he afterwards indulged himſelf in a double cann of rumbo, and, when the night was pretty far advanced, left the lover to his repoſe, or rather to the thorns of his own meditation; for he ſlept not one moment, being inceſſantly tortured with the proſpect of parting from his divine Emilia, who had now acquired the moſt abſolute empire over his ſoul. One minute he propoſed to depart early in the morning, without ſeeing this enchantreſs, in whoſe bewitching preſence he durſt not truſt his own reſolution. Then the thoughts of leaving her in ſuch an abrupt and diſreſpectful manner interpoſed in favour of his love and honour. This war of ſentiments kept him all night upon the rack, and it was time to riſe before he had determined to viſit his charmer, and candidly impart the motives that induced him to leave her.

He accordingly repaired to her mother's houſe with a heavy heart, being attended to the gate by Hatchway, who did not chooſe to leave him alone; and, being admitted, found Emilia juſt riſen, and, in his opinion, more beautiful than ever.

Alarmed at his early viſit, and the gloom that over-

ſpread his countenance, ſhe ſtood in ſilent expectation of hearing ſome melancholy tidings; and it was not till after a conſiderable pauſe that he collected reſolution enough to tell her he was come to take his leave. Though ſhe ſtrove to conceal her ſorrow, nature was not to be ſuppreſſed; every feature of her countenance ſaddened in a moment, and it was not without the utmoſt difficulty that ſhe kept her lovely eyes from overflowing. He ſaw the ſituation of her thoughts, and, in order to alleviate her concern, aſſured her he ſhould find means to ſee her again in a very few weeks; meanwhile, he communicated his reaſons for departing, in which ſhe readily acquieſced; and having mutually conſoled each other, their tranſports of grief ſubſided, and before Mrs. Gauntlet came down ſtairs they were in a condition to behave with great decency and reſignation.

This good lady expreſſed her concern when ſhe learned his reſolution, ſaying, ſhe hoped his occaſions and inclination would permit him to favour them with his agreeable company another time.

The lieutenant, who began to be uneaſy at Peregrine's ſtay, knocked at the door, and being introduced by his friend, had the honour of breakfaſting with the ladies; on which occaſion his heart received ſuch a rude ſhock from the charms of Emilia, that he afterwards made a merit with his friend of having conſtrained himſelf ſo far as to forbear commencing his profeſſed rival.

At length they bade adieu to their kind entertainers, and in leſs than an hour ſetting out from the inn, arrived about two o'clock in Wincheſter, where Mr. Jolter was overwhelmed with joy at their appearance.

The nature of this adventure being unknown to all except thoſe who could be depended upon, every body who inquired about the cauſe of Peregrine's abſence, was told that he had been with a relation in the country, and the maſter condeſcended to overlook his indiſcretion; ſo that Hatchway, ſeeing every thing ſettled to the ſatisfaction of his friend, returned to the garriſon, and gave the commodore an account of his expedition.

The old gentleman was very much ſtartled when he heard there was a lady in the caſe, and very emphatically obſerved, that a man had better be ſucked into the gulf

of Florida, than once get into the indraught of a woman; becauſe, in one caſe, he may with good pilotage bring out his veſſel ſafe between the Bahamas and the Indian ſhore; but in the other there is no outlet at all, and it is in vain to ſtrive againſt the current; ſo that of courſe he muſt be embayed, and run chuck upon a lee-ſhore. He reſolved, therefore, to lay the ſtate of the caſe before Mr. Gamaliel Pickle, and concert ſuch meaſures with him as ſhould be thought likelieſt to detach his ſon from the purſuit of an idle amour, which could not fail of interfering in a dangerous manner with the plan of his education.

In the mean time, Perry's ideas were totally engroſſed by his amiable miſtreſs, who, whether he ſlept or waked, was ſtill preſent in his imagination, which produced the following ſtanzas in her praiſe.

I.

Adieu, ye ſtreams that ſmoothly flow,
Ye vernal airs that ſoftly blow,
Ye plains by blooming ſpring array'd,
Ye birds that warble through the ſhade.

II.

Unhurt from you my ſoul could fly,
Nor drop one tear, nor heave one ſigh;
But forc'd from Celia's charms to part,
All joy deſerts my drooping heart.

III.

O! fairer than the roſy morn,
When flowers the dewy fields adorn;
Unſullied as the genial ray,
That warms the balmy breeze of May.

IV.

Thy charms divinely bright appear,
And add new ſplendour to the year;
Improve the day with freſh delight,
And gild with joy the dreary night!

This juvenile production was encloſed in a very tender billet to Emilia, and committed to the charge of Pipes, who was ordered to ſet out for Mrs. Gauntlet's habitation with a preſent of veniſon, and a compliment to the ladies; and directed to take ſome opportunity of delivering the letter to Miſs, without the knowledge of her mamma.

CHAPTER XIX.

His meſſenger meets with a misfortune, to which he applies a very extraordinary expedient, that is attended with ſtrange conſequences.

As a ſtage-coach paſſed within two miles of the village where ſhe lived, Tom bargained with the driver for a ſeat on the box, and accordingly departed on this meſſage, though he was indifferently qualified for commiſſions of ſuch a nature: Having received particular injunctions about the letter, he reſolved to make that the chief object of his care, and very ſagaciouſly conveyed it between his ſtocking and the ſole of his foot, where he thought it would be perfectly ſecure from all injury and accident. Here it remained until he arrived at the inn where he had formerly lodged, when, after having refreſhed himſelf with a draught of beer, he pulled off his ſtocking, and found the poor billet ſullied with duſt, and torn in a thouſand tatters by the motion of his foot in walking the laſt two miles of his journey. Thunderſtruck at this phenomenon, he uttered a long and loud *whew!* which was ſucceeded by an exclamation of "Damn my old ſhoes! a bite by God!" then he reſted his elbows on the table, and his forehead upon his two fiſts, and in that attitude deliberated with himſelf upon the means of remedying this misfortune.

As he was not diſtracted by a vaſt number of ideas, he ſoon concluded, that his beſt expedient would be to employ the clerk of the pariſh, who he knew was a great ſcholar, to write another epiſtle according to the directions he ſhould give him; and never dreaming that the mangled original would in the leaſt facilitate this ſcheme, he very wiſely committed it to the flames, that it might never riſe up in judgment againſt him.

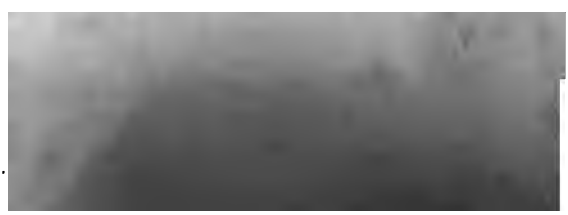
Having taken this wiſe ſtep, he went in queſt of the ſcribe, to whom he communicated his buſineſs, and promiſed a full pot by way of gratification. The clerk, who was alſo ſchoolmaſter, proud of an opportunity to diſtinguiſh his talents, readily undertook the taſk; and repairing with his employer to the inn, in leſs than a quarter of an hour produced a morſel of eloquence ſo much to

the ſatisfaction of Pipes, that he ſqueezed his hand by way of acknowledgment, and doubled his allowance of beer. This being diſcuſſed, our courier betook himſelf to the houſe of Mrs. Gauntlet, with the haunch of veniſon and this ſuccedaneous letter, and delivered his meſſage to the mother, who received it with great reſpect, and many kind inquiries about the health and welfare of his maſter, attempting to tip the meſſenger a crown, which he abſolutely refuſed to accept, in conſequence of Mr. Pickle's repeated caution. While the old gentlewoman turned to a ſervant, in order to give directions about the diſpoſal of the preſent, Pipes looked upon this as a favourable occaſion to tranſact his buſineſs with Emilia, and therefore ſhutting one eye, with a jirk of his thumb towards his left ſhoulder, and a moſt ſignificant twiſt of his countenance, he beckoned the young lady into another room, as if he had been fraught with ſomething of conſequence, which he wanted to impart. She underſtood the hint, howſoever ſtrangely communicated, and, by ſtepping to one ſide of the room, gave him an opportunity of ſlipping the epiſtle into her hand, which he gently ſqueezed at the ſame time in token of regard; then throwing a ſide glance at the mother, whoſe back was turned, clapped his finger on the ſide of his noſe, thereby recommending ſecrecy and diſcretion.

Emilia conveying the letter into her boſom, could not help ſmiling at Tom's politeneſs and dexterity; but leſt her mamma ſhould detect him in the execution of his pantomime, ſhe broke off this intercourſe of ſigns, by aſking aloud when he propoſed to ſet out on his return to Wincheſter. When he anſwered, "To-morrow morning," Mrs. Gauntlet recommended him to the hoſpitality of her own footman, deſiring him to make much of Mr. Pipes below, where he was kept to ſupper, and very cordially entertained. Our young heroine, impatient to read her lover's billet, which made her heart throb with rapturous expectation, retired to her chamber as ſoon as poſſible, with a view of peruſing the contents, which were theſe:—

Divine empreſs of my ſoul!

If the refulgent flames of your beauty had not evaporated the particles of my tranſported brain, and ſcorched



my intellects into a cinder of ſtolidity, perhaps the reſplendency of my paſſion might ſhine illuſtrious through the ſable curtain of my ink, and in ſublimity tranſcend the galaxy itſelf, though wafted on the pinions of a gray gooſe quill! But ah! celeſtial enchantreſs! the necromancy of thy tyrannical charms hath fettered my faculties with adamantine chains, which, unleſs thy compaſſion ſhall melt, I muſt eternally remain in the Tartarean gulf of diſmal deſpair. Vouchſafe, therefore, O thou brighteſt luminary of this terreſtrial ſphere! to warm as well as ſhine; and let the genial rays of thy benevolence melt the icy emanations of thy diſdain, which hath frozen up the ſpirits of angelic pre-eminence! thy moſt egregious admirer and ſuperlative ſlave,

PEREGRINE PICKLE.

Never was aſtoniſhment more perplexing than that of Emilia, when ſhe read this curious compoſition, which ſhe repeated verbatim three times before ſhe would credit the evidence of her own ſenſes. She began to fear in good earneſt that love had produced a diſorder in her lover's underſtanding; but after a thouſand conjectures, by which ſhe attempted to account for this extraordinary fuſtian of ſtyle, ſhe concluded that it was the effect of mere levity, calculated to ridicule the paſſion he had formerly profeſſed. Irritated by this ſuppoſition, ſhe reſolved to baulk his triumph with affected indifference, and in the mean time endeavour to expel him from that place which he poſſeſſed within her heart: And indeed, ſuch a victory over her inclinations might have been obtained without great difficulty; for ſhe enjoyed an eaſineſs of temper that could accommodate itſelf to the emergencies of her fate; and her vivacity, by amuſing her imagination, preſerved her from the keener ſenſations of ſorrow. Thus determined and diſpoſed, ſhe did not ſend any ſort of anſwer, or the leaſt token of remembrance by Pipes, who was ſuffered to depart with a general compliment from the mother, and arrived at Wincheſter the next day.

Peregrine's eyes ſparkled when he ſaw his meſſenger come in, and he ſtretched out his hand in full confidence of receiving ſome particular mark of his Emilia's affec-

tion; but how was he confounded, when he found his hope ſo cruelly diſappointed! In an inſtant his countenance fell. He ſtood for ſome time ſilent and abaſhed, then thrice repeated the interrogation of "What! not one word from Emilia?" And dubious of his courier's diſcretion, inquired minutely into all the particulars of his reception. He aſked, if he had ſeen the young lady; if ſhe was in good health; if he had found an opportunity of delivering his letter, and how ſhe looked, when he put it into her hand? Pipes anſwered, That he had never ſeen her in better health or higher ſpirits; that he had managed matters ſo as not only to preſent the billet unperceived, but alſo to aſk her commands in private before he took his leave, when ſhe told him that the letter required no reply. This laſt circumſtance he conſidered as a manifeſt mark of diſreſpect, and gnawed his lips with reſentment. Upon further reflection, however, he ſuppoſed that ſhe could not conveniently write by the meſſenger, and would undoubtedly favour him by the poſt. This conſideration conſoled him for the preſent, and he waited impatiently for the fruits of his hope; but after he had ſeen eight days elapſed without reaping the ſatisfaction with which he had flattered himſelf, his temper forſook him, he raved againſt the whole ſex, and was ſeized with a fit of ſullen chagrin; but his pride in a little time came to his aſſiſtance, and reſcued him from the horrors of the melancholy fiend. He reſolved to retort her own neglect upon his ungrateful miſtreſs; his countenance gradually reſumed its former ſerenity; and though by this time he was pretty well cured of his foppery, he appeared again at public diverſions with an air of gaiety and unconcern, that Emilia might have a chance of hearing how much, in all likelihood, he diſregarded her diſdain.

There are never wanting certain officious perſons, who take pleaſure in promoting intelligence of this ſort. His behaviour ſoon reached the ears of Miſs Gauntlet, and confirmed her in the opinion ſhe had conceived from his letter; ſo that ſhe fortified herſelf in her former ſentiments, and bore his indifference with great philoſophy. Thus a correſpondence which had commenced with all the tenderneſs and ſincerity of love, and every promiſe of duration, was interrupted in its infancy by a miſunder-

ſtanding occaſioned by the ſimplicity of Pipes, who never once reflected upon the conſequences of his deceit.

Though their mutual paſſion was by theſe means ſuppreſſed for the preſent, it was not altogether extinguiſhed, but glowed in ſecret, though even to themſelves unknown, until an occaſion, which afterwards offered, blew up the latent flame, and love reſumed his empire in their breaſts.

While they moved, as it were, without the ſphere of each other's attraction, the commodore fearing that Perry was in danger of involving himſelf in ſome pernicious engagement, reſolved, by advice of Mr. Jolter and his friend the pariſh prieſt, to recal him from the place where he had contracted ſuch imprudent connections, and ſend him to the univerſity, where his education might be completed, and his fancy weaned from all puerile amuſements.

This plan had been propoſed to his own father, who, as hath been already obſerved, ſtood always neuter in every thing that concerned his eldeſt ſon; and as for Mrs. Pickle, ſhe had never heard his name mentioned ſince his departure, with any degree of temper or tranquillity, except when her huſband informed her that he was in a fair way of being ruined by this indiſcreet amour. It was then ſhe began to applaud her own foreſight, which had diſcerned the mark of reprobation in that vicious boy, and launched out in compariſon between him and Gammy, who, ſhe obſerved, was a child of uncommon parts and ſolidity, and, with the bleſſing of God, would be a comfort to his parents, and an ornament to the family.

Should I affirm that this favourite, whom ſhe commended ſo much, was in every reſpect the reverſe of what ſhe deſcribed; that he was a boy of mean capacity, and, though remarkably diſtorted in his body, much more crooked in his diſpoſition; and that ſhe had perſuaded her huſband to eſpouſe her opinion, though it was contrary to common ſenſe, as well as to his own perception; I am afraid the reader will think I repreſent a monſter that never exiſted in nature, and be apt to condemn the economy of my invention; nevertheleſs, there is nothing more true than every circumſtance of what I have advanced; and I wiſh the picture, ſingular as it is, may not be thought to reſemble more than one original.

CHAPTER XX.

Peregrine is ſummoned to attend his uncle; is more and more hated by his own mother; appeals to his father, whoſe condeſcenſion is defeated by the dominion of his wife.

But, waving theſe reflections, let us return to Peregrine, who received a ſummons to attend his uncle, and in a few days arrived with Mr. Jolter and Pipes at the garriſon, which he filled with joy and ſatisfaction. The alteration which, during his abſence, had happened in his perſon, was very favourable in his appearance, which, from that of a comely boy, was converted into that of a moſt engaging youth. He was already taller than a middle ſized man, his ſhape aſcertained, his ſinews well knit, his mien greatly improved, and his whole figure as elegant and graceful as if it had been caſt in the ſame mould with the Apollo of Belvidere.

Such an outſide could not fail of prepoſſeſſing people in his favour. The commodore, notwithſtanding the advantageous reports he had heard, found his expectation exceeded in the perſon of Peregrine, and ſignified his approbation in the moſt ſanguine terms. Mrs. Trunnion was ſtruck with his genteel addreſs, and received him with uncommon marks of complacency and affection; he was careſſed by all the people in the neighbourhood, who, while they admired his accompliſhments, could not help pitying his infatuated mother, for being deprived of that unutterable delight which any other parent would have enjoyed in the contemplation of ſuch an amiable ſon.

Divers efforts were made by ſome well-diſpoſed people, to conquer, if poſſible, this monſtrous prejudice; but their endeavours, inſtead of curing, ſerved only to inflame the diſtemper, and ſhe never could be prevailed upon to indulge him with the leaſt mark of maternal regard. On the contrary, her original diſguſt degenerated into ſuch inveteracy of hatred, that ſhe left no ſtone unturned, to alienate the commodore's affection for this her innocent child, and even practiſed the moſt malicious defamation to accompliſh her purpoſe. Every day did ſhe abuſe her huſband's ear with ſome forged inſtance of Pe-

tegrine's ingratitude to his uncle, well knowing that it would reach the commodore's knowledge at night.

Accordingly Mr. Pickle uſed to tell him at the club, that his hopeful favourite had ridiculed him in ſuch a company, and aſperſed his ſpouſe upon another occaſion; and thus retail the little ſcandalous iſſue of his own wife's invention. Luckily for Peregrine, the commodore paid no great regard to the authority of his informer, becauſe he knew from what channel his intelligence flowed; beſides, the youth had a ſtaunch friend in Mr. Hatchway, who never failed to vindicate him when he was thus unjuſtly accuſed, and always found argument enough to confute the aſſertions of his enemies. But, though Trunnion had been dubious of the young gentleman's principles, and deaf to the remonſtrances of the lieutenant, Perry was provided with a bulwark ſtrong enough to defend him from all ſuch aſſaults. This was no other than his aunt, whoſe regard for him was perceived to increaſe in the ſame proportion as his own mother's diminiſhed; and indeed the augmentation of the one was, in all probability, owing to the decreaſe of the other; for the two ladies, with great civility, performed all the duties of good neighbourhood, and hated each other moſt piouſly in their hearts.

Mrs. Pickle having been diſobliged at the ſplendour of her ſiſter's new equipage, had, ever ſince that time, in the courſe of her viſiting, endeavoured to make people merry with ſatirical jokes on the poor lady's infirmities; and Mrs. Trunnion ſeized the very firſt opportunity of making repriſals, by inveighing againſt her unnatural behaviour to her own child; ſo that Peregrine, as on the one hand he was abhorred, ſo on the other was he careſſed, in conſequence of this contention; and I firmly believe that the moſt effectual method of deſtroying his intereſt at the garriſon, would have been the ſhow of countenancing him at his father's houſe; but, whether this conjecture be reaſonable or chimerical, certain it is the experiment was never tried, and therefore Mr. Peregrine ran no riſk of being diſgraced. The commodore, who aſſumed, and juſtly too, the whole merit of his education, was now as proud of the youth's improvements, as if he had actually been his own offspring; and ſometimes his

affection roſe to ſuch a pitch of enthuſiaſm, that he verily believed him to be the iſſue of his own loins. Notwithſtanding this favourable predicament in which our hero ſtood with his aunt and her huſband, he could not help feeling the injury he ſuffered from the caprice of his mother; and though the gaiety of his diſpoſition hindered him from afflicting himſelf with reflections of any gloomy caſt, he did not fail to foreſee that, if any ſudden accident ſhould deprive him of the commodore, he would in all likelihood find himſelf in a very diſagreeable ſituation. Prompted by this conſideration, he one evening accompanied his uncle to the club, and was introduced to his father, before that worthy gentleman had the leaſt inkling of his arrival.

Mr. Gamaliel was never ſo diſconcerted as at this rencounter. His own diſpoſition would not ſuffer him to do any thing that might create the leaſt diſturbance, or interrupt his evening's enjoyment; ſo ſtrongly was he impreſſed with the terror of his wife, that he durſt not yield to the tranquillity of his temper; and, as I have already obſerved, his inclination was perfectly neutral. Thus diſtracted between different motives, when Perry was preſented to him, he ſat ſilent and abſorbed, as if he did not, or would not perceive the application; and when he was urged to declare himſelf by the youth, who pathetically begged to know how he had incurred his diſpleaſure, he anſwered in a peeviſh ſtrain, "Why, good now, child, what would you have me to do? your mother can't abide you."—"If my mother is ſo unkind, I will not call it unnatural (ſaid Peregrine, the tears of indignation ſtarting from his eyes), as to baniſh me from her preſence and affection, without the leaſt cauſe aſſigned, I hope you will not be ſo unjuſt as to eſpouſe her barbarous prejudice." Before Mr. Pickle had time to reply to this expoſtulation, for which he was not at all prepared, the commodore interpoſed, and enforced his favourite's remonſtrance, by telling Mr. Gamaliel, that he was aſhamed to ſee any man drive in ſuch a miſerable manner under his wife's petticoat. "As for my own part (ſaid he, raiſing his voice, and aſſuming a look of importance and command), before I would ſuffer myſelf to be ſteered all weathers by any woman in Chriſtendom, d'ye ſee, I'd

raiſe ſuch a hurricane about her ears, that"—Here he was interrupted by Mr. Hatchway, who, thruſting his head towards the door, in the attitude of one that liſtens, cried, "Ahey! there's your ſpouſe come to pay us a viſit." Trunnion's features that inſtant adopted a new diſpoſition: Fear and confuſion took poſſeſſion of his countenance; his voice, from a tone of vociferation, ſunk into a whiſper of "Sure you muſt be miſtaken, Jack;" and in great perplexity he wiped off the ſweat which had ſtarted on his forehead at this falſe alarm. The lieutenant having thus puniſhed him for the rhodomontade he had uttered, told him with an arch ſneer, that he was deceived with the ſound of the outward door creaking upon its hinges, which he miſtook for Mrs. Trunnion's voice, and deſired him to proceed with his admonitions to Mr. Pickle. It is not to be denied that this arrogance was a little unſeaſonable in the commodore, who was in all reſpects as effectually ſubdued to the dominion of his wife, as the perſon whoſe ſubmiſſion he then ventured to condemn, with this difference of diſpoſition—Trunnion's ſubjection was like that of a bear, checquered with fits of ſurlineſs and rage; whereas Pickle bore the yoke like an ox, without repining. No wonder then that this indolence, this ſluggiſhneſs, this ſtagnation of temper, rendered Gamaliel incapable of withſtanding the arguments and importunity of his friends, to which he at length ſurrendered. He acquieſced in the juſtice of their obſervations, and, taking his ſon by the hand, promiſed to favour him for the future with his love and fatherly protection.

But this laudable reſolution did not laſt: Mrs. Pickle, ſtill dubious of his conſtancy, and jealous of his communication with the commodore, never failed to interrogate him every night about the converſation that happened at the club, and regulate her exhortations according to the intelligence ſhe received. He was no ſooner, therefore, ſafely conveyed to bed (that academy in which all notable wives communicate their lectures), than her catechiſm began; and ſhe in a moment perceived ſomething reluctant and equivocal in her huſband's anſwers. Arouſed at this diſcovery, ſhe employed her influence and ſkill with ſuch ſucceſs, that he diſcloſed every circumſtance of

what had happened; and, after having ſuſtained a moſt ſevere rebuke for his ſimplicity and indiſcretion, humbled himſelf ſo far as to promiſe that he would next day annul the condeſcenſions he had made, and for ever renounce the ungracious object of her diſguſt. This undertaking was punctually performed in a letter to the commodore, which ſhe herſelf dictated, in theſe words:

"SIR,

"Whereas my good-nature being laſt night impoſed upon, I was perſuaded to countenance and promiſe, I know not what, to that vicious youth, whoſe parent I have the misfortune to be; I deſire you will take notice that I revoke all ſuch countenance and promiſes, and ſhall never look upon that man as my friend, who will henceforth in ſuch a cauſe ſolicit,

Sir, yours, &c.

GAM. PICKLE."

CHAPTER XXI.

Trunnion is enraged at the conduct of Pickle. Peregrine reſents the injuſtice of his mother, to whom he explains his ſentiments in a letter. Is entered at the univerſity of Oxford, where he ſignalizes himſelf as a youth of an enterpriſing genius.

UNSPEAKABLE were the tranſports of rage to which Trunnion was incenſed by this abſurd renunciation: He tore the letter with his gums (teeth he had none), ſpit with furious grimaces, in token of the contempt he entertained for the author, whom he not only damned as a louſy, ſcabby, naſty, ſcurvy, ſculking, lubberly noodle, but reſolved to challenge to ſingle combat with fire and ſword; but he was diſſuaded from this violent meaſure, and appeaſed by the intervention and advice of the lieutenant and Mr. Jolter, who repreſented the meſſage as the effect of the poor man's infirmity, for which he was rather an object of pity than of reſentment; and turned the ſtream of his indignation againſt the wife, whom he reviled accordingly. Nor did Peregrine himſelf bear with patience this injurious declaration, the nature of which

he no ſooner underſtood from Hatchway, than equally ſhocked and exaſperated, he retired to his apartment, and, in the firſt emotions of his ire, produced the following epiſtle, which was immediately conveyed to his mother.

" MADAM,

" HAD nature formed me a bugbear to the ſight, and inſpired me with a ſoul as vicious as my body was deteſtable, perhaps I might have enjoyed particular marks of your affection and applauſe; ſeeing you have perſecuted me with ſuch unnatural averſion, for no other viſible reaſon than that of my differing ſo widely in ſhape, as well as diſpoſition, from that deformed urchin who is the object of your tenderneſs and care. If thoſe be the terms on which alone I can obtain your favour, I pray God you may never ceaſe to hate, Madam,

Your much injured ſon,

PEREGRINE PICKLE."

This letter, which nothing but his paſſion and inexperience could excuſe, had ſuch an effect upon his mother, as may be eaſily conceived. She was enraged to a degree of phrenzy againſt the writer; though at the ſame time ſhe conſidered the whole as the production of Mrs. Trunnion's particular pique, and repreſented it to her huſband as an inſult that he was bound in honour to reſent, by breaking off all correſpondence with the commodore and his family. This was a bitter pill to Gamaliel, who, through a long courſe of years, was ſo habituated to Trunnion's company, that he could as eaſily have parted with a limb, as have relinquiſhed the club all at once. He therefore ventured to repreſent his own incapacity to follow her advice, and begged that he might at leaſt be allowed to drop the connection gradually; proteſting that he would do his endeavour to give her all manner of ſatisfaction.

Meanwhile preparations were made for Peregrine's departure to the univerſity, and in a few weeks he ſet out in the ſeventeenth year of his age, accompanied by the ſame attendants who lived with him at Wincheſter. His uncle laid ſtrong injunctions upon him to avoid the com-

pany of immodeſt women, to mind his learning, to let him hear of his welfare as often as he could ſpare time to write, and ſettled his appointments at the rate of five hundred a year, including his governor's ſalary, which was one fifth part of the ſum. The heart of our young gentleman dilated at the proſpect of the figure he ſhould make with ſuch an handſome annuity, the management of which was left to his own diſcretion; and he amuſed his imagination with the moſt agreeable reveries during his journey to Oxford, which he performed in two days. Here being introduced to the head of the college, to whom he had been recommended, accommodated with genteel apartments, entered as gentleman commoner in the books, and provided with a judicious tutor, inſtead of returning to the ſtudy of Greek and Latin, in which he thought himſelf already ſufficiently inſtructed, he renewed his acquaintance with ſome of his old ſchool-fellows, whom he found in the ſame ſituation, and was by them initiated in all the faſhionable diverſions of the place.

It was not long before he made himſelf remarkable for his ſpirit and humour, which were ſo acceptable to the bucks of the univerſity, that he was admitted as a member of their corporation, and, in a very little time, became the moſt conſpicuous perſonage of the whole fraternity; not that he valued himſelf upon his ability in ſmoking the greateſt number of pipes, and drinking the largeſt quantity of ale; theſe were qualifications of too groſs a nature to captivate his refined ambition. He piqued himſelf on his talent for raillery, his genius and taſte, his perſonal accompliſhments, and his ſucceſs at intrigue: Nor were his excurſions confined to the ſmall villages in the neighbourhood, which are commonly viſited once a week by the ſtudents for the ſake of carnal recreation. He kept his own horſes, traverſed the whole county in parties of pleaſure, attended all the races within fifty miles of Oxford, and made frequent jaunts to London, where he uſed to lie incognito during the beſt part of many a term.

The rules of the univerſity were too ſevere to be obſerved by a youth of his vivacity; and therefore he became acquainted with the proctor by times. But all the

checks he received were inſufficient to moderate his career; he frequented taverns and coffee-houſes, committed midnight frolics in the ſtreets, inſulted all the ſober and pacific claſs of his fellow-ſtudents; the tutors themſelves were not ſacred from his ridicule; he laughed at the magiſtrate, and neglected every particular of college diſcipline.

In vain did they attempt to reſtrain his irregularities by the impoſition of fines; he was liberal to profuſion, and therefore paid without reluctance. Thrice did he ſcale the windows of a tradeſman, with whoſe daughter he had an affair of gallantry, as often was he obliged to ſeek his ſafety by a precipitate leap, and one night would, in all probability, have fallen a ſacrifice to an ambuſcade that was laid by the father, had not his truſty ſquire Pipes interpoſed in his behalf, and manfully reſcued him from the clubs of his enemies.

In the midſt of theſe exceſſes, Mr. Jolter, finding his admonitions neglected, and his influence utterly deſtroyed, attempted to wean his pupil from his extravagant courſes, by engaging his attention in ſome more laudable purſuit. With this view he introduced him into a club of politicians, who received him with great demonſtrations of regard, accommodated themſelves more than he could have expected to his jovial diſpoſition, and while they revolved ſchemes for the reformation of the ſtate, drank with ſuch devotion to the accompliſhment of their plans, that, before parting, the cares of their patriotiſm were quite overwhelmed.

Peregrine, though he could not approve of their doctrine, reſolved to attach himſelf for ſome time to their company; becauſe he perceived ample ſubject for his ridicule, in the characters of theſe wrong-headed enthuſiaſts. It was a conſtant practice with them, in their midnight conſiſtories, to ſwallow ſuch plentiful draughts of inſpiration, that their myſteries commonly ended like thoſe of the Bacchanalian Orgia; and they were ſeldom capable of maintaining that ſolemnity of decorum which, by the nature of their functions, moſt of them were obliged to profeſs. Now, as Peregrine's ſatirical diſpoſition was never more gratified than when he had an opportunity of expoſing grave characters in ridiculous atti-

tudes, he laid a miſchievous ſnare for his new confederates, which took effect in this manner. In one of their nocturnal deliberations, he promoted ſuch a ſpirit of good fellowſhip, by the agreeable ſallies of his wit, which were purpoſely levelled againſt their political adverſaries, that by ten o'clock they were all ready to join in the moſt extravagant propoſal that could be made. They broke their glaſſes in conſequence of his ſuggeſtion, drank healths out of their ſhoes, caps, and the bottoms of the candleſticks that ſtood before them, ſometimes ſtanding with one foot on a chair, and the knee bent on the edge of the table; and, when they could no longer ſtand in that poſture, ſetting their bare poſteriors on the cold floor. They huzza'd, hallooed, danced, and ſung, and, in ſhort, were elevated to ſuch a pitch of intoxication, that when Peregrine propoſed that they ſhould burn their periwigs, the hint was immediately approved, and they executed the frolic as one man. Their ſhoes and caps underwent the ſame fate by the ſame inſtigation; and in this trim he led them forth into the ſtreet, where they reſolved to compel every body they ſhould find to ſubſcribe to their political creed, and pronounce the Shibboleth of their party. In the achievement of this enterpriſe, they met with more oppoſition than they expected; they were encountered with arguments which they could not well withſtand; the noſes of ſome, and eyes of others, in a very little time, bore the marks of obſtinate diſputation. Their conductor having at length engaged the whole body in a fray with another ſquadron, which was pretty much in the ſame condition, he very fairly gave them the ſlip, and ſlily retreated to his apartment, foreſeeing that his companions would ſoon be favoured with the notice of their ſuperiors; nor was he deceived in his prognoſtic; the proctor, going his round, chanced to fall in with this tumultuous uproar, and, interpoſing his authority, found means to quiet the diſturbance. He took cognizance of their names, and diſmiſſed the rioters to their reſpective chambers, not a little ſcandalized at the behaviour of ſome among them, whoſe buſineſs and duty it was to ſet far other examples to the youth under their care and direction.

About midnight, Pipes, who had orders to attend at a

diſtance, and keep an eye upon Jolter, brought home that unfortunate governor upon his back (Peregrine having beforehand ſecured his admittance into the college), and among other bruiſes he was found to have received a couple of contuſions on his face, which next morning appeared in a black circle that ſurrounded each eye.

This was a mortifying circumſtance to a man of his character and deportment, eſpecially as he had received a meſſage from the proctor, who deſired to ſee him forthwith. With great humility and contrition he begged the advice of his pupil, who, being uſed to amuſe himſelf with painting, aſſured Mr. Jolter, that he would cover thoſe ſigns of diſgrace with a ſlight coat of fleſh colour ſo dextrouſly, that it would be almoſt impoſſible to diſtinguiſh the artificial from the natural ſkin. The rueful governor, rather than expoſe ſuch opprobrious tokens to the obſervation and cenſure of the magiſtrate, ſubmitted to the expedient. Although his counſellor had over-rated his own ſkill, he was perſuaded to confide in the diſguiſe, and actually attended the proctor, with ſuch a ſtaring addition to the natural ghaſtlineſs of his features, that his viſage bore a very apt reſemblance to ſome of thoſe ferocious countenances that hang over the doors of certain taverns and ale-houſes, under the denomination of the Saracen's Head.

Such a remarkable alteration of phyſiognomy could not eſcape the notice of the moſt undiſcerning beholder, much leſs the penetrating eye of his ſevere judge, already whetted with what he had ſeen over-night. He was therefore upbraided with this ridiculous and ſhallow artifice, and, together with the companions of his debauch, underwent ſuch a cutting reprimand for the ſcandalous irregularity of his conduct, that all of them remained creſt-fallen, and were aſhamed, for many weeks, to appear in the public execution of their duty.

Peregrine was too vain of his fineſſe to conceal the part he acted in this comedy, with the particulars of which he regaled his companions, and thereby entailed upon himſelf the hate and reſentment of the community, whoſe maxims and practices he had diſcloſed; for he was conſidered as a ſpy, who had intruded himſelf into their ſociety with a view of betraying it; or, at beſt, as an apoſ-

tate and renegado from the faith and principles which he had profeſſed.

CHAPTER XXII.

He is inſulted by his tutor, whom he lampoons; makes a conſiderable progreſs in polite literature; and, in an excurſion to Windſor, meets with Emilia by accident, and is very coldly received.

AMONG thoſe who ſuffered by his craft and infidelity was Mr. Jumble, his own tutor, who could not at all digeſt the mortifying affront he had received, and was reſolved to be revenged on the inſulting author. With this view he watched the conduct of Mr. Pickle with the utmoſt rancour of vigilance, and let ſlip no opportunity of treating him with diſreſpect, which he knew the diſpoſition of his pupil could leſs brook than any other ſeverity it was in his power to exerciſe.

Peregrine had been ſeveral mornings abſent from chapel; and as Mr. Jumble never failed to queſtion him in a very peremptory ſtile about his non-attendance, he invented ſome very plauſible excuſes; but at length his ingenuity was exhauſted; he received a very galling rebuke for his profligacy of morals, and, that he might feel it the more ſenſibly, was ordered, by way of exerciſe, to compoſe a paraphraſe, in Engliſh verſe, upon theſe two lines in Virgil:

> "Vane ligur, fruſtraque animis elate ſuperbis,
> "Nequicquam patrias tentaſti lubricus artes."

The impoſition of this invidious theme had all the deſired effect upon Peregrine, who not only conſidered it as a piece of unmannerly abuſe levelled againſt his own conduct, but alſo as a retroſpective inſult on the memory of his grandfather, who (as he had been informed) was in his life-time more noted for his cunning than candour in trade.

Exaſperated at this inſtance of the pedant's audacity, he had well nigh (in his firſt tranſports) taken corporal ſatisfaction on the ſpot; but foreſeeing the troubleſome conſequences that would attend ſuch a flagrant outrage

nſt the laws of the univerſity, he checked his indig-
on, and reſolved to revenge the injury in a more cool
contemptuous manner. Thus determined, he ſet on
: an inquiry into the particulars of Jumble's parent-
and education. He learnt that the father of this in-
nt tutor was a bricklayer, that his mother ſold pyes,
that the ſon, at different periods of his youth, had
ıſed himſelf in both occupations before he converted
views to the ſtudy of learning. Fraught with this in-
gence, he compoſed the following ballad in doggerel
nes, and next day preſented it as a gloſs upon the
, which the tutor had choſen.

I.

Come, liſten ye ſtudents of ev'ry degree,
I ſing of a wit and a tutor *perdie;*
A ſtateſman profound, a critic immenſe,
In ſhort, a meer jumble of learning and ſenſe;
And yet of his talents, though laudably vain,
His own family arts he could never attain.

II.

His father intending his fortune to build,
In his youth would have taught him the trowel to wield;
But the mortar of diſcipline never would ſtick,
For his ſkull was ſecured by a facing of brick;
And with all his endeavours of patience and pain,
The ſkill of his ſire he could never attain.

III.

His mother, an houſewife, neat, artful, and wiſe,
Renown'd for her delicate biſcuit and pyes,
Soon alter'd his ſtudies, by flatt'ring his taſte,
From the raiſing of walls to the rearing of paſte!
But all her inſtructions were fruitleſs and vain,
The pye-making myſt'ry he ne'er could attain.

IV.

Yet true to his race, in his labours were ſeen
A jumble of both their profeſſions, I ween;
For, when his own genius he ventur'd to truſt,
His pyes ſeem'd of brick, and his houſes of cruſt.
Then, good Mr. Tutor, pray be not ſo vain,
Since your family arts you could never attain.

This impudent production was the moſt effectual ven-
nce he could have taken on his tutor, who had all the
ercilious arrogance and ridiculous pride of a low-born
ant. Inſtead of overlooking this petulant piece of
re with that temper and decency of diſdain that be-
ıe a perſon of his gravity and ſtation, he no ſooner
: his eye over the performance, than the blood ruſhed
› his countenance, which immediately after exhibited

a ghaſtly pale colour. With a quivering lip he told his pupil, that he was an impertinent jackanapes, and he would take care that he ſhould be expelled from the univerſity, for having preſumed to write and deliver ſuch a licentious and ſcurrilous libel. Peregrine anſwered with great reſolution, that, when the provocation he had received ſhould be known, he was perſuaded that he ſhould be acquitted in the opinion of all impartial people; and that he was ready to ſubmit the whole to the deciſion of the maſter.

This arbitration he propoſed, becauſe he knew the maſter and Jumble were at variance; and for that reaſon the tutor durſt not venture to put the cauſe on ſuch an iſſue. Nay, when this reference was mentioned, Jumble, who was naturally jealous, ſuſpected that Peregrine had a promiſe of protection before he undertook to commit ſuch an outrageous inſult; and this notion had ſuch an effect upon him, that he reſolved to devour his vexation, and wait for a more proper opportunity of gratifying his hate. Meanwhile copies of the ballad were diſtributed among the ſtudents, who ſung it under the very noſe of Mr. Jumble, to the tune of *A cobler there was*, &c. and the triumph of our hero was complete. Neither was his whole time devoted to the riotous extravagancies of youth. He enjoyed many lucid intervals; during which he contracted a more intimate acquaintance with the claſſics, applied himſelf to the reading of hiſtory, improved his taſte for painting and muſic, in which he made ſome progreſs; and, above all things, cultivated the ſtudy of natural philoſophy. It was generally after a courſe of cloſe attention to ſome of theſe arts and ſciences, that his diſpoſition broke out into thoſe irregularities and wild ſallies of a luxuriant imagination, for which he became ſo remarkable; and he was perhaps the only young man in Oxford, who, at the ſame time, maintained an intimate and friendly intercourſe with the moſt unthinking, as well as with the moſt ſedate ſtudents at the univerſity.

It is not to be ſuppoſed that a young man of Peregrine's vanity, inexperience, and profuſion, could ſuit his expence to his allowance, liberal as it was; for he was not one of thoſe fortunate people who are born economiſts, and knew not the art of with-holding his purſe when he

ſaw his companion in difficulty. Thus naturally generous and expenſive, he ſquandered away his money, and made a moſt ſplendid appearance upon the receipt of his quarterly appointment; but long before the third month was elapſed, his finances were conſumed; and, as he could not ſtoop to aſk an extraordinary ſupply, was too proud to borrow, and too haughty to run in debt with tradeſmen, he devoted thoſe periods of poverty to the proſecution of his ſtudies, and ſhone forth again at the revolution of quarter-day.

In one of theſe irruptions, he and ſome of his companions went to Windſor, in order to ſee the royal apartments in the caſtle, whither they repaired in the afternoon; and, as Peregrine ſtood contemplating the picture of Hercules and Omphale, one of his fellow ſtudents whiſpered in his ear, "Z—ds! Pickle, there are two fine girls." He turned inſtantly about, and, in one of them, recognized his almoſt forgotten Emilia: Her appearance acted upon his imagination like a ſpark of fire that falls among gunpowder; that paſſion which had lain dormant for the ſpace of two years flaſhed up in a moment, and he was ſeized with an univerſal trepidation. She perceived and partook of his emotion; for their ſouls, like uniſons, vibrated with the ſame impulſe. However, ſhe called her pride and reſentment to her aid, and found reſolution enough to retire from ſuch a dangerous ſcene. Alarmed at her retreat, he recollected all his aſſurance, and, impelled by love, which he could no longer reſiſt, followed her into the next room, where, in the moſt diſconcerted manner, he accoſted her with "Your humble ſervant, Miſs Gauntlet;" to which ſalutation ſhe replied, with an affectation of indifference, that did not, however, conceal her agitation, "Your ſervant, Sir;" and immediately extending her finger towards the picture of Duns Scotus, which is fixed over one of the doors, aſked her companion in a gigling tone, if ſhe did think he looked like a conjurer. Peregrine, nettled into ſpirits by this reception, anſwered for the other lady, "that it was an eaſy matter to be a conjurer in thoſe times, when the ſimplicity of the age aſſiſted his divination; but were he, or Merlin himſelf, to riſe from the dead now, when ſuch deceit and diſſimulation prevail, they would not be able

to earn their bread by the profeſſion." "O! Sir, ſaid ſhe (turning full upon him), without doubt they would adopt new maxims; 'tis no diſparagement in this enlightened age for one to alter one's opinion." "No, ſure, Madam (replied the youth, with ſome precipitation), provided the change be for the better." "And, ſhould it happen otherwiſe (retorted the nymph with a flirt of her fan), inconſtancy will never want countenance from the practice of mankind." "True, Madam (reſumed our hero, fixing his eyes upon her) examples of levity are every where to be met with." "O Lord, Sir (cried Emilia, toſſing her head), you'll ſcarce ever find a fop without it." By this time his companion, ſeeing him engaged with one of the ladies, entered into converſation with the other; and, in order to favour his friend's gallantry, conducted her into the next apartment, on pretence of entertaining her with the ſight of a remarkable piece of painting.

Peregrine, laying hold on this opportunity of being alone with the object of his love, aſſumed a moſt ſeducing tenderneſs of look, and, heaving a profound ſigh, aſked if ſhe had utterly diſcarded him from her remembrance. Reddening at this pathetic queſtion, which recalled the memory of the imagined ſlight he had put upon her, ſhe anſwered in great confuſion, "Sir, I believe I once had the pleaſure of ſeeing you in a ball in Wincheſter." "Miſs Emilia (ſaid he, very gravely), will you be ſo candid as to tell me what miſbehaviour of mine you are pleaſed to puniſh, by reſtricting your remembrance to that ſingle occaſion?" "Mr. Pickle (ſhe replied in the ſame tone), it is neither my province nor inclination to judge your conduct; and therefore you miſapply your queſtion, when you aſk ſuch an explanation of me." "At leaſt (reſumed our lover), give me the melancholy ſatisfaction to know for what offence of mine you refuſed to take the leaſt notice of that letter which I had the honour to write from Wincheſter, by your own expreſs permiſſion." "Your letter (ſaid Miſs, with great vivacity), neither required, nor, in my opinion, deſerved an anſwer; and, to be free with you, Mr. Pickle, it was but a ſhallow artifice to rid yourſelf of a correſpondence you had deigned to ſolicit." Peregrine, confounded at this repartee, replied,

hat howſoever he might have failed in point of elegance or diſcretion, he was ſure he had not been deficient in expreſſions of reſpect and devotion for thoſe charms which it was his pride to adore: "As for the verſes (ſaid he), I own they were unworthy of the theme, but I flattered myſelf that they would have merited your acceptance, though not your approbation, and been conſidered not ſo much as the proof of my genius, as the genuine effuſion of my love." "Verſes! (cried Emilia, with an air of aſtoniſhment) what verſes? I really don't underſtand you." The young gentleman was thunderſtruck at this exclamation, to which, after a long pauſe, he anſwered, "I begin to ſuſpect, and heartily wiſh it may appear, that we have miſunderſtood each other from the beginning. Pray, Miſs Gauntlet, did you not find a copy of verſes encloſed in that unfortunate letter?" "Truly, Sir (ſaid the lady), I am not ſo much of a connoiſſeur as to diſtinguiſh whether that facetious production, which you merrily ſtyle an unfortunate letter, was compoſed in verſe or proſe; but, methinks, the jeſt is a little too ſtale to be brought upon the carpet again." So ſaying, ſhe tripped away to her companion, and left her lover in a moſt tumultuous ſuſpenſe. He now perceived that her neglect of his addreſſes, when he was at Wincheſter, muſt have been owing to ſome myſtery which he could not comprehend: And ſhe began to ſuſpect, and to hope, that the letter which ſhe received was ſpurious, though ſhe could not conceive how that could poſſibly happen, as it had been delivered to her by the hands of his own ſervant.

However, ſhe reſolved to leave the taſk of unravelling the affair to him, who, ſhe knew, would infallibly exert himſelf for his own as well as her ſatisfaction. She was not deceived in her opinion: He went up to her again at the ſtair-caſe, and, as they were unprovided with a male attendant, inſiſted upon ſquiring the ladies to their lodgings. Emilia ſaw his drift, which was no other than to know where ſhe lived; and, though ſhe approved of his contrivance, thought it was incumbent upon her, for the ſupport of her own dignity, to decline the civility: She therefore thanked him for his polite offer, but would by no means conſent to his giving himſelf ſuch unneceſſary trouble, eſpecially as they had a very little way to walk.

He was not repulſed by this refuſal, the nature of which he perfectly underſtood; nor was ſhe ſorry to ſee him perſevere in his determination: He therefore accompanied them in their return, and made divers efforts to ſpeak with Emilia in particular. But ſhe had a ſpice of the coquette in her diſpoſition, and, being determined to whet his impatience, artfully baffled all his endeavours, by keeping her companion continually engaged in the converſation, which turned upon the venerable appearance and imperial ſituation of the place. Thus tantalized, he lounged with them to the door of the houſe in which they lodged, when his miſtreſs, perceiving, by the countenance of her comrade, that ſhe was on the point of deſiring him to walk in, checked her intention with a frown; then turning to Mr. Pickle, dropped him a very formal curt'ſey, ſeized the other young lady by the arm, and ſaying, "Come, couſin Sophy," vaniſhed in a moment.

CHAPTER XXIII.

After ſundry unſucceſsful efforts, he finds means to come to an explanation with his miſtreſs; and a reconciliation enſues.

PEREGRINE, diſconcerted at their ſudden diſappearance, ſtood for ſome minutes gaping in the ſtreet, before he could get the better of his ſurpriſe: and then deliberated with himſelf whether he ſhould demand immediate admittance to his miſtreſs, or chooſe ſome other method of application. Piqued at her abrupt behaviour, though pleaſed with her ſpirit, he ſet his invention to work, in order to contrive ſome means of ſeeing her; and, in a fit of muſing, arrived at the inn, where he found his companions whom he had left at the Caſtle gate. They had already made inquiry about the ladies, in conſequence of which he learnt, that Miſs Sophy was daughter of a gentleman in town, to whom his miſtreſs was related; that an intimate friendſhip ſubſiſted between the two young ladies; that Emilia had lived about a month with her couſin, and appeared at the laſt aſſembly, where ſhe was univerſally admired; and that ſeveral young gentlemen of fortune had ſince that time teazed her with addreſſes.

Our hero's ambition was flattered, and his paſſion inflamed with this intelligence; and he ſwore within himſelf, that he would not quit the ſpot until he ſhould have obtained an indiſputed victory over all his rivals.

That ſame evening he compoſed a moſt eloquent epiſtle, in which he earneſtly entreated that ſhe would favour him with an opportunity of vindicating his conduct; but ſhe would neither receive his billet, nor ſee his meſſenger. Baulked in this effort, he encloſed it in a new cover, directed by another hand, and ordered Pipes to ride next morning to London, on purpoſe to deliver it at the poſt-office, that, coming by ſuch conveyance, ſhe might have no ſuſpicion of the author, and open it before ſhe ſhould be aware of the deceit.

Three days he waited patiently for the effect of this ſtratagem, and, in the afternoon of the fourth, ventured to hazard a formal viſit, in quality of an old aquaintance. But here too he failed in his attempt; ſhe was indiſpoſed, and could not ſee company. Theſe obſtacles ſerved only to increaſe his eagerneſs: He ſtill adhered to his former reſolution; and his companions, underſtanding his determination, left him next day to his own inventions. Thus relinquiſhed to his own ideas, he doubled his aſſiduity, and practiſed every method his imagination could ſuggeſt, in order to promote his plan.

Pipes was ſtationed all day long within ſight of her door, that he might be able to give his maſter an account of her motions: But ſhe never went abroad, except to viſit in the neighbourhood, and was always houſed before Peregrine could be appriſed of her appearance. He went to church with a view of attracting her notice, and humbled his deportment before her: But ſhe was ſo miſchievouſly devout as to look at nothing but her book, ſo that he was not favoured with one glance of regard. He frequented the coffeehouſe, and attempted to contract an acquaintance with Miſs Sophy's father, who, he hoped, would invite him to his houſe: But this expectation was alſo defeated.—That prudent gentleman looked upon him as one of thoſe forward fortune-hunters who go about the country ſeeking whom they may devour, and warily diſcouraged all his advances. Chagrined by ſo many unſucceſsful endeavours, he began to deſpair of ac-

compliſhing his aim; and, as the laſt ſuggeſtion of his art, paid off his lodging, took horſe at noon, and departed, in all appearance, for the place from whence he had come. He rode, however, but a few miles, and, in the duſk of the evening, returned unſeen, alighted at another inn, ordered Pipes to ſtay within doors, and, keeping himſelf incognito, employed another perſon as a centinel upon Emilia.

It was not long before he reaped the fruits of his ingenuity. Next day in the afternoon he was informed by his ſpy, that the two young ladies were gone to walk in the park, whither he followed them on the inſtant, fully determined to come to an explanation with his miſtreſs, even in preſence of her friend, who might poſſibly be prevailed upon to intereſt herſelf in his behalf.

When he ſaw them at ſuch a diſtance that they could not return to town before he ſhould have an opportunity of putting his reſolution in practice, he mended his pace, and found means to appear before them ſo ſuddenly, that Emilia could not help expreſſing her ſurpriſe in a ſcream. Our lover, putting on a mien of humility and mortification, begged to know if her reſentment was implacable; and aſked, why ſhe had ſo cruelly refuſed to grant him the common privilege that every criminal enjoyed. "Dear Miſs Sophy (ſaid he, addreſſing himſelf to her companion), give me leave to implore your interceſſion with your couſin; I am ſure you have humanity enough to eſpouſe my cauſe, did you but know the juſtice of it; and I flatter myſelf, that, by your kind interpoſition, I may be able to rectify that fatal miſunderſtanding which hath made me wretched." "Sir (ſaid Sophy), you appear like a gentleman, and I doubt not but your behaviour has been always ſuitable to your appearance; but you muſt excuſe me from undertaking any ſuch office in behalf of a perſon whom I have not the honour to know." "Madam (anſwered Peregrine), I hope Miſs Emy will juſtify my pretenſions to that character, notwithſtanding the myſtery of her diſpleaſure, which, upon my honour, I cannot for my ſoul explain." "Lord! Mr. Pickle (ſaid Emilia, who had by this time recollected herſelf), I never queſtioned your gallantry and taſte, but I am reſolved that you never ſhall have cauſe to exerciſe your talents at my expence; ſo that

you teaze yourſelf and me to no purpoſe: Come, Sophy, let us walk home again." "Good God! Madam (cried the lover, with great emotion), why will you diſtract me with ſuch indifference? Stay, dear Emilia! I conjure you on my knees to ſtay and hear me: By all that is ſacred! I was not to blame; you muſt have been impoſed upon by ſome villain who envied my good fortune, and took ſome treacherous method to ruin my love."

Miſs Sophy, who poſſeſſed a large ſtock of good nature, and to whom her couſin had communicated the cauſe of her reſerve, ſeeing the young gentleman ſo much affected with that diſdain, which ſhe knew to be feigned, laid hold on Emilia's ſleeve, ſaying, with a ſmile, "Not quite ſo faſt, Emily, I begin to perceive that this is a love-quarrel, and therefore there may be hopes of a reconciliation; for I ſuppoſe both parties are open to conviction." "For my own part (cried Peregrine, with great eagerneſs), I appeal to Miſs Sophy's deciſion. But why do I ſay appeal? Though I am conſcious of having committed no offence, I am ready to ſubmit to any penance, let it be ever ſo rigorous, that my fair enſlaver herſelf ſhall impoſe, provided it will entitle me to her favour and forgiveneſs at laſt." Emily, well nigh overcome by this declaration, told him, that, as ſhe taxed him with no guilt, ſhe expected no atonement; and preſſed her companion to return into town. But Sophy, who was too indulgent to her friend's real inclination to comply with her requeſt, obſerved, that the gentleman ſeemed ſo reaſonable in his conceſſions, ſhe began to think her couſin was in the wrong, and felt herſelf diſpoſed to act as umpire in the diſpute.

Overjoyed at this condeſcenſion, Mr. Pickle thanked her in the moſt rapturous terms, and, in the tranſport of his expectation, kiſſed the hand of his kind mediatrix; a circumſtance which had a remarkable effect on the countenance of Emilia, who did not ſeem to reliſh the warmth of his acknowledgment.

After many ſupplications on one hand, and preſſing remonſtrances on the other, ſhe yielded at length, and, turning to her lover, while her face was overſpread with bluſhes, "Well, Sir (ſaid ſhe), ſuppoſing I were to put the difference on that iſſue, how could you excuſe the ri-

diculous letter which you ſent to me from Wincheſter?" This expoſtulation introduced a diſcuſſion of the whole affair, in which all the circumſtances were canvaſſed; and Emilia ſtill affirmed, with great heat, that the letter muſt have been calculated to affront her; for ſhe could not ſuppoſe the author was ſo weak as to deſign it for any other purpoſe.

Peregrine, who ſtill retained in his memory the ſubſtance of this unlucky epiſtle, as well as the verſes which were encloſed, could recollect no particular expreſſion which could have juſtly given the leaſt umbrage; and therefore, in the agonies of perplexity, begged that the whole might be ſubmitted to the judgment of Miſs Sophy, and faithfully promiſed to ſtand to her award.

In ſhort, this propoſal was, with ſeeming reluctance, embraced by Emilia, and an appointment made to meet next day, in the ſame place, whether both parties were deſired to come, provided with their credentials, according to which definitive ſentence would be pronounced.

Our lover having ſucceeded thus far, overwhelmed Sophy with acknowledgments on account of her generous mediation, and, in the courſe of their walk, which Emilia was now in no hurry to conclude, whiſpered a great many tender proteſtations in the ear of his miſtreſs, who nevertheleſs continued to act upon the reſerve until her doubts ſhould be more fully reſolved.

Mr. Pickle having found means to amuſe them in the fields till the twilight, was obliged to wiſh them good even, after having obtained a ſolemn repetition of their promiſe to meet him at the appointed time and place; and then retreated to his apartment, where he ſpent the whole night in various conjectures on the ſubject of this letter, the Gordian knot of which he could by no means untie.

One while he imagined that ſome wag had played a trick upon his meſſenger, in conſequence of which Emilia had received a ſuppoſititious letter; but, upon further reflection, he could not conceive the practicability of any ſuch deceit. Then he began to doubt the ſincerity of his miſtreſs, who perhaps had only made that an handle for diſcarding him, at the requeſt of ſome favoured rival; but his own integrity forbade him to harbour this mean ſuſpicion; and therefore he was again involved in

the labyrinth of perplexity. Next day he waited on the rack of impatience for the hour of five in the afternoon, which no ſooner ſtruck, than he ordered Pipes to attend him, in caſe there ſhould be occaſion for his evidence, and repaired to the place of rendezvous, where he had not tarried five minutes before the ladies appeared. Mutual compliments being paſſed, and the attendant ſtationed at a convenient diſtance, Peregrine perſuaded them to ſit down upon the graſs, under the ſhade of a ſpreading oak, that they might be more at their eaſe; while he ſtretched himſelf at their feet, and deſired that the paper on which his doom depended might be examined. It was accordingly put into the hands of his fair arbitreſs, who read it immediately with an audible voice. The firſt two words of it were no ſooner pronounced, than he ſtarted with great emotion, and raiſed himſelf on his hand and knee, in which poſture he liſtened to the reſt of the ſentence; then ſprung upon his feet in the utmoſt aſtoniſhment, and, glowing with reſentment at the ſame time, exclaimed, "Hell and the devil! what's all that? Sure you make a jeſt of me, Madam." "Pray, Sir (ſaid Sophy), give me the hearing for a few moments, and then urge what you ſhall think proper in your own defence." Having thus cautioned him, ſhe proceeded: But, before ſhe had finiſhed one half of the performance, her gravity forſook her, and ſhe was ſeized with a violent fit of laughter, in which neither of the lovers could help joining, notwithſtanding the reſentment which at that inſtant prevailed in the breaſts of both. The judge, however, in a little time, reſumed her ſolemnity, and having read the remaining part of this curious epiſtle, all three continued ſtaring at each other alternately for the ſpace of half a minute, and then broke forth at the ſame inſtant into another paroxyſm of mirth. From this unanimous convulſion, one would have thought that both parties were extremely well pleaſed with the joke; yet this was by no means the caſe.

Emilia imagined, that, notwithſtanding his affected ſurpriſe, her lover, in ſpite of himſelf, had renewed the laugh at her expence, and, in ſo doing, applauded his own unmannerly ridicule. This ſuppoſition could not fail of raiſing and reviving her indignation, while Pere-

nation of their quarrel, favoured with their mutual confidence. In conſequence of this happy pacification, they deliberated upon the means of ſeeing each other often; and as he could not, without ſome previous introduction, viſit her openly at the houſe of her relation, they agreed to meet every afternoon in the park till the next aſſembly, at which he would ſolicit her as a partner, and ſhe be unengaged, in expectation of his requeſt. By this connection he would be entitled to viſit her next day, and thus an avowed correſpondence would of courſe commence. This plan was actually put in execution, and attended with a circumſtance which had well nigh produced ſome miſchievous conſequence, had not Peregrine's good fortune been ſuperior to his diſcretion.

CHAPTER XXIV.

He achieves an adventure at the aſſembly, and quarrels with his governor.

At the aſſembly were no fewer than three gentlemen of fortune, who rivalled our lover in his paſſion for Emilia, and who had ſeverally begged the honour of dancing with her upon that occaſion. She had excuſed herſelf to each, on pretence of a ſlight indiſpoſition that ſhe foreſaw would detain her from the ball, and deſired they would provide themſelves with other partners. Obliged to admit her excuſe, they accordingly followed her advice; and after they had engaged themſelves beyond the power of retracting, had the mortification to ſee her there unclaimed.

They in their turn made up to her, and expreſſed their ſurpriſe and concern at finding her in the aſſembly unprovided, after ſhe had declined their invitation; but ſhe told them that her cold had forſaken her ſince ſhe had the pleaſure of ſeeing them, and that ſhe would rely upon accident for a partner. Juſt as ſhe pronounced theſe words to the laſt of the three, Peregrine advanced as an utter ſtranger, bowed with great reſpect, told her he underſtood ſhe was unengaged, and would think himſelf

highly honoured in being accepted as her partner for the night; and he had the good fortune to ſucceed in his application.

As they were by far the handſomeſt and beſt accompliſhed couple in the room, they could not fail of attracting the notice and admiration of the ſpectators, which inflamed the jealouſy of his three competitors, who immediately entered into a conſpiracy againſt this gaudy ſtranger, whom, as their rival, they reſolved to affront in public. Purſuant to the plan which they projected for this purpoſe, the firſt country dance was no ſooner concluded, than one of them, with his partner, took place of Peregrine and his miſtreſs, contrary to the regulation of the ball. Our lover, imputing his behaviour to inadvertency, informed the gentleman of his miſtake, and civilly deſired he would rectify his error. The other told him, in an imperious tone, that he wanted none of his advice, and bade him mind his own affairs. Peregrine anſwered with ſome warmth, and inſiſted upon his right; a diſpute commenced, high words enſued, in the courſe of which our impetuous youth, hearing himſelf reviled with the appellation of ſcoundrel, pulled off his antagoniſt's periwig, and flung it in his face. The ladies immediately ſhrieked, the gentlemen interpoſed, Emilia was ſeized with a fit of trembling, and conducted to her ſeat by her youthful admirer, who begged pardon for having diſcompoſed her, and vindicated what he had done, by repreſenting the neceſſity he was under to reſent the provocation he had received.

Though ſhe could not help owning the juſtice of his plea, ſhe was not the leſs concerned at the dangerous ſituation in which he had involved himſelf, and, in the utmoſt conſternation and anxiety, inſiſted upon going directly home. He could not reſiſt her importunities; and her couſin being determined to accompany her, he eſcorted them to their lodgings, where he wiſhed them good night, after having, in order to quiet their apprehenſions, proteſted, that, if his opponent was ſatisfied, he ſhould never take any ſtep towards the proſecution of the quarrel. Mean while the aſſembly-room became a ſcene of tumult and uproar. The perſon who conceived himſelf injured, ſeeing Peregrine retire, ſtruggled with his com-

Far from having an authority over Peregrine, Mr. Jolter durſt not even diſoblige him; therefore, inſtead of writing to the commodore, he took horſe immediately, and that ſame night reached Windſor, where he found his ſtray ſheep very much ſurpriſed at his unexpected arrival.

The governor deſiring to have ſome ſerious converſation with him, they ſhut themſelves up an in apartment, when Jolter, with great ſolemnity, communicated the cauſe of his journey, which was no other than his concern for his pupil's welfare; and very gravely undertook to prove, by mathematical demonſtration, that this intrigue, if farther purſued, would tend to the young gentleman's ruin and diſgrace. This ſingular propoſition raiſed the curioſity of Peregrine, who promiſed to yield all manner of attention, and deſired him to begin without further preamble.

The governor, encouraged by this appearance of candour, expreſſed his ſatisfaction in finding him ſo open to conviction, and told him he would proceed upon geometrical principles. Then, hemming thrice, he obſerved, that no mathematical inquiries could be carried on, except upon certain *data*, or conceſſion to truths, that were ſelf-evident; and therefore he muſt crave his aſſent to a few axioms, which he was ſure Mr. Pickle would ſee no reaſon to diſpute. "In the firſt place, then (ſaid he), you will grant, I hope, that youth and diſcretion are, with reſpect to each other, as two parallel lines, which, though infinitely produced, remain ſtill equidiſtant, and will never coincide; and then you muſt allow, that paſſion acts upon the human mind in a ratio compounded of the acuteneſs of ſenſe and conſtitutional heat; and, thirdly, you will not deny that the angle of remorſe is equal to that of precipitation. The *poſtulata* being admitted (added he, taking pen, ink, and paper, and drawing a parallelogram), let youth be repreſented by the right line A B, and diſcretion by another right line C D, parallel to the former. Complete the parallelogram A B C D, and let the point of interſection, B, repreſent perdition. Let paſſion, repreſented under the letter C, have a motion in the direction C A. At the ſame time, let another motion be communicated to it, in the direction C D, it will pro-

ceed in the diagonal C B, and deſcribe it in the ſame time that it would have deſcribed the ſide C A by the firſt motion, or the ſide C D by the ſecond. To underſtand the demonſtration of this corollary, we muſt premiſe this obvious principle, that, when a body is acted upon by a motion of power parallel to a right line given in poſition, this power, or motion, has no effect to cauſe the body to approach towards that line, or recede from it, but to move in a line parallel to a right line only, as appears from the ſecond law of motion; therefore C A, being parallel to D B,"——

His pupil, having liſtened to him thus far, could contain himſelf no longer, but interrupted the inveſtigation with a loud laugh, and told him, that his *poſtulata* put him in mind of a certain learned and ingenious gentleman, who undertook to diſprove the exiſtence of natural evil, and aſked no other *datum* on which to found his demonſtration, but an acknowledgment that *every thing that is is right.* "You may therefore (ſaid he, in a peremptory tone) ſpare yourſelf the trouble of torturing your invention; for after all, I am pretty certain that I ſhall want capacity to comprehend the diſcuſſion of your lemma, and conſequently be obliged to refuſe my aſſent to your deduction."

Mr. Jolter was diſconcerted at this declaration, and ſo much offended at Peregrine's diſreſpect, that he could not help expreſſing his diſpleaſure, by telling him flatly, that he was too violent and headſtrong to be reclaimed by reaſon and gentle means; that he (the tutor) muſt be obliged, in the diſcharge of his duty and conſcience, to inform the commodore of his pupil's imprudence; that, if the laws of this realm were effectual, they would take cognizance of the gipſy who had led him aſtray; and obſerved, by way of contraſt, that, if ſuch a prepoſterous intrigue had happened in France, ſhe would have been clapped up in a convent two years ago.

Our lover's eyes kindled with indignation, when he heard his miſtreſs treated with ſuch irreverence. He could ſcarce refrain from inflicting manual chaſtiſement on the blaſphemer, whom he reproached in his wrath as an arrogant pedant, without either delicacy or ſenſe; and cautioned him againſt uſing any ſuch impertinent freedoms

with his affairs for the future, on pain of incurring more ſevere effects of his reſentment.

Mr. Jolter, who entertained very high notions of that veneration to which he thought himſelf entitled by his character and qualifications, had not bore, without repining, his want of influence and authority over his pupil, againſt whom he cheriſhed a particular grudge ever ſince the adventure of the painted eye; and therefore, on this occaſion, his politic forbearance had been overcome by the accumulated motives of his diſguſt. Indeed, he would have reſigned his charge with diſdain, had he not been encouraged to perſevere, by the hopes of a good living which Trunnion had in his gift, or known how to diſpoſe of himſelf for the preſent to better advantage.

CHAPTER XXV.

He receives a letter from his aunt, breaks with the commodore, and diſobliges the lieutenant, who, nevertheleſs, undertakes his cauſe.

MEANWHILE he quitted the youth in high dudgeon, and that ſame evening diſpatched a letter for Mrs. Trunnion, which was dictated by the firſt tranſports of his paſſion, and of courſe replete with ſevere animadverſions on the miſconduct of his pupil.

In conſequence of this complaint, it was not long before Peregrine received an epiſtle from his aunt, wherein ſhe commemorated all the circumſtances of the commodore's benevolence towards him, when he was helpleſs and forlorn, deſerted and abandoned by his own parents, upbraided him for his miſbehaviour, and neglect of his tutor's advice, and inſiſted upon his breaking off all intercourſe with that girl who had ſeduced his youth, as he valued the continuance of her affection and her huſband's regard.

As our lover's own ideas of generoſity were extremely refined, he was ſhocked at the indelicate inſinuations of Mrs. Trunnion, and felt all the pangs of an ingenuous mind that labours under obligations to a perſon whom it contemns. Far from obeying her injunction, or humb-

ling himſelf by a ſubmiſſive anſwer to her reprehenſion, his reſentment buoyed him up above every ſelfiſh conſideration; he reſolved to attach himſelf to Emilia, if poſſible, more than ever; and although he was tempted to puniſh the officiouſneſs of Jolter, by recriminating upon his life and converſation, he generouſly withſtood the impulſe of his paſſion, becauſe he knew that his governor had no other dependence than the good opinion of the commodore. He could not, however, digeſt in ſilence the ſevere expoſtulations of his aunt; to which he replied by the following letter, addreſſed to her huſband.

"SIR,

"THOUGH my temper could never ſtoop to offer, nor, I believe, your diſpoſition deign to receive, that groſs incenſe which the illiberal only expect, and none but the baſe-minded condeſcend to pay, my ſentiments have always done juſtice to your generoſity, and my intention ſcrupulouſly adhered to the dictates of my duty. Conſcious of this integrity of heart, I cannot but ſeverely feel your lady's unkind (I will not call it ungenerous) recapitulation of the favours I have received; and, as I take it for granted, that you knew and approved of her letter, I muſt beg leave to aſſure you, that, far from being ſwayed by menaces and reproach, I am determined to embrace the moſt abject extremity of fortune, rather than ſubmit to ſuch diſhonourable compulſion. When I am treated in a more delicate and reſpectful manner, I hope I ſhall behave as becomes,

SIR,

Your obliged

P. PICKLE."

The commodore, who did not underſtand thoſe nice diſtinctions of behaviour, and dreaded the conſequence of Peregrine's amour, againſt which he was ſtrangely prepoſſeſſed, ſeemed exaſperated at the inſolence and obſtinacy of his adopted ſon; to whoſe epiſtle he wrote the following anſwer, which was tranſmitted by the hands of Hatchway, who had orders to bring the delinquent along with him to the garriſon.

"Heark ye child,

"You need not bring your fine ſpeeches to bear upon me. You only expend your ammunition to no purpoſe. Your aunt told you nothing but truth; for it is always fair and honeſt to be above board d'ye ſee. I am informed as how you are in chaſe of a painted galley, which will decoy you upon the flats of deſtruction, unleſs you keep a better look-out and a ſurer reckoning than you have hitherto done; and I have ſent Jack Hatchway to ſee how the land lies, and warn you of your danger: If ſo be as you will put about ſhip, and let him ſteer you into this harbour, you ſhall meet with a ſafe birth and friendly reception; but if you refuſe to alter your courſe, you cannot expect any further aſſiſtance from your's, as you behave,

HAWSER TRUNNION."

Peregrine was equally piqued and diſconcerted at the receipt of this letter, which was quite different from what he had expected, and declared in a reſolute tone to the lieutenant, who brought it, that he might return as ſoon as he pleaſed, for he was determined to conſult his own inclination, and remain for ſome time longer where he was.

Hatchway endeavoured to perſuade him by all the arguments which his ſagacity and friendſhip could ſupply, to ſhow a little more deference for the old man, who was by this time rendered fretful and peeviſh by the gout, which now hindered him from enjoying himſelf as uſual, and who might, in his paſſion, take ſome ſtep very much to the detriment of the young gentleman, whom he had hitherto conſidered as his own ſon. Among other remonſtrances, Jack obſerved that mayhaps Peregrine had got under Emilia's hatches, and did not chooſe to ſet her adrift; and if that was the caſe, he himſelf would take charge of the veſſel, and ſee her cargo ſafely delivered; for he had a reſpect for the young woman, and his needle pointed towards matrimony; and as, in all probability, ſhe could not be much the worſe for the wear, he would make ſhift to ſcud through life with her under an eaſy ſail.

Our lover was deaf to all his admonitions, and, having

thanked him for this laſt inſtance of his complaiſance, repeated his reſolution of adhering to his firſt purpoſe. Hatchway having profited ſo little by mild exhortations, aſſumed a more peremptory aſpect, and plainly told him he neither could nor would go home without him; ſo he had beſt make immediate preparation for the voyage.

Peregrine made no other reply to this declaration than by a contemptuous ſmile, and roſe from his ſeat in order to retire; upon which the lieutenant ſtarted up, and poſting himſelf by the door, proteſted, with ſome menacing geſtures, that he would not ſuffer him to run ahead neither. The other, incenſed at his preſumption, in attempting to detain him by force, tripped up his wooden leg, and laid him on his back in a moment; then walked deliberately towards the park, in order to indulge his reflection, which at that time teemed with diſagreeable thoughts. He had not proceeded two hundred ſteps, when he heard ſomething blowing and ſtamping behind him; and, looking back, perceived the lieutenant at his heels, with rage and indignation in his countenance. This exaſperated ſeaman, impatient of the affront he had received, and forgetting all the circumſtances of their former intimacy, advanced with great eagerneſs to his old friend, ſaying, "Look ye, brother, you're a ſaucy boy, and if you was at ſea, I would have your backſide brought to the Davit for your diſobedience; but as we are on ſhore, you and I muſt crack a piſtol at one another; here is a brace, you ſhall take which you pleaſe."

Peregrine, upon recollection, was ſorry for having been laid under the neceſſity of diſobliging honeſt Jack, and very frankly aſked his pardon for what he had done. But this condeſcenſion was miſinterpreted by the other, who refuſed any other ſatisfaction but that which an officer ought to claim; and, with ſome irreverent expreſſions, aſked if Perry was afraid of his bacon. The youth, inflamed at this unjuſt inſinuation, darted a ferocious look at the challenger, told him he had paid but too much regard to his infirmities, and bid him walk forward to the park, where he would ſoon convince him of his error, if he thought his conceſſion proceeded from fear.

About this time, they were overtaken by Pipes, who having heard the lieutenant's fall, and ſeen him pocket his

piſtols, ſuſpected that there was a quarrel in the caſe, and followed him with a view of protecting his maſter. Peregrine ſeeing him arrive, and gueſſing his intention, aſſumed an air of ſerenity, and pretending that he had left his handkerchief at the inn, ordered his man to go thither and fetch it to him in the park, where he would find them at his return. This command was twice repeated before Tom would take any other notice of the meſſage, except by ſhaking his head; but being urged with many threats and curſes to obedience, he gave them to underſtand that he knew their drift too well to truſt them by themſelves. "As for you, Lieutenant Hatchway (ſaid he), I have been your ſhip-mate, and know you to be a ſailor, that's enough; and as for maſter, I know him to be as good a man as ever ſtepped betwixt ſtem and ſtern, whereby, if you have any thing to ſay to him, I am your man, as the ſaying is. Here's my ſapling, and I don't value your crackers of a rope's end." This oration, the longeſt that ever Pipes was known to make, he concluded with a flouriſh of his cudgel, and enforced with ſuch determined refuſals to leave them, that they found it impoſſible to bring the cauſe to mortal arbitrement at that time, and ſtrolled about the park in profound ſilence; during which, Hatchway's indignation ſubſiding, he all of a ſudden thruſt out his hand as an advance to reconciliation, which being cordially ſhaken by Peregrine, a general pacification enſued; and was followed by a conſultation about the means of extricating the youth from his preſent perplexity. Had his diſpoſition been like that of moſt other young men, it would have been no difficult taſk to overcome his difficulties; but ſuch was the obſtinacy of his pride, that he deemed himſelf bound in honour to reſent the letters he had received; and, inſtead of ſubmitting to the pleaſure of the commodore, expected an acknowledgment from him, without which he would liſten to no terms of accommodation. "Had I been his own ſon (ſaid he), I ſhould have bore his reproof, and ſued for forgiveneſs; but knowing myſelf to be on the footing of an orphan, who depends entirely upon his benevolence, I am jealous of every thing that can be conſtrued into diſreſpect, and inſiſt upon being treated with the moſt punctual regard. I ſhall now make application to my father;

who is obliged to provide for me by the ties of nature, as well as the laws of the land; and if he ſhall refuſe to do me juſtice, I can never want employment while men are required for his Majeſty's ſervice."

The lieutenant, alarmed at this intimation, begged he would take no new ſtep until he ſhould hear from him; and that very evening ſet out for the garriſon, where he gave Trunnion an account of the miſcarriage of his negotiation, told him how highly Peregrine was offended at the letter, communicated the young gentleman's ſentiments and reſolution, and, finally, aſſured him, that, unleſs he ſhould think proper to aſk pardon for the offence he had committed, he would, in all appearance, never more behold the face of his godſon.

The old commodore was utterly confounded at this piece of intelligence; he had expected all the humility of obedience and contrition from the young man; and, inſtead of that, received nothing but the moſt indignant oppoſition, and even found himſelf in the circumſtances of an offender, obliged to make atonement, or forfeit all correſpondence with his favourite. Theſe inſolent conditions at firſt threw him into an agony of wrath, and he vented execrations with ſuch rapidity, that he left himſelf no time to breathe, and had almoſt been ſuffocated with his choler. He inveighed bitterly againſt the ingratitude of Peregrine, whom he mentioned with many opprobrious epithets, and ſwore that he ought to be keel-hawled for his preſumption; but when he began to reflect more coolly upon the ſpirit of the young gentleman, which had already manifeſted itſelf on many occaſions, and liſtened to the ſuggeſtions of Hatchway, whom he had always conſidered as an oracle in his way, his reſentment abated, and he determined to take Perry into favour again; this placability being not a little facilitated by Jack's narrative of our hero's intrepid behaviour at the aſſembly, as well as in the conteſt with him in the park. But ſtill this plaguy amour occurred like a bugbear to his imagination; for he held it as an infallible maxim, that woman was an eternal ſource of miſery to man. Indeed this apothegm he ſeldom repeated ſince his marriage, except in the company of a very few intimates, to whoſe ſecrecy and diſcretion he could truſt. Finding Jack himſelf at a nonplus in the

affair of Emilia, he conſulted Mrs. Trunnion, who was equally ſurpriſed and offended, when ſhe underſtood that her letter did not produce the deſired effect; and, after having imputed the youth's obſtinacy to his uncle's unſeaſonable indulgence, had recourſe to the advice of the parſon, who, ſtill with an eye to his friend's advantage, counſelled them to ſend the young gentleman on his travels, in the courſe of which he would, in all probability, forget the amuſements of his greener years. The propoſal was judicious, and immediately approved, when Trunnion, going into his cloſet, after divers efforts, produced the following billet, with which Jack departed for Windſor that ſame afternoon.

"My good lad,

"If I gave offence in my laſt letter, I'm ſorry for't, d'ye ſee; I thought it was the likelieſt way to bring you up; but, in time to come, you ſhall have a larger ſwing of cable. When you can ſpare time, I ſhall be glad if you will make a ſhort trip, and ſee your aunt, and him who is

Your loving godfather
and humble ſervant,
HAWSER TRUNNION.

P. S. If you want money, you may draw upon me payable at ſight."

CHAPTER XXVI.

He becomes melancholy and deſpondent; is favoured with a condeſcending letter from his uncle; reconciles himſelf to his governor, and ſets out with Emilia and her friend for Mrs. Gauntlet's houſe.

PEREGRINE, fortified as he was with pride and indignation, did not fail to feel the ſmarting ſuggeſtions of his preſent ſituation; after having lived ſo long in an affluent and imperious manner, he could ill brook the thoughts of ſubmitting to the mortifying exigencies of life. All the gaudy ſchemes of pomp and pleaſure, which his imagination

imagination had formed, began to diſſolve, a train of melancholy ideas took poſſeſſion of his thoughts, and the proſpect of loſing Emilia was not the leaſt part of his affliction. Though he endeavoured to ſuppreſs the chagrin that preyed upon his heart, he could not conceal the diſturbance of his mind from the penetration of that amiable young lady, who ſympathized with him in her heart, though ſhe could not give her tongue the liberty of aſking the cauſe of his diſorder; for, notwithſtanding all the ardour of his addreſſes, he never could obtain from her the declaration of a mutual flame; becauſe, though he had hitherto treated her with the utmoſt reverence of reſpect, he had never once mentioned the final aim of his paſſion. However honourable ſhe ſuppoſed it to be, ſhe had diſcernment enough to foreſee, that vanity or intereſt, co-operating with the levity of youth, might one day deprive her of her lover, and ſhe was too proud to give him any handle of exulting at her expence. Although he was received by her with the moſt diſtinguiſhed civility, and even an intimacy of friendſhip, all his ſolicitations could never extort from her an acknowledgment of love; on the contrary, being of a gay diſpoſition, ſhe ſometimes coquetted with other admirers, that his attention thus whetted might never abate, and that he might ſee ſhe had other reſources, in caſe he ſhould flag in his affection.

This being the prudential plan on which ſhe acted, it cannot be ſuppoſed that ſhe would condeſcend to inquire into the ſtate of his thoughts, when ſhe ſaw him thus affected; but ſhe, nevertheleſs, impoſed that taſk on her couſin and confident, who, as they walked together in the park, obſerved that he ſeemed to be out of humour. When this is the caſe, ſuch a queſtion generally increaſes the diſeaſe; at leaſt it had that effect upon Peregrine, who replied ſomewhat peeviſhly, "I aſſure you, Madam, you never was more miſtaken in your obſervations."—"I think ſo too (ſaid Emilia), for I never ſaw Mr. Pickle in higher ſpirits."—This ironical encomium completed his confuſion; he affected to ſmile, but it was a ſmile of anguiſh, and in his heart he curſed the vivacity of both. He could not for his ſoul recollect himſelf ſo as to utter one connected ſentence; and the ſuſpicion that they obſerved every circumſtance of his behaviour, threw ſuch a damp

on his ſpirits, that he was quite overwhelmed with ſhame and reſentment, when Sophy, caſting her eyes towards the gate, ſaid, "Yonder is your ſervant, Mr. Pickle, with another man who ſeems to have a wooden leg." Peregrine ſtarted at this intelligence, and immediately underwent ſundry changes of complexion, knowing that his fate in a great meaſure depended upon the information he would receive from his friend.

Hatchway advancing to the company, after a brace of ſea bows to the ladies, took the youth aſide, and put the commodore's letter into his hand, which threw him into ſuch an agitation, that he could ſcarce pronounce "Ladies, will you give me leave?" When, in conſequence of their permiſſion, he attempted to open the billet, he fumbled with ſuch manifeſt diſorder, that his miſtreſs, who watched his motions, began to think there was ſomething very intereſting in the meſſage; and ſo much was ſhe affected with his concern, that ſhe was fain to turn her head another way, and wipe the tears from her lovely eyes.

Meanwhile Peregrine no ſooner read the firſt ſentence, than his countenance, which before was overcaſt with a deep gloom, began to be lighted up, and every feature unbending by degrees, he recovered his ſerenity. Having peruſed the letter, his eyes ſparkling with joy and gratitude, he hugged the lieutenant in his arms, and preſented him to the ladies as one of his beſt friends. Jack met with a moſt gracious reception, and ſhook Emilia by the hand, telling her, with the familiar appellation of *old acquaintance*, that he did not care how ſoon he was maſter of ſuch another clean-going frigate as herſelf.

The whole company partook of this favourable change that evidently appeared in our lover's recollection, and enlivened his converſation with ſuch an uncommon flow of ſprightlineſs and good humour, as even made an impreſſion on the iron countenance of Pipes himſelf, who actually ſmiled with ſatisfaction as he walked behind them.

The evening being pretty far advanced, they directed their courſe homeward; and, while the valet attended Hatchway to the inn, Peregrine eſcorted the ladies to their lodgings, where he owned the juſtneſs of Sophy's

remark, in ſaying he was out of humour, and told them he had been extremely chagrined at a difference which had happened between him and his uncle, to whom (by the letter which they had ſeen him receive) he now found himſelf happily reconciled.

Having received their congratulations, and declined ſtaying to ſup with them, on account of the longing deſire he had to converſe with his friend Jack, he took his leave, and repaired to the inn, where Hatchway informed him of every thing that had happened in the garriſon upon his repreſentations. Far from being diſguſted, he was perfectly well pleaſed with the proſpect of going abroad, which flattered his vanity and ambition, gratified his thirſt after knowledge, and indulged that turn for obſervation, for which he had been remarkable from his moſt tender years. Neither did he believe a ſhort abſence would tend to the prejudice of his love, but, on the contrary, enhance the value of his heart, becauſe he ſhould return better accompliſhed, and conſequently a more welcome offering to his miſtreſs. Elevated with theſe ſentiments, his heart dilated with joy, and the ſluices of his natural benevolence being opened by this happy turn of his affairs, he ſent his compliments to Mr. Jolter, to whom he had not ſpoken during a whole week, and deſired he would favour Mr. Hatchway and him with his company at ſupper.

The governor was not weak enough to decline this invitation; in conſequence of which he forthwith appeared, and was cordially welcomed by the relenting pupil, who expreſſed his ſorrow for the miſunderſtanding which had prevailed between them, and aſſured him, that, for the future, he would avoid giving him any juſt cauſe of complaint. Jolter, who did not want affection, was melted by this acknowledgment, which he could not have expected, and earneſtly proteſted, that his chief ſtudy had always been, and ever ſhould be, to promote Mr. Pickle's intereſt and happineſs.

The beſt part of the night being ſpent in the circulation of a cheerful glaſs, the company broke up; and next morning Peregrine went out with a view of making his miſtreſs acquainted with his uncle's intention of ſending him out of the kingdom for his improvement, and of ſay-

ing every thing which he thought neceſſary for the intereſt of his love. He found her at breakfaſt with her couſin; and, as he was very full of the ſubject of his viſit, had ſcarce fixed himſelf in his ſeat, when he brought it upon the carpet, by aſking, with a ſmile, if the ladies had any commands for Paris? Emilia, at this queſtion, began to ſtare, and her confident deſired to know who was going thither? He no ſooner gave them to underſtand that he himſelf intended in a ſhort time to viſit that capital, than his miſtreſs, with great precipitation, wiſhed him a good journey, and affected to talk with indifference about the pleaſures he would enjoy in France: But when he ſeriouſly aſſured Sophy, who aſked if he was in earneſt, that his uncle actually inſiſted upon his making a ſhort tour, the tears guſhed in poor Emilia's eyes, and ſhe was at great pains to conceal her concern, by obſerving that the tea was ſo ſcalding hot, as to make her eyes water. This pretext was too thin to impoſe upon her lover, or even deceive the obſervation of her friend Sophy, who, after breakfaſt, took an opportunity of quitting the room.

Thus left by themſelves, Peregrine imparted to her what he had learned of the commodore's intention, without, however, mentioning a ſyllable of his being offended at their correſpondence, and accompanied his information with ſuch fervent vows of eternal conſtancy and ſolemn promiſes of a ſpeedy return, that Emilia's heart, which had been invaded by a ſuſpicion that this ſcheme of travelling was the effect of her lover's inconſtancy, began to be more at eaſe; and ſhe could not help ſignifying her approbation of his deſign.

This affair being amicably compromiſed, he aſked how ſoon ſhe propoſed to ſet out for her mother's houſe; and underſtanding that her departure was fixed for next day but one, and that her couſin Sophy intended to accompany her in her father's chariot, he repeated his intention of attending her. In the mean time he diſmiſſed his governor and the lieutenant to the garriſon, with his compliments to his aunt and the commodore, and a faithful promiſe of his being with them in ſix days at fartheſt.

Theſe previous meaſures being taken, he, attended by Pipes, ſet out with the ladies; and they had alſo a convoy for twelve miles from Sophy's father, who at parting

recommended them piouſly to the care of Peregrine, with whom, by this time, he was perfectly well acquainted.

CHAPTER XXVII.

They meet with a dreadful alarm on the road; arrive at their journey's end. Peregrine is introduced to Emily's brother; theſe two young gentlemen miſunderſtand each other. Pickle departs for the garriſon.

As they travelled at an eaſy rate, they had performed ſomething more than one half of their journey, when they were benighted near an inn, at which they reſolved to lodge: The accommodation was very good; they ſupped together with great mirth and enjoyment, and it was not till after he had been warned by the yawns of the ladies, that he conducted them to their apartment; where wiſhing them good night, he retired to his own, and went to reſt.

The houſe was crowded with country people who had been at a neighbouring fair, and now regaled themſelves with ale and tobacco in the yard; ſo that their conſideration, which at any time was but ſlender, being now overwhelmed by this debauch, they ſtaggered into their reſpective kennels, and left a lighted candle ſticking to one of the wooden pillars that ſupported the gallery.—The flame in a little time laid hold on the wood, which was as dry as tinder, and the whole gallery was on fire, when Peregrine ſuddenly waked, and found himſelf almoſt ſuffocated. He ſprung up in an inſtant, ſlipped on his breeches, and throwing open the door of his chamber, ſaw the whole entry in a blaze.

Heavens! what were the emotions of his ſoul, when he beheld the volumes of flame and ſmoke rolling towards the room where his dear Emilia lay! Regardleſs of his own danger, he darted himſelf through the thickeſt of the gloom, when knocking hard, and calling at the ſame time to the ladies, with the moſt anxious entreaty to be admitted, the door was opened by Emilia in her ſhift, who aſked, with the utmoſt trepidation, what was the matter? He made no reply, but ſnatching her up in his

arms, like another Æneas, bore her through the flames to a place of ſafety; where leaving her before ſhe could recollect herſelf, or pronounce one word, but "Alas! my couſin Sophy!" he flew back to the reſcue of that young lady, and found her already delivered by Pipes, who, having been alarmed by the ſmell of fire, had got up, ruſhed immediately to the chamber where he knew theſe companions lodged, and (Emily being ſaved by her lover) brought off Miſs Sophy with the loſs of his own ſhock head of hair, which was ſinged off in his retreat.

By this time the whole inn was alarmed; every lodger, as well as ſervant, exerted himſelf, in order to ſtop the progreſs of this calamity; and there being a well replenifhed horſe-pond in the yard, in leſs than an hour the fire was totally extinguiſhed, without having done any other damage than that of conſuming about two yards of the wooden gallery.

All this time our young gentleman cloſely attended his fair charge, each of whom had ſwooned with apprehenſion; but as their conſtitutions were good, and their ſpirits not eaſily diſſipated, when upon reflection they found themſelves and their company ſafe, and that the flames were happily quenched, the tumult of their fears ſubſided, they put on their clothes, recovered their good humour, and began to rally each other on the trim in which they had been ſecured. Sophy obſerved, that now Mr. Pickle had an indiſputable claim to her couſin's affection; and therefore ſhe ought to lay aſide all affected reſerve for the future, and frankly avow the ſentiments of her heart. Emily retorted the argument, putting her in mind, that, by the ſame claim, Mr. Pipes was entitled to the like return from her. Her friend admitted the force of the concluſion, provided ſhe could not find means of ſatisfying her deliverer in another ſhape; and turning to the valet, who happened to be preſent, aſked, if his heart was not otherwiſe engaged? Tom, who did not conceive the meaning of the queſtion, ſtood ſilent according to cuſtom; and the interrogation being repeated, anſwered, with a grin, "Heart-whole as a biſcuit, I'll aſſure you, Miſtreſs." "What? (ſaid Emilia) have you never been in love, Thomas?" "Yes, forſooth (replied the valet without heſitation), ſometimes of a morning." Peregrine could

not help laughing, and his miſtreſs looked a little diſconcerted at this blunt repartee; while Sophy ſlipping a purſe into his hand, told him there was ſomething to purchaſe a periwig. Tom, having conſulted his maſter's eyes, refuſed the preſent, ſaying, "No, thank ye as much as if I did." And though ſhe inſiſted upon his putting it in his pocket, as a ſmall teſtimony of her gratitude, he could not be prevailed upon to avail himſelf of her generoſity; but, following her to the other end of the room, thruſt it into her ſleeve without ceremony, exclaiming, "I'll be damn'd to hell if I do." Peregrine having checked him for his booriſh behaviour, ſent him out of the room, and begged that Miſs Sophy would not endeavour to debauch the morals of his ſervant, who, rough and uncultivated as he was, had ſenſe enough to perceive that he had no pretenſion to any ſuch acknowledgment. But ſhe argued with great vehemence, that ſhe ſhould never be able to make an acknowledgment adequate to the ſervice he had done her, and that ſhe ſhould never be perfectly eaſy in her own mind, until ſhe found ſome opportunity of manifeſting the ſenſe ſhe had of the obligation: "I do not pretend (ſaid ſhe) to reward Mr. Pipes; but I ſhall be abſolutely unhappy, unleſs I am allowed to give him ſome token of my regard."

Peregrine, thus earneſtly ſolicited, deſired that, ſince ſhe was bent upon diſplaying her generoſity, ſhe would not beſtow upon him any pecuniary gratification, but honour him with ſome trinket, as a mark of conſideration; becauſe he himſelf had ſuch a particular value for the fellow, on account of his attachment and fidelity, that he ſhould be ſorry to ſee him treated on the footing of a common mercenary domeſtic.

There was not one jewel in the poſſeſſion of this grateful young lady, that ſhe would not have gladly given as a recompence, or badge of diſtinction to her reſcuer; but his maſter pitched upon a ſeal ring of no great value, that hung at her watch, and Pipes being called in, had permiſſion to accept that teſtimony of Miſs Sophy's favour. Tom received it accordingly with ſundry ſcrapes, and, having kiſſed it with great devotion, put it on his little finger, and ſtrutted off, extremely proud of his acquiſition.

Emilia, with a moſt enchanting ſweetneſs of aſpect,

told her lover, that he had inſtructed her how to behave towards him; and, taking a diamond ring from her finger, deſired he would wear it for her ſake. He received the pledge as became him, and preſented another in exchange, which ſhe at firſt refuſed, alleging, that it would deſtroy the intent of her acknowledgment; but Peregrine aſſured her, he had accepted her jewel, not as a proof of her gratitude, but as the mark of her love; and that, if ſhe refuſed a mutual token, he ſhould look upon himſelf as the object of her diſdain. Her eyes kindled, and her cheeks glowed, with reſentment, at this impudent intimation, which ſhe conſidered as an unſeaſonable inſult; and the young gentleman, perceiving her emotion, ſtood corrected for his temerity, and aſked pardon for the liberty of his remonſtrance, which he hoped ſhe would aſcribe to the prevalence of that principle alone which he had always taken pride in avowing.

Sophy, ſeeing him diſconcerted, interpoſed in his behalf, and chid her couſin for having practiſed ſuch unneceſſary affectation; upon which Emilia, ſoftened into compliance, held out her finger as a ſignal of her condeſcenſion. Peregrine put on the ring with great eagerneſs, mumbled her ſoft white hand in an ecſtaſy which would not allow him to confine his embraces to that limb, but urged him to ſeize her by the waiſt, and ſnatch a delicious kiſs from her love-pouting lips; nor would he leave her a butt to the ridicule of Sophy, on whoſe mouth he inſtantly committed a rape of the ſame nature; ſo that the two friends, countenanced by each other, reprehended him with ſuch gentleneſs of rebuke, that he was almoſt tempted to repeat the offence.

The morning being now lighted up, and the ſervants of the inn on foot, he ordered ſome chocolate for breakfaſt, and, at the deſire of the ladies, ſent Pipes to ſee the horſes fed, and the chariot prepared, while he went to the bar, and diſcharged the bill.

Theſe meaſures being taken, they ſet out about five o'clock, and having refreſhed themſelves and their cattle at another inn on the road, proceeded in the afternoon. Without meeting with any other accident, they ſafely arrived at the place of their deſtination, where Mrs. Gauntlet expreſſed her joy at ſeeing her old friend Mr. Pickle,

whom, however, ſhe kindly reproached for the long diſcontinuance of his regard. Without explaining the cauſe of that interruption, he proteſted, that his love and eſteem had never been diſcontinued, and that, for the future, he ſhould omit no occaſion of teſtifying how much he had her friendſhip at heart. She then made him acquainted with her ſon, who at that time was in the houſe, being excuſed from his duty by furlough.

This young man, whoſe name was Godfrey, was about the age of twenty, of a middling ſize, vigorous make, remarkably well ſhaped, and the ſcars of the ſmall pox, of which he bore a good number, added a peculiar manlineſs to the air of his countenance. His capacity was good, and his diſpoſition naturally frank and eaſy; but he had been a ſoldier from his infancy, and his education was altogether in the military ſtyle. He looked upon taſte and letters as mere pedantry, beneath the conſideration of a gentleman; and every civil ſtation of life as mean, when compared with the profeſſion of arms. He had made great progreſs in the gymnaſtic ſciences of dancing, fencing, and riding, played perfectly well on the german flute, and, above all things, valued himſelf upon a ſcrupulous obſervance of all the points of honour.

Had Peregrine and he conſidered themſelves upon equal footing, in all probability they would have immediately entered into a league of intimacy and friendſhip: But this ſufficient ſoldier looked upon his ſiſter's admirer as a young ſtudent, raw from the univerſity, and utterly ignorant of mankind; while Squire Pickle beheld Godfrey in the light of a needy volunteer, greatly inferior to himſelf in fortune, as well as every other accompliſhment. This mutual miſunderſtanding could not fail of producing animoſities. The very next day after Peregrine's arrival, ſome ſharp repartees paſſed between them in preſence of the ladies, before whom each endeavoured to aſſert his own ſuperiority. In theſe conteſts our hero never failed of obtaining the victory, becauſe his genius was more acute, and his talents better cultivated than thoſe of his antagoniſt, who therefore took umbrage at his ſucceſs, became jealous of his reputation, and began to treat him with marks of ſcorn and diſreſpect.

His ſiſter ſaw, and dreading the conſequence of his

ferocity, not only took him to taſk in private for his im polite behaviour, but alſo entreated her lover to make allowances for the roughneſs of her brother's education. He kindly aſſured her, that, whatever pains it might coſt him to vanquiſh his own impetuous temper, he would for her ſake endure all the mortifications to which her brother's arrogance might expoſe him; and, after having ſtayed with her two days, and enjoyed ſeveral private interviews, during which he acted the part of a moſt paſſionate lover, he took his leave of Mrs. Gauntlet over night, and told the young ladies he would call early next morning to bid them farewel. He did not neglect this piece of duty, and found the two friends and breakfaſt already prepared in the parlour. All three being extremely affected with the thoughts of parting, a moſt pathetic ſilence for ſome time prevailed, till Peregrine put an end to it, by lamenting his fate, in being obliged to exile himſelf ſo long from the dear object of his moſt intereſting wiſh. He begged, with the moſt earneſt ſupplications, that ſhe would now, in conſideration of the cruel abſence he muſt ſuffer, give him the conſolation which ſhe had hitherto refuſed, namely, that of knowing he poſſeſſed a place within her heart. The confident ſeconded his requeſt, repreſenting, that it was now no time to diſguiſe her ſentiments, when her lover was about to leave the kingdom, and might be in danger of contracting other connections, unleſs he was confirmed in his conſtancy, by knowing how far he could depend upon her love; and, in ſhort, ſhe was plied with ſuch irreſiſtible importunities, that ſhe anſwered, in the utmoſt confuſion, "Though I have avoided literal acknowledgments, methinks the circumſtances of my behaviour might have convinced Mr. Pickle, that I do not regard him as a common acquaintance." "My charming Emily! (cried the impatient lover, throwing himſelf at her feet) why will you deal out my happineſs in ſuch ſcanty portions? Why will you thus mince the declaration which would overwhelm me with pleaſure, and cheer my lonely reflection, while I ſigh amid the ſolitude of ſeparation?" His fair miſtreſs, melted by this image, replied, with the tears guſhing from her eyes, "I'm afraid I ſhall feel that ſeparation more ſeverely than you imagine." Tranſported at

attering confeſſion, he preſſed her to his breaſt, and, her head reclined upon his neck, mingled his tears hers in great abundance, breathing the moſt tender of eternal fidelity. The gentle heart of Sophy could ar this ſcene unmoved; ſhe wept with ſympathy, ncouraged the lovers to reſign themſelves to the will e, and ſupport their ſpirits with the hope of meeting on happier terms. Finally, after mutual promiſes, tations, and endearments, Peregrine took his leave, art being ſo full, that he could ſcarce pronounce ord *Adieu!* and, mounting his horſe at the door, t with Pipes for the garriſon.

CHAPTER XXVIII.

ne is overtaken by Mr. Gauntlet, with whom he fights a duel, ontracts an intimate friendſhip. He arrives at the garriſon, and his mother as implacable as ever. He is inſulted by his brother , whoſe preceptor he diſciplines with a horſe-whip.

der to expel the melancholy images that took poſ- of his fancy, at parting from his miſtreſs, he cal- the flattering ideas of thoſe pleaſures he expected oy in France; and, before he had rode ten miles, agination was effectually amuſed.

ile he thus proſecuted his travels by anticipation, dulged himſelf in all the inſolence of hope, at the g of a lane he was all of a ſudden overtaken by Emi- rother on horſeback, who told him he was riding me way, and ſhould be glad of his company.

s young gentleman, whether prompted by perſonal or actuated with zeal for the honour of his family, llowed our hero, with a view of obliging him to n the nature of his attachment to his ſiſter. Pere- returned his compliment with ſuch diſdainful civi- s gave him room to believe that he ſuſpected his l; and therefore, without further preamble, he de- his buſineſs in theſe words: "Mr. Pickle, you arried on a correſpondence with my ſiſter for ſome and I ſhould be glad to know the nature of it."

To this queſtion our lover replied, "Sir, I ſhould be glad to know what title you have to demand that ſatisfaction." "Sir (anſwered the other), I demand it in the capacity of a brother, jealous of his own honour, as well as of his ſiſter's reputation; and, if your intentions are honourable, you will not refuſe it." "Sir (ſaid Peregrine), I am not at preſent diſpoſed to appeal to your opinion for the rectitude of my intentions; and I think you aſſume a little too much importance, in pretending to judge my conduct." "Sir (replied the ſoldier), I pretend to judge the conduct of every man who interferes with my concerns, and even to chaſtiſe him, if I think he acts amiſs." "Chaſtiſe! (cried the youth, with indignation in his looks), ſure you dare not apply that term to me!" "You are miſtaken (ſaid Godfrey); I dare do any thing that becomes the character of a gentleman." "Gentleman, God wot! (replied the other, looking contemptuouſly at his equipage, which was none of the moſt ſuperb), a very pretty gentleman truly!" The ſoldier's wrath was inflamed by this ironical repetition, the contempt of which his conſcious poverty made him feel; and he called his antagoniſt Preſumptuous Boy! Inſolent Upſtart! with other epithets, which Perry retorted with great bitterneſs. A formal challenge having paſſed between them, they alighted at the firſt inn, and walked into the next field, in order to decide their quarrel by the ſword. Having pitched upon the ſpot, helped to pull off each other's boots, and laid aſide their coats and waiſtcoats, Mr. Gauntlet told his opponent, that he himſelf was looked upon in the army as an expert ſwordſman; and that, if Mr. Pickle had not made that ſcience his particular ſtudy, they ſhould be upon a more equal footing in uſing piſtols. Peregrine was too much incenſed to thank him for his plain dealing, and too confident of his own ſkill, to reliſh the other's propoſal, which he accordingly rejected: Then, drawing his ſword, he obſerved, that, were he to treat Mr. Gauntlet according to his deſerts, he would order his man to puniſh his audacity with a horſe-whip. Exaſperated at this expreſſion, which he conſidered as an indelible affront, he made no reply, but attacked his adverſary with equal ferocity and addreſs. The youth parried his firſt and ſecond thruſt, but received the third in

he outſide of his ſword arm. Though the wound was ſuperficial, he was tranſported with rage at ſight of his own blood, and returned the aſſault with ſuch fury and precipitation, that Gauntlet, loth to take advantage of his unguarded heat, ſtood upon the defenſive. In the ſecond onge, Peregrine's weapon entering a kind of net work in he ſhell of Godfrey's ſword, the blade ſnapped in two, nd left him at the mercy of the ſoldier, who, far from aking an inſolent uſe of the victory he had gained, put p his Toledo with great deliberation, like a man who ad been uſed to that kind of rencounters, and obſerved, hat ſuch a blade as Peregrine's was not to be truſted with man's life: Then, adviſing the owner to treat a gentleman in diſtreſs with more reſpect for the future, he ſlipped on his boots, and, with ſullen dignity of demeanour, talked back to the inn.

Though Pickle was extremely mortified at his miſcarriage in this adventure, he was alſo ſtruck with the behaviour of his antagoniſt, which affected him the more, as he underſtood that Godfrey's *fierte* had proceeded from he jealous ſenſibility of a gentleman declined into the ale of misfortune. Gauntlet's valour and moderation induced him to put a favourable conſtruction on all thoſe circumſtances of that young ſoldier's conduct, which had before given him diſguſt. Though, in any other caſe, he would have induſtriouſly avoided the leaſt appearance of ſubmiſſion, he followed his conqueror to the inn, with a view of thanking him for his generous forbearance, and of ſoliciting his friendſhip and correſpondence.

Godfrey had his foot in the ſtirrup, to mount, when Peregrine coming up to him, deſired he would defer his departure for a quarter of an hour, and favour him with a little private converſation. The ſoldier, who miſtook the meaning of the requeſt, immediately quitted his horſe, and followed Pickle into a chamber, where he expected to find a brace of piſtols loaded on the table; but he was very agreeably deceived, when our hero, in the moſt reſpectful terms, acknowledged his noble deportment in the field, owned, that till then he had miſunderſtood his character, and begged that he would honour him with his intimacy and correſpondence.

Gauntlet, who had ſeen undoubted proofs of Peregrine's

courage, which had conſiderably raiſed him in his eſteem, and had ſenſe enough to perceive that this conceſſion was not owing to any ſordid or ſiniſter motive, embraced his offer with demonſtrations of infinite ſatisfaction. When he underſtood the terms on which Mr. Pickle was with his ſiſter, he proffered his ſervice in his turn, either as agent, mediator, or confident: Nay, to give his new friend a convincing proof of his ſincerity, he diſcloſed to him a paſſion which he had for ſome time entertained for his couſin Miſs Sophy, though he durſt not reveal his ſentiments to her father, leſt he ſhould be offended at his preſumption, and withdraw his protection from the family.

Peregrine's generous heart was wrung with anguiſh, when he underſtood that this young gentleman, who was the only ſon of a diſtinguiſhed officer, had carried arms for the ſpace of five years, without being able to obtain a ſubaltern's commiſſion, though he had always behaved with remarkable regularity and ſpirit, and acquired the friendſhip and eſteem of all the officers under whom he had ſerved.

He would, at that time, with the utmoſt pleaſure, have ſhared his finances with him; but, as he would not run the riſk of offending the young ſoldier's delicacy of honour, by a premature exertion of his liberality, he reſolved to inſinuate himſelf into an intimacy with him, before he would venture to take ſuch freedoms; and, with that view, preſſed Mr. Gauntlet to accompany him to the garriſon, where he did not doubt of having influence enough to make him a welcome gueſt. Godfrey thanked him very courteouſly for his invitation, which he ſaid he could not immediately accept; but promiſed, if he would favour him with a letter, and fix the time at which he propoſed to ſet out for France, he would endeavour to viſit him at the commodore's habitation, and from thence give him a convoy to Dover. This new treaty being ſettled, and a doſſil of lint, with a ſnip of plaſter, applied to our adventurer's wound, he parted from the brother of his dear Emilia, to whom and his friend Sophy he ſent his kindeſt wiſhes; and, having lodged one night upon the road, arrived next day in the afternoon at the garriſon, where he found all his friends in good health, and overjoyed at his return.

The commodore, who was by this time turned of ſeventy, and altogether crippled by the gout, ſeldom went abroad; and, as his converſation was not very entertaining, had but little company within doors; ſo that his ſpirits muſt have quite ſtagnated, had they not been kept in motion by the converſation of Hatchway, and received, at different times a wholeſome fillip from the diſcipline of his ſpouſe, who, by the force of pride, religion, and Coniac, had erected a moſt terrible tyranny in the houſe. There was ſuch a quick circulation of domeſtics in the family, that every ſuit of livery had been worn by figures of all dimenſions. Trunnion himſelf had, long before this time, yielded to the torrent of her arbitrary ſway, though not without divers obſtinate efforts to maintain his liberty; and now, that he was diſabled by his infirmities, when he uſed to hear his Empreſs ſinging the loud Orthyan ſong among the ſervants below, he would often, in whiſpers, communicate to the lieutenant hints of what he would do, if ſo be as how he was not deprived of the uſe of his precious limbs. Hatchway was the only perſon whom the temper of Mrs. Trunnion reſpected, either becauſe ſhe dreaded his ridicule, or looked upon his perſon with eyes of affection. This being the ſituation of things in the garriſon, it is not to be doubted that the old gentleman highly enjoyed the preſence of Peregrine, who found means to ingratiate himſelf ſo effectually with his aunt, that, while he remained at home, ſhe ſeemed to have exchanged the diſpoſition of a tigreſs, for that of a gentle kid: But he found his own mother as implacable, and his father as much hen-pecked as ever.

Gamaliel, who now very ſeldom enjoyed the converſation of his old friend the commodore, had ſome time ago entered into an amicable ſociety, conſiſting of the barber, apothecary, attorney, and exciſeman of the pariſh, among whom he uſed to ſpend the evening at Tunley's, and liſten to their diſputes upon philoſophy and politics with great comfort and edification, while his ſovereign lady domineered at home as uſual, viſited with great pomp in the neighbourhood, and employed her chief care in the education of her darling ſon Gam, who was now in the fifteenth year of his age, and ſo remarkable for his perverſe diſpoſition, that, in ſpite of his mother's

influence and authority, he was not only hated, but alſo deſpiſed, both at home and abroad. She had put him under the tuition of the curate, who lived in the family, and was obliged to attend him in all his exerciſes and excurſions. This governor was a low bred fellow, who had neither experience nor ingenuity, but poſſeſſed a large fund of adulation and ſervile complaiſance, by which he had gained the good graces of Mrs. Pickle, and preſided over all her deliberations, in the ſame manner as his ſuperior managed thoſe of Mrs. Trunnion.

He had one day rode out to take the air with his pupil, who, as I have already obſerved, was odious to the poor people, for having killed their dogs, and broken their encloſures, and, on account of his hump, was diſtinguiſhed by the title of my Lord, when, in a narrow lane, they chanced to meet Peregrine on horſeback.

The young ſquire no ſooner perceived his elder brother, againſt whom he had been inſtructed to bear the moſt inveterate grudge, than he reſolved to inſult him *en paſſant*, and actually rode againſt him full gallop. Our hero, gueſſing his aim, fixed himſelf in his ſtirrups, and, by a dextrous management of the reins, avoided the ſhock in ſuch a manner, as that their legs only ſhould encounter, by which means My Lord was tilted out of his ſaddle, and, in a twinkling, laid ſprawling in the dirt. The governor, enraged at the diſgrace of his charge, advanced with great inſolence and fury, and ſtruck at Peregrine with his whip. Nothing could be more agreeable to our young gentleman than this aſſault, which furniſhed him with an opportunity of chaſtiſing an officious wretch, whoſe petulance and malice he had longed to puniſh. He therefore, ſpurring up his horſe towards his antagoniſt, overthrew him in the middle of a hedge. Before he had time to recollect himſelf from the confuſion of the fall, Pickle alighted in a trice, and exerciſed his horſe-whip with ſuch agility about the curate's face and ears, that he was fain to proſtrate himſelf before his enraged conqueror, and implore his forbearance in the moſt abject terms. While Peregrine was thus employed, his brother Gam had made ſhift to riſe and attack him in the rear; for which reaſon, when the tutor was quelled, the victor faced about, ſnatched the weapon out of his hand, and having

broken it to pieces, remounted his horſe, and rode off, without deigning to honour him with any other notice.

The condition in which they returned produced infinite clamour againſt the conqueror, who was repreſented as a ruffian who had lain in ambuſh to make away with his brother, in whoſe defence the curate was ſaid to have received thoſe cruel ſtripes, that hindered him from appearing for three whole weeks in the performance of his duty at church.

Complaints were made to the commodore, who, having inquired into the circumſtances of the affair, approved of what his nephew had done; adding, with many oaths, that, provided Peregrine had been out of the ſcrape, he wiſhed Crook-back had broke his neck in the fall.

CHAPTER XXIX.

He projects a plan of revenge, which is executed againſt the curate.

Our hero, exaſperated at the villany of the curate in the treacherous miſrepreſentation he had made of this rencounter, determined to practiſe upon him a method of revenge, which ſhould be not only effectual, but alſo unattended with any bad conſequence to himſelf. For this purpoſe he and Hatchway, to whom he imparted his plan, went to the ale-houſe one evening, and called for an empty room, knowing there was no other but that which they had choſen for the ſcene of action. This apartment was a ſort of a parlour that fronted the kitchen, with a window towards the yard; where, after they had ſat ſome time, the lieutenant found means to amuſe the landlord in diſcourſe, while Peregrine, ſtepping out into the yard, by the talent of mimicry, which he poſſeſſed in a ſurpriſing degree, counterfeited a dialogue between the curate and Tunley's wife. This reaching the ears of the publican, for whoſe hearing it was calculated, inflamed his naturally jealous diſpoſition to ſuch a degree, that he could not conceal his emotion, but made an hundred effo[illegible] the room; while the lieutenant, ſmoking [illegible] great gravity, as if he neither heard what [illegible]

notice of the landlord's diſorder, detained him on the ſpot by a ſucceſſion of queſtions which he could not refuſe to anſwer, though he ſtood ſweating with agony all the time, ſtretching his neck every inſtant towards the window through which the voices were conveyed, ſcratching his head, and exhibiting ſundry other ſymptoms of impatience and agitation. At length, the ſuppoſed converſation came to ſuch a pitch of amorous complaiſance, that the huſband, quite frantic with his imaginary diſgrace, ruſhed out at the door, crying, "Coming, Sir." But, as he was obliged to make a circuit round one half of the houſe, Peregrine had got in by the window before Tunley arrived in the yard.

According to the feigned intelligence he had received, he ran directly to the barn, in expectation of making ſome very extraordinary diſcovery; and having employed ſome minutes in rummaging the ſtraw to no purpoſe, returned in a ſtate of diſtraction to the kitchen, juſt as his wife chanced to enter at the other door. The circumſtance of her appearance confirmed him in the opinion that the deed was done. As the diſeaſe of being henpecked was epidemic in the pariſh, he durſt not expreſs the leaſt hint of his uneaſineſs to her, but reſolved to take vengeance on the libidinous prieſt, who, he imagined, had corrupted the chaſtity of his ſpouſe.

The two confederates, in order to be certified that their ſcheme had taken effect, as well as to blow up the flame which they had kindled, called for Tunley, in whoſe countenance they could eaſily diſcern his confuſion. Peregrine, deſiring him to ſit down and drink a glaſs with them, began to interrogate him about his family, and, among other things, aſked him how long he had been married to that handſome wife? This queſtion, which was put with an arch ſignificance of look, alarmed the publican, who began to fear that Pickle had overheard his diſhonour; and this ſuſpicion was not at all removed, when the lieutenant, with a ſly regard, pronounced, "Tunley, wan't you nooſed by the curate?" "Yes, I was," replied the landlord, with an eagerneſs and perplexity of tone, as if he thought the lieutenant knew that *thereby hung a tale*; and Hatchway ſupported this ſuſpicion, by anſwering, "Nay, as for that matter, the curate may be

a very ſufficient man in his way." This tranſition from his wife to the curate, convinced him that his ſhame was known to his gueſts; and in the tranſport of his indignation, he pronounced with great emphaſis, "A ſufficient man! odds heart! I believe they are all wolves in ſheep's clothing. I wiſh to God I could ſee the day, maſter, when there ſhall not be a prieſt, an exciſeman, or a cuſtomhouſeofficer in this kingdom. As for that fellow of a curate, if I do catch him—It don't ſignify talking—But, by the Lord!—Gentlemen, my ſervice to you."

The aſſociates being ſatisfied, by theſe abrupt inſinuations, that they had ſo far ſucceeded in their aim, waited with impatience two or three days, in expectation of hearing that Tunley had fallen upon ſome method of being revenged for this imaginary wrong: But finding that either his invention was too ſhallow, or his inclination too languid, to gratify their deſire of his own accord, they determined to bring the affair to ſuch a criſis, that he ſhould not be able to withſtand the opportunity of executing his vengeance. With this view, they one evening hired a boy to run to Mr. Pickle's houſe, and tell the curate, that Mrs. Tunley being taken ſuddenly ill, her huſband deſired he would come immediately, and pray with her. Meanwhile, they had taken poſſeſſion of a room in the houſe; and Hatchway engaging the landlord in converſation, Peregrine, in his return from the yard, obſerved, as if by accident, that the parſon was gone into the kitchen, in order, as he ſuppoſed, to catechiſe Tunley's wife.

The publican ſtarted at this intelligence, and, under pretence of ſerving another company in the next room, went out to the barn, where arming himſelf with a flail, he repaired to a lane through which the curate was under a neceſſity of paſſing in his way home. There he lay in ambuſh, with fell intent; and when the ſuppoſed author of his ſhame arrived, greeted him in the dark with ſuch a ſalutation, as forced him to ſtagger backward three paces at leaſt. If the ſecond application had taken effect, in all probability that ſpot would have been the boundary of the parſon's mortal peregrination; but, luckily for him, his antagoniſt was not expert in the management of his weapon, which by a twiſt of the thong that connect-

ed the legs, inſtead of pitching upon the head of the aſtoniſhed curate, deſcended in an oblique direction on his own pate, with ſuch a ſwing, that the ſkull actually rung like an apothecary's mortar, and ten thouſand lights ſeemed to dance before his eyes. The curate recollecting himſelf during the reſpite he obtained from this accident, and believing his aggreſſor to be ſome thief who lurked in that place for prey, reſolved to make a running fight, until he ſhould arrive within cry of his habitation. With this deſign he raiſed up his cudgel for the defence of his head, and, betaking himſelf to his heels, began to roar for help with the lungs of a Stentor. Tunley, throwing away the flail, which he durſt no longer truſt with the execution of his revenge, purſued the fugitive with all the ſpeed he could exert; and the other, either unnerved by fear, or ſtumbling over a ſtone, was overtaken before he had run an hundred paces. He no ſooner felt the wind of the publican's fiſt that whiſtled round his ears, than he fell flat upon the earth at full length, and the cudgel flew from his unclaſping hand; when Tunley, ſpringing like a tyger upon his back, rained ſuch a ſhower of blows upon his carcaſe, that he imagined himſelf under the diſcipline of ten pair of fiſts at leaſt; yet the imaginary cuckold, not ſatisfied with annoying the prieſt in this manner, laid hold on one of his ears with his teeth, and bit ſo unmercifully, that the curate was found almoſt entranced with pain by two labourers, at whoſe approach the aſſailant retreated unperceived.

The lieutenant had poſted himſelf at the window, in order to ſee the landlord at his firſt return; and no ſooner perceived him enter the yard, than he called him into the apartment, impatient to learn the effects of their ſtratagem. Tunley obeyed the ſummons, and appeared before his gueſts in all the violence of rage, diſorder, and fatigue; his noſtrils were dilated more than one half beyond their natural capacity, his eyes rolled, his teeth chattered, he ſnored in breathing as if he had been oppreſſed by the night-mare, and ſtreams of ſweat flowed down each ſide of his forehead.

Peregrine, affecting to ſtart at the approach of ſuch an uncouth figure, aſked if he had been wreſtling with a ſpirit; upon which he anſwered, with great vehemence,

"Spirit! No, no, maſter, I have had a roll and tumble with the fleſh. A dog! I'll teach him to come a caterwauling about my doors." Gueſſing from this reply, that his aim was accompliſhed, and curious to know the particulars of the rencounter, "Well then (ſaid the youth), I hope you have prevailed againſt the fleſh, Tunley." "Yes, yes (anſwered the publican), I have cooled his capiſſens, as the ſaying is: I have played ſuch a tune about his ears, that I'll be bound he ſhan't long for muſic this month. A goatiſh ram-faced raſcal! Why, he's a perfect pariſh bull, as I hope to live."

Hatchway, obſerving that he ſeemed to have made a ſtout battle, deſired he would ſit down and recover wind; and after he had ſwallowed a brace of bumpers, his vanity prompted him to expatiate upon his own exploit in ſuch a manner, that the confederates, without ſeeming to know the curate was his antagoniſt, became acquainted with every circumſtance of the ambuſcade.

Tunley had ſcarce got the better of his agitation, when his wife, entering the room, told them by way of news, that ſome waggiſh body had ſent Mr. Sackbut the curate to pray with her. This name inflamed the huſband's choler anew; and, forgetting all his complaiſance for his ſpouſe, he replied, with a rancorous grin, "Add rabbit him! I doubt not but you found his admonitions deadly comfortable!" The landlady looking at her vaſſal with a ſovereign aſpect, "What crotchets (ſaid ſhe) have you got in your fool's head, I trow? I know no buſineſs you have to ſit here like a gentleman with your arms akimbo, when there's another company in the houſe to be ſerved." The ſubmiſſive huſband took the hint, and, without further expoſtulation, ſneaked out of the room.

Next day it was reported, that Mr. Sackbut had been way-laid, and almoſt murdered by robbers, and an advertiſement was paſted upon the church-door, offering a reward to any perſon that ſhould diſcover the aſſaſſin; but he reaped no ſatisfaction from this expedient, and was confined to his chamber a whole fortnight by the bruiſes he had received.

CHAPTER XXX.

Mr. Sackbut and his pupil conſpire againſt Peregrine, who, being appriſed of their deſign by his ſiſter, takes meaſures for counterworking their ſcheme, which is executed by miſtake upon Mr. Gauntlet. This young ſoldier meets with a cordial reception from the commodore, who generouſly decoys him into his own intereſt.

WHEN he conſidered the circumſtances of the ambuſcade, he could not perſuade himſelf that he had been aſſualted by a common thief, becauſe it was not to be ſuppoſed that a robber would have amuſed himſelf in pummeling rather than in rifling his prey: He therefore aſcribed his misfortune to the ſecret enmity of ſome perſon who had a deſign upo· his life; and, upon mature deliberation, fixed his ſuſpicion upon Peregrine, who was the only man on earth from whom he thought he deſerved ſuch treatment. He communicated his conjecture to his pupil, who readily adopted his opinion, and adviſed him ſtrenuouſly to revenge the wrong by a like contrivance, without ſeeking to make a narrower inquiry, leſt his enemy ſhould be thereby put upon his guard.

This propoſal being reliſhed, they in concert revolved the means of retorting the ambuſh with intereſt, and actually laid ſuch a villanous plan for attacking our hero in the dark, that, had it been executed according to their intention, the young gentleman's ſcheme of travelling would have been effectually marred. But their machinations were overheard by Miſs Pickle, who was now in the ſeventeenth year of her age, and, in ſpite of the prejudice of education, entertained in ſecret a moſt ſiſterly affection for her brother Perry, though ſhe had never ſpoke to him, and was deterred by the precepts, vigilance, and menaces of her mother, from attempting any means of meeting him in private. She was not, however, inſenſible to his praiſe, which was loudly ſounded forth in the neighbourhood, and never failed of going to church, and every other place, where ſhe thought ſhe might have an opportunity of ſeeing this amiable brother. With theſe ſentiments it cannot be ſuppoſed that ſhe would hear the conſpiracy without emotion. She was ſhocked at the treacherous barbarity of Gam, and ſhuddered at

the proſpect of the danger to which Peregrine would be expoſed from their malice. She durſt not communicate this plot to her mother, becauſe ſhe was afraid that lady's unaccountable averſion for her firſt-born would hinder her from interpoſing in his behalf, and conſequently render her a ſort of accomplice in the guilt of his aſſaſſins. She therefore reſolved to warn Peregrine of the conſpiracy, an account of which ſhe tranſmitted to him in an affectionate letter, by means of a young gentleman in that neighbourhood, who made his addreſſes to her at that time, and who, at her requeſt, offered his ſervice to our hero, in defeating the projects of his adverſaries.

Peregrine was ſtartled when he read the particulars of their ſcheme, which was no other than an intention to ſally upon him when he ſhould be altogether unprovided againſt ſuch an attack, cut off his ears, and otherwiſe mutilate him in ſuch a manner, that he ſhould have no cauſe to be vain of his perſon for the future.

Incenſed as he was againſt the brutal diſpoſition of his own father's ſon, he could not help being moved at the integrity and tenderneſs of his ſiſter, of whoſe inclinations towards him he had been hitherto kept in ignorance. He thanked the gentleman for his honourable dealing, and expreſſed a deſire of being better acquainted with his virtues; told him, that, now he was cautioned, he hoped there would be no neceſſity for giving him any further trouble; and wrote by him a letter of acknowledgment to his ſiſter, for whom he expreſſed the utmoſt love and regard, beſeeching her to favour him with an interview before his departure, that he might indulge his fraternal fondneſs, and be bleſſed with the company and countenance of one at leaſt belonging to his own family.

Having imparted this diſcovery to his friend Hatchway, they came to a reſolution of countermining the plan of their enemies. As they did not chooſe to expoſe themſelves to the inſinuations of ſlander, which would have exerted itſelf at their expence, had they, even in defending themſelves, employed any harſh means of retaliation, they invented a method of diſappointing and diſgracing their foes, and immediately ſet Pipes at work to forward the preparations.

Miſs Pickle having deſcribed the ſpot which [illegible] aſſaſſins

had pitched upon for the ſcene of their vengeance, our triumvirate intended to have placed a centinel among the corn, who ſhould come and give them intelligence when the ambuſcade was laid; and, in conſequence of that information, they would ſteal ſoftly towards the place, attended by three or four of the domeſtics, and draw a large net over the conſpirators, who, being entangled in the toil, ſhould be diſarmed, fettered, heartily ſcourged, and ſuſpended between two trees in the ſnare, as a ſpectacle to all paſſengers that ſhould chance to travel that way.

The plan being thus digeſted, and the commodore made acquainted with the whole affair, the ſpy was ſent upon duty, and every body within doors prepared to go forth upon the firſt notice. One whole evening did they ſpend in the moſt impatient expectation; but, on the ſecond, the ſcout crept into the garriſon, and aſſured them, that he had perceived three man ſkulking behind the hedge, on the road that led to the public houſe, from which Peregrine and the lieutenant uſed every night to return about that hour. Upon this intelligence, the confederates ſet out immediately with all their implements. Approaching the ſcene with as little noiſe as poſſible, they heard the ſound of blows: and, though the night was dark, perceived a ſort of tumultuous conflict on the very ſpot which the conſpirators had poſſeſſed. Surpriſed at this occurrence, the meaning of which he could not comprehend, Peregrine ordered his myrmidons to halt and reconnoitre; and immediately his ears were ſaluted with an exclamation of "You ſhan't 'ſcape me, raſcal." The voice being quite familiar to him, he all at once divined the cauſe of that confuſion which they had obſerved; and running up to the aſſiſtance of the exclaimer, found a fellow on his knees begging his life of Mr. Gauntlet, who ſtood over him with a naked hanger in his hand.

Pickle inſtantly made himſelf known to his friend, who told him, that, having left his horſe at Tunley's, he was, in his way to the garriſon, ſet upon by three ruffians, one of whom, being the very individual perſon now in his power, had come behind him, and ſtruck with a bludgeon at his head, which, however, he miſſed, and the inſtrument deſcended on his left ſhoulder; that, upon

drawing his hanger, and laying about him in the dark, the other two fled, leaving their companion, whom he had diſabled, in the lurch.

Peregrine congratulated him upon his ſafety, and having ordered Pipes to ſecure the priſoner, conducted Mr. Gauntlet to the garriſon, where he met with a very hearty reception from the commodore, to whom he was introduced as his nephew's intimate friend; not but that, in all likelihood, he would have abated ſomewhat of his hoſpitality, had he known that he was the brother of Perry's miſtreſs; but her name the old gentleman had never thought of aſking, when he inquired into the particulars of his godſon's amour.

The captive being examined, in preſence of Trunnion and all his adherents, touching the ambuſcade, owned, that, being in the ſervice of Gam Pickle, he had been prevailed upon, by the ſolicitations of his maſter and the curate, to accompany them in their expedition, and undertake the part which he had acted againſt the ſtranger, whom he and his employers miſtook for Peregrine. In conſideration of this frank acknowledgment, and a ſevere wound he had received in his right arm, they reſolved to inflict no other puniſhment on this malefactor, than to detain him all night in the garriſon, and next morning carry him before a juſtice of the peace, to whom he repeated all that he had ſaid over night, and, with his own hand, ſubſcribed his confeſſion, copies of which were handed about the neighbourhood, to the unſpeakable confuſion and diſgrace of the curate and his promiſing pupil.

Meanwhile Trunnion treated the young ſoldier with uncommon marks of reſpect, being prepoſſeſſed in his favour by this adventure, which he had ſo gallantly achieved, as well as by the encomiums that Peregrine beſtowed upon his valour and generoſity. He liked his countenance, which was bold and hardy, admired his Herculean limbs, and delighted in aſking queſtions concerning the ſervice he had ſeen.

The day after his arrival, while the converſation turned on this laſt ſubject, the commodore, taking the pipe out of his mouth, "I'll tell you what, brother, (ſaid he), five and forty years ago, when I was third lieutenant of the Warwick man of war, there was a very ſtout young

fellow on board, a ſubaltern officer of marines; his name was not unlike your own, d'ye ſee, being Guntlet, with a G. I remember he and I could not abide one another at firſt, becauſe, d'ye ſee, I was a ſailor and he a landman, till we fell in with a Frenchman, whom we engaged for eight glaſſes, and at length boarded and took. I was the firſt man that ſtood on the enemy's deck, and ſhould have come ſcurvily off, d'ye ſee, if Guntlet had not jumped to my aſſiſtance; but we ſoon cleared ſhip, and drove them to cloſe quarters, ſo that they were obliged to ſtrike; and from that day Guntlet and I were ſworn brothers as long as he remained on board. He was exchanged into a marching regiment, and what became of him afterwards, Lord in heaven knows; but this I'll ſay of him, whether he be dead or alive, he feared no man that ever wore a head, and was, moreover, a very hearty meſs-mate."

The ſtranger's breaſt glowed at this eulogium, which was no ſooner pronounced, than he eagerly aſked if the French ſhip was not the Diligence? The commodore replied with a ſtare, "The very ſame, my lad." "Then (ſaid Gauntlet) the perſon of whom you are pleaſed to make ſuch honourable mention was my own father." "The devil he was! (cried Trunnion, ſhaking him by the hand), I am rejoiced to ſee a ſon of Ned Guntlet in my houſe."

This diſcovery introduced a thouſand queſtions, in the courſe of which the old gentleman learnt the ſituation of his friend's family, and diſcharged innumerable execrations upon the ingratitude and injuſtice of the miniſtry, which had failed to provide for the ſon of ſuch a brave ſoldier. Nor was his friendſhip confined to ſuch ineffectual expreſſions; he that ſame evening ſignified to Peregrine a deſire of doing ſomething for his friend. This inclination was ſo much praiſed, encouraged, and promoted by his godſon, and even ſupported by his counſellor Hatchway, that our hero was empowered to preſent him with a ſum of money ſufficient to purchaſe a commiſſion.

Though nothing could be more agreeable to Pickle than this permiſſion, he was afraid that Godfrey's ſcrupulous diſpoſition would hinder him from ſubjecting himſelf to

any ſuch obligation; and therefore propoſed that he ſhould be decoyed into his own intereſt by a feigned ſtory, in conſequence of which he would be prevailed upon to accept of the money, as a debt which the commodore had contracted of his father at ſea. Trunnion made wry faces at this expedient, the neceſſity of which he could not conceive, without calling in queſtion the common ſenſe of Gauntlet, as he took it for granted, that ſuch offers as thoſe were not to be rejected on any conſideration whatever. Beſides, he could not digeſt an artifice, by which he himſelf muſt own that he had lived ſo many years, without manifeſting the leaſt intention of doing juſtice to his creditor. All theſe objections, however, were removed by the zeal and rhetoric of Peregrine, who repreſented that it would be impoſſible to befriend him on any other terms; that his ſilence hitherto would be imputed to his want of information, touching the circumſtances and condition of his friend; and that his remembering and inſiſting upon diſcharging the obligation, after ſuch an interval of time, when the whole affair was in oblivion, would be the greateſt compliment he could pay to his own honour and integrity.

Thus perſuaded, he took an opportunity of Gauntlet's being alone with him to broach the affair, telling the young man, that his father had advanced a ſum of money for him, when they ſailed together, on account of the meſs, as well as to ſtop the mouth of a clamorous creditor at Portſmouth; and that the ſaid ſum, with intereſt, amounted to about four hundred pounds, which he would now, with great thankfulneſs, repay.

Godfrey was amazed at this declaration, and, after a conſiderable pauſe, replied, that he had never heard his parents mention any ſuch debt; that no memorandum or voucher of it was found among his father's papers; and that, in all probability, it muſt have been diſcharged long ago, although the commodore, in ſuch a long courſe of time, and hurry of occupation, might have forgot the repayment: He therefore deſired to be excuſed from accepting, what, in his own conſcience, he believed was not his due; and complimented the old gentleman upon his being ſo ſcrupulouſly juſt and honourable.

The ſoldier's refuſal, which was matter of aſtoniſhment

to Trunnion, increaſed his inclination to aſſiſt him; and, on pretence of acquitting his own character, he urged his beneficence with ſuch obſtinacy, that Gauntlet, afraid of diſobliging him, was in a manner compelled to receive a draught for the money, for which he ſubſcribed an ample diſcharge, and immediately tranſmitted the order to his mother, whom, at the ſame time, he informed of the circumſtances by which they had ſo unexpectedly gained this acceſſion of fortune.

Such a piece of news could not fail of being agreeable to Mrs. Gauntlet, who, by the firſt poſt, wrote a polite letter of acknowledgment to the commodore, another to her own ſon, importing, that ſhe had already ſent the draught to a friend in London, with directions to depoſit it in the hands of a certain banker, for the purchaſe of the firſt enſigncy to be ſold; and ſhe took the liberty of ſending a third to Peregrine, couched in very affectionate terms, with a kind poſtſcript, ſigned by Miſs Sophy and his charming Emilia.

This affair being tranſacted to the ſatisfaction of all concerned, preparations were ſet on foot for the departure of our hero, on whom his uncle ſettled an annuity of eight hundred pounds, being little leſs than one half of his whole income. By this time indeed the old gentleman could eaſily afford to alienate ſuch a part of his fortune, becauſe he entertained little or no company, kept few ſervants, and was remarkably plain and frugal in his houſe-keeping; Mrs. Trunnion being now ſome years on the wrong ſide of fifty, her infirmities began to increaſe; and though her pride had ſuffered no diminution, her vanity was altogether ſubdued by her avarice.

A Swiſs valet de chambre, who had already made the tour of Europe, was hired for the care of Peregrine's own perſon; Pipes being ignorant of the French language, as well as otherwiſe unfit for the office of a faſhionable attendant, it was reſolved that he ſhould remain in garriſon; and his place was immediately ſupplied by a Pariſian lacquey engaged at London for that purpoſe. Pipes did not ſeem to reliſh this diſpoſition of things; and though he made no verbal objections to it, looked remarkably ſour at his ſucceſſor upon his firſt arrival; but this ſullen fit ſeemed gradually to wear off; and, long before

his maſter's departure, he had recovered his natural tranquillity and unconcern.

CHAPTER XXXI.

The two young gentlemen diſplay their talents for gallantry, in the courſe of which they are involved in a ludicrous circumſtance of diſtreſs, and afterwards take vengeance on the author of their miſhap.

MEANWHILE our hero and his new friend, together with honeſt Jack Hatchway, made daily excurſions into the country, viſited the gentlemen in the neighbourhood, and frequently accompanied them to the chaſe; all three being exceedingly careſſed on account of their talents, which could accommodate themſelves with great facility to the tempers and turns of their entertainers. The lieutenant was a droll in his way, Peregrine poſſeſſed a great fund of ſprightlineſs and good humour, and Godfrey, among his other qualifications already recited, ſung a moſt excellent ſong; ſo that the company of this triumvirate was courted in all parties, whether male or female; and if the hearts of our young gentlemen had not been pre-engaged, they would have met with opportunities in abundance of diſplaying their addreſs in the art of love; not but that they gave looſe to their gallantry without much intereſting their affections, and amuſed themſelves with little intrigues, which, in the opinion of a man of pleaſure, do not affect his fidelity to the acknowledged ſovereign of his ſoul.

In the midſt of theſe amuſements, our hero received an intimation from his ſiſter, that ſhe ſhould be overjoyed to meet him next day, at five o'clock in the afternoon, at the houſe of her nurſe, who lived in a cottage hard by her father's habitation, ſhe being debarred from all opportunity of ſeeing him in any other place by the ſeverity of her mother, who ſuſpected her inclination.

He accordingly obeyed the ſummons, and went at the time appointed to the place of rendezvous, where he met this affectionate young lady, who, when he entered the room, ran towards him with all the eagerneſs of tranſport, flung her arms about his neck, and ſhed a flood of tears in

his boſom before ſhe could utter one word, except a repetition of My dear dear brother! He embraced her with all the piety of fraternal tenderneſs, wept over her in his turn, aſſured her that this was one of the happieſt moments of his life, and kindly thanked her for having reſiſted the example and diſobeyed the injunctions of his mother's unnatural averſion.

He was raviſhed to find by her converſation, that ſhe poſſeſſed a great ſhare of ſenſibility and prudent reflection; for ſhe lamented the infatuation of her parents with the moſt filial regret, and expreſſed ſuch abhorrence and concern at the villanous diſpoſition of her younger brother, as a humane ſiſter may be ſuppoſed to have entertained. He made her acquainted with all the circumſtances of his own fortune; and, as he ſuppoſed ſhe ſpent her time very diſagreeably at home, among characters which muſt be ſhockingly diſtreſſing, profeſſed a deſire of removing her into ſome other ſphere, where ſhe could live with more tranquillity and ſatisfaction.

She objected to this propoſal, as an expedient that would infallibly ſubject her to the implacable reſentment of her mother, whoſe favour and affection ſhe at preſent enjoyed but in a very inconſiderable degree; and they had canvaſſed divers ſchemes of correſponding for the future, when the voice of Mrs. Pickle was heard at the door.

Miſs Julia (that was the young lady's name) finding herſelf betrayed, was ſeized with a violent agitation of fear, and Peregrine ſcarce had time to encourage her with a promiſe of protection, before the door of the apartment being flung open, this irreconcileable parent ruſhed in, and, with a furious aſpect, flew directly at her trembling daughter, when the ſon interpoſing, received the firſt diſcharge of her fury.

Her eyes gleamed with all the rage of indignation, which choked up her utterance, and ſeemed to convulſe her whole frame; ſhe twiſted her left hand in his hair, and with the other buffetted him about the face till the blood guſhed from his noſtrils and mouth; while he defended his ſiſter from the cruelty of Gam, who aſſaulted her from another quarter, ſeeing his brother engaged. This attack laſted ſeveral minutes with great violence, till

at length Peregrine finding himſelf in danger of being overpowered, if he ſhould remain any longer on the defenſive, laid his brother on his back; then he diſentangled his mother's hand from his own hair, and having puſhed her gently out of the room, bolted the door on the inſide; finally, turning to Gam, he threw him out at the window, among a parcel of hogs that fed under it. By this time Julia was almoſt quite diſtracted with terror; ſhe knew ſhe had offended beyond all hope of forgiveneſs, and from that moment conſidered herſelf as an exile from her father's houſe. In vain did her brother ſtrive to conſole her with freſh proteſtations of love and protection; ſhe counted herſelf extremely miſerable in being obliged to endure the eternal reſentment of a parent with whom ſhe had hitherto lived, and dreaded the cenſure of the world, which, from her mother's miſrepreſentation, ſhe was ſenſible would condemn her unheard. That ſhe might not, however, neglect any means in her power of averting this ſtorm, ſhe reſolved to appeaſe, if poſſible, her mother's wrath with humiliation, and even appeal to the influence of her father, weak as it was, before ſhe would deſpair of being forgiven. But the good lady ſpared her this unneceſſary application, by telling her, through the key-hole, that ſhe muſt never expect to come within her father's door again; for from that hour ſhe renounced her as unworthy of her affection and regard. Julia, weeping bitterly, endeavoured to ſoften the rigour of this ſentence, by the moſt ſubmiſſive and reaſonable remonſtrances; but as in her vindication ſhe of neceſſity eſpouſed her elder brother's cauſe, her endeavours, inſtead of ſoothing, ſerved only to exaſperate her mother to an higher pitch of indignation, which diſcharged itſelf in invectives againſt Peregrine, whom ſhe reviled with the epithets of a worthleſs abandoned reprobate.

The youth, hearing theſe unjuſt aſperſions, trembled with reſentment through every limb, aſſuring the upbraider that he conſidered her as an object of compaſſion; "for, without all doubt (ſaid he), your diabolical rancour muſt be ſeverely puniſhed by the thorns of your own conſcience, which this very inſtant taxes you with the malice and falſehood of your reproaches. As for my ſiſter, I bleſs God that you have not been able to infect her with

your unnatural prejudice, which, becauſe ſhe is too juſt, too virtuous, too humane to imbibe, you reject her as an alien to your blood, and turn her out unprovided into a barbarous world. But even there your vicious purpoſe ſhall be defeated; that ſame providence that ſcreened me from the cruelty of your hate ſhall extend its protection to her, until I ſhall find it convenient to aſſert by law that right of maintenance which nature, it ſeems, hath beſtowed upon us in vain. In the mean time, you will enjoy the ſatisfaction of paying an undivided attention to that darling ſon, whoſe amiable qualities have ſo long engaged and engroſſed your love and eſteem."

This freedom of expoſtulation exalted his mother's ire to mere frenzy; ſhe curſed him with the bittereſt imprecations, and raved like a bedlamite at the door, which ſhe attempted to burſt open. Her efforts were ſeconded by her favourite ſon, who denounced vengeance againſt Peregrine, made furious aſſaults againſt the lock, which reſiſted all their applications, until our hero, eſpying his friends Gauntlet and Pipes ſtepping over a ſtile that ſtood about a furlong from the window, called them to his aſſiſtance; giving them to underſtand how he was beſieged, he deſired they would keep off his mother, that he might the more eaſily ſecure his ſiſter Julia's retreat. The young ſoldier entered accordingly, and, poſting himſelf between Mrs. Pickle and the door, gave the ſignal to his friend, who, lifting up his ſiſter in his arms, carried her ſafe without the clutches of this ſhe-dragon, while Pipes, with his cudgel, kept young maſter at bay.

The mother being thus deprived of her prey, ſprung upon Gauntlet like a lioneſs robbed of her whelps, and he muſt have ſuffered ſorely in the fleſh, had he not prevented her miſchievous intent by ſeizing both her wriſts, and ſo keeping her at due diſtance. In attempting to diſengage herſelf from his graſp, ſhe ſtruggled with ſuch exertion, and ſuffered ſuch agony of paſſion at the ſame time, that ſhe actually fell into a ſevere fit, during which ſhe was put to bed, and the confederates retired without further moleſtation.

In the mean time, Peregrine was not a little perplexed about the diſpoſal of his ſiſter whom he had reſcued. He could not endure the thoughts of ſaddling the commodore

with a new expence; and he was afraid of undertaking the charge of Julia, without his benefactor's advice and direction; for the preſent, however, he carried her to the houſe of a gentleman in the neighbourhood, whoſe lady was her godmother, where ſhe was received with great tenderneſs and condolence; and he purpoſed to inquire for ſome creditable houſe, where ſhe might be genteelly boarded in his abſence, reſolving to maintain her from the ſavings of his own allowance, which he thought might very well bear ſuch deduction. But this intention was fruſtrated by the publication of the whole affair, which was divulged next day, and ſoon reached the ears of Trunnion, who chid his godſon for having concealed the adventure; and, with the approbation of his wife, ordered him to bring Julia forthwith to the garriſon. The young gentleman, with tears of gratitude in his eyes, explained his deſign of maintaining her at his own expence, and earneſtly begged that he might not be deprived of that ſatisfaction. But his uncle was deaf to all his entreaties, and inſiſted upon her living in the garriſon, though for no other reaſon than that of being company to her aunt, who, he obſerved, was loſt for want of converſation.

Julia was accordingly brought home, and ſettled under the tuition of Mrs. Trunnion, who, whatever face ſhe might put on the matter, could have diſpenſed with the ſociety of her niece; though ſhe was not without hope of gratifying her pique to Mrs. Pickle, by the intelligence ſhe would receive from the daughter of that lady's economy and domeſtic behaviour. The mother herſelf ſeemed conſcious of this advantage which her ſiſter-in-law had now gained over her, being as much chagrined at the news of Julia's reception in the garriſon, as if ſhe had heard of her own huſband's death. She even tortured her invention to propagate calumnies againſt the reputation of her own daughter, whom ſhe ſlandered in all companies; ſhe exclaimed againſt the commodore as an old ruffian, who ſpirited up a rebellion among her children, and imputed the hoſpitality of his wife, in countenancing them, to nothing elſe but her inveterate enmity to their mother, whom they had diſobliged. She now inſiſted, in the moſt peremptory terms, upon her huſband's renouncing all

commerce with the old lad of the caſtle and his adherents; and Mr. Gamaliel, having by this time contracted other friendſhips, readily ſubmitted to her will, nay, even refuſed to communicate with the commodore one night, when they happened to meet by accident at the public houſe.

CHAPTER XXXII.

The commodore ſends a challenge to Gamaliel, and is impoſed upon by a waggiſh invention of the lieutenant, Peregrine, and Gauntlet.

THIS affront Trunnion could by no means digeſt: He adviſed with the lieutenant upon the ſubject; and the reſult of their conſultation was a defiance which the old commander ſent to Pickle, demanding that he would meet him at ſuch a place on horſeback with a brace of piſtols, and give ſatisfaction for the ſlight he had put upon him.

Nothing could have afforded more pleaſure to Jack than the acceptance of this challenge, which he delivered verbally to Mr. Gamaliel, who was called out from the club at Tunley's for that purpoſe. The nature of this meſſage had an inſtantaneous effect upon the conſtitution of the pacific Pickle, whoſe bowels yearned with apprehenſion, and underwent ſuch violent agitation on the ſpot, that one would have thought the operation proceeded from ſome ſevere joke of the apothecary which he had ſwallowed in his beer.

The meſſenger, deſpairing of a ſatisfactory anſwer, left him in this woeful condition; and, being loth to loſe any opportunity of raiſing the laugh againſt the commodore, went immediately and communicated the whole affair to the young gentlemen, entreating them, for the love of God, to concert ſome means of bringing old Hannibal into the field. The two friends reliſhed the propoſal, and, after ſome deliberation, it was reſolved that Hatchway ſhould tell Trunnion his invitation was accepted by Gamaliel, who would meet him at the place appointed with his ſecond, to-morrow in the twilight, becauſe, if either ſhould fall, the other would have the better chance

for eſcaping in the dark; that Godfrey ſhould perſonate old Pickle's friend, and Peregrine repreſent his own father, while the lieutenant ſhould take care, in loading the piſtols, to keep out the ſhot, ſo that no damage might be done in the rencounter.

Theſe circumſtances being adjuſted, the lieutenant returned to his principal with a moſt thundering reply from his antagoniſt, whoſe courageous behaviour, though it could not intimidate, did not fail to aſtoniſh the commodore, who aſcribed it to the ſpirit of his wife, which had inſpired him. Trunnion that inſtant deſired his counſellor to prepare his cartridge-box, and order the quieteſt horſe in the ſtable to be kept ready ſaddled for the occaſion; his eye ſeemed to lighten with alacrity and pleaſure at the proſpect of ſmelling gunpowder once more before his death; and when Jack adviſed him to make his will, in caſe of accident, he rejected his counſel with diſdain, ſaying, "What! doſt think that Hawſer Trunnion, who has ſtood the fire of ſo many floating batteries, runs any riſk from the louſy pops of a landman? Thou ſhalt ſee, thou ſhalt ſee how I ſhall make him lower his topſails." Next day Peregrine and the ſoldier provided themſelves with horſes at the public houſe, from whence, at the deſtined hour, they rode to the field of battle, each of them being muffled in a great coat, which, with the dimneſs of the light, effectually ſhielded them from the knowledge of the one-eyed commander, who having taken horſe on pretence of enjoying the freſh air, ſoon appeared with Hatchway in his rear. When they came within ſight of each other, the ſeconds advanced, in order to divide the ground, and regulate the meaſures of the combat; when it was determined by mutual conſent, that two piſtols ſhould be diſcharged on each ſide, and that, if neither ſhould prove deciſive, recourſe muſt be had to the broad ſwords, in order to aſcertain the victory. Theſe articles being ſettled, the opponents rode forward to their reſpective ſtations, when Peregrine, cocking his piſtol, and preſenting, counterfeited his father's voice, bidding Trunnion take care of his remaining eye. The commodore took his advice, being unwilling to hazard his day-light, and very deliberately oppoſed the patched ſide of his face to the muzzle of his antagoniſt's piece, deſiring him to do his

duty without further jaw. The young man accordingly fired, and the diſtance being ſmall, the wad of his piſtol took place with a ſmart ſtroke on the forehead of Trunnion, who, miſtaking it for a ball, which he thought was lodged in his brain, ſpurred up his ſteed in a ſtate of deſperation towards his antagoniſt, and holding his piece within two yards of his body, let it off, without any regard to the laws of battle. Surpriſed and enraged to ſee it had made no impreſſion, he hallooed in a terrible tone, "O damn ye, you have got your netting ſtuffed, I ſee;" and, advancing, diſcharged his ſecond piſtol ſo near his godſon's head, that, had he not been defended by his great coat, the powder muſt have ſcorched his face. Having thus thrown away his fire, he remained at the mercy of Peregrine, who, clapping the piece he had in reſerve to his head, commanded him to beg his life, and aſk pardon for his preſumption. The commodore made no reply to this imperious injunction, but dropping his piſtol, and unſheathing his broad ſword in an inſtant, attacked our hero with ſuch incredible agility, that, if he had not made ſhift to ward off the ſtroke with his piece, the adventure, in all likelihood, would have turned out a very tragical joke. Peregrine finding it would be in vain for him to think of drawing his weapon, or of ſtanding on the defenſive againſt this furious aggreſſor, very fairly clapped ſpurs to his nag, and ſought his ſafety in flight. Trunnion purſued him with infinite eagerneſs, and his ſteed being the better of the two, would have overtaken the fugitive to his peril, had he not been unfortunately encountered by the boughs of a tree, that happened to ſtand on his blind ſide, and incommoded him ſo much, that he was fain to quit his ſword, and lay hold on the mane, in order to maintain his ſeat. Perry perceiving his diſaſter, wheeled about, and now finding leiſure to produce his weapon, returned upon his diſarmed foe, brandiſhing his Ferrara, threatening to make him ſhorter by the head, if he would not immediately crave quarter and yield. There was nothing farther from the intention of the old gentleman than ſuch ſubmiſſion, which he flatly refuſed to pay, alleging that he had already compelled his enemy to clap on all his ſails, and that his own preſent misfortune was owing to accident, all one as if a ſhip ſhould be attacked,

after ſhe had been obliged to heave her guns overboard in a ſtorm.

Before Peregrine had time to anſwer this remonſtrance, the lieutenant interpoſed, and, taking cognizance of the caſe, eſtabliſhed a truce, until he and the other ſecond ſhould diſcuſs and decide upon the merits of the cauſe. They accordingly retired to a ſmall diſtance, and, after having conferred a few minutes, Hatchway returned, and pronounced the commodore vanquiſhed by the chance of war.

Never was rage more tranſported than that which took poſſeſſion of old Hannibal, when he heard the ſentence: it was ſome time before he could utter aught, except the reproachful expreſſion, *You lie!* which he repeated more than twenty times, in a ſort of delirious inſenſibility. When he recovered the further uſe of ſpeech, he abuſed the arbitrators with ſuch bitter invectives, renouncing their ſentence, and appealing to another trial, that the confederates began to repent of having carried the joke ſo far; and Peregrine, in order to appeaſe his choler, owned himſelf overcome.

This acknowledgment calmed the tumult of his wrath, though he could not for ſome days forgive the lieutenant; and the two young gentlemen rode back to Tunley's, while Hatchway, taking the commodore's horſe by the bridle, reconducted him to his manſion, growling all the way to Jack for his unjuſt and unfriendly decree; though he could not help obſerving, as how he had made his words good, in making his adverſary ſtrike his topſails: "And yet (ſaid he), before God! I think the fellow's head is made of a wool-pack; for my ſhot rebounded from his face like a wad of ſpun-yarn from the ſide of a ſhip. But if ſo be that ſon of a bitch of a tree had'nt come athwart my weather-bow, d'ye ſee, I'll be damn'd if I hadn't ſnapt his main-yard in the ſlings, and mayhap let out his bulge water into the bargain." He ſeemed particularly vain of this exploit, which dwelt upon his imagination, and was cheriſhed as the child of his old age; for though he could not with decency rehearſe it to the young men and his wife at ſupper, he gave ſhrewd hints of his own manhood, even at theſe years, and atteſted Hatchway as a voucher for his mettle; while the

triumvirate, diverted by his vanity, enjoyed in ſecret the ſucceſs of their impoſition.

CHAPTER XXXIII.

Peregrine takes his leave of his aunt and ſiſter; ſets out from the garriſon; parts with his uncle and Hatchway on the road, and, with his governor, arrives in ſafety at Dover.

THIS, however, was the laſt effort of invention which they practiſed upon him; and every thing being now prepared for the departure of his godſon, that hopeful youth in two days took leave of all his friends in the neighbourhood. He was cloſeted two whole hours with his aunt, who enriched him with many pious advices, recapitulated all the benefits which through her means had been conferred upon him ſince his infancy, cautioned him againſt the temptations of lewd women, who bring many a man to a morſel of bread; laid ſtrict injunctions upon him to live in the fear of the Lord, and the true Proteſtant faith, to eſchew quarrels and contention, to treat Mr. Jolter with reverence and regard, and, above all things, to abſtain from the beaſtly ſin of drunkenneſs, which expoſed a man to the ſcorn and contempt of his fellow-creatures, and, by diveſting him of reaſon and reflection, rendered him fit for all manner of vice and debauchery. She recommended to him economy and the care of his health, bade him remember the honour of his family; and, in all the circumſtances of his behaviour, aſſured him, that he might always depend upon the friendſhip and generoſity of the commodore. Finally, preſenting him with her own picture ſet in gold, and a hundred guineas from her privy purſe, ſhe embraced him affectionately, and wiſhed him all manner of happineſs and proſperity.

Being thus kindly diſmiſſed by Mrs. Trunnion, he locked himſelf up with his ſiſter Julia, whom he admoniſhed to cultivate her aunt with the moſt complaiſant and reſpectful attention, without ſtooping to any circumſtance of ſubmiſſion that ſhe ſhould judge unworthy of her prac-

him; he proteſted, that his chief ſtudy ſhould be to make her amends for the privilege ſhe had forfeited by her affection for him; entreated her to enter into no engagement without his knowledge and approbation; put into her hand the purſe which he had received from his aunt, to defray her pocket expences in his abſence, and parted from her, not without tears, after ſhe had for ſome minutes hung about his neck, kiſſing him, and weeping in the moſt pathetic ſilence.

Having performed theſe duties of affection and conſanguinity over night, he went to bed, and was, by his own direction, called at four o'clock in the morning, when he found the poſt-chaiſe, coach, and riding horſes ready at the gate, his friends Gauntlet and Hatchway on foot, the commodore himſelf almoſt dreſſed, and every ſervant in the garriſon aſſembled in the yard, to wiſh him a good journey. Our hero ſhook each of theſe humble friends by the hand, tipping them at the ſame time with marks of his bounty; and was very much ſurpriſed when he could not perceive his old attendant Pipes among the number. When he expreſſed his wonder at this diſreſpectful omiſſion of Tom, ſome of thoſe preſent ran to his chamber, in order to give him a call, but his hammock and room were both deſerted, and they ſoon returned with an account of his having eloped. Peregrine was diſturbed at this information, believing that the fellow had taken ſome deſperate courſe in conſequence of his being diſmiſſed from his ſervice, and began to wiſh that he had indulged his inclination, by retaining him ſtill about his perſon. However, as there was now no other remedy, he recommended him ſtrenuouſly to the particular favour and diſtinction of his uncle and Hatchway, in caſe he ſhould appear again; and, as he went out of the gate, was ſaluted with three cheers by all the domeſtics in the family. The commodore, Gauntlet, lieutenant, Peregrine, and Jolter, went into the coach together, that they might enjoy each other's converſation as much as poſſible, reſolving to breakfaſt at an inn upon the road, where Trunnion and Hatchway intended to bid our adventurer farewel; the valet de chambre got into the poſt-chaiſe, the French lacquey rode one horſe, and led another, one of the valets of the garriſon mounted at the back of the coach,

and thus the cavalcade ſet out on the road to Dover. As the commodore could not bear the fatigue of jolting, they travelled at an eaſy pace during the firſt ſtage, ſo that the old gentleman had an opportunity of communicating his exhortations to his godſon, with regard to his conduct abroad; he adviſed him, now that he was going into foreign parts, to be upon his guard againſt the fair weather of the French politeſſe, which was no more to be truſted than a whirlpool at ſea. He obſerved that many young men had gone to Paris with good cargoes of ſenſe, and returned with a great deal of canvas, and no ballaſt at all, whereby they became crank all the days of their lives, and ſometimes carried their keels above water. He deſired Mr. Jolter to keep his pupil out of the clutches of thoſe ſharking prieſts, who lie in wait to make converts of all young ſtrangers; and, in a particular manner, cautioned the youth againſt carnal converſation with the Pariſian dames, who, he underſtood, were no better than gaudy fireſhips, ready primed with death and deſtruction.

Peregrine liſtened with great reſpect, thanking him for his kind admonitions, which he faithfully promiſed to obſerve. They halted and breakfaſted at the end of the ſtage, where Jolter provided himſelf with a horſe, and the commodore ſettled the method of correſponding with his nephew. The minute of parting being arrived, the old commander wrung his godſon by the hand, ſaying, "I wiſh thee a proſperous voyage and good cheer, my lad; my timbers are now a little crazy, d'ye ſee; and God knows if I ſhall keep afloat till ſuch time as I ſee thee again; but howſomever, hap what will, thou wilt find thyſelf in a condition to keep in the line with the beſt of thy fellows." He then reminded Gauntlet of his promiſe to call at the garriſon in his return from Dover, and imparted ſomething in a whiſper to the governor, while Jack Hatchway, unable to ſpeak, pulled his hat over his eyes, and, ſqueezing Peregrine by the hand, gave him an iron piſtol of curious workmanſhip, as a memorial of his friendſhip. Our youth, who was not unmoved on this occaſion, received the pledge, which he acknowledged with the preſent of a ſilver tobacco-box, bought for that purpoſe; and the two lads of the caſtle getting

into the coach, were driven homewards in a ſtate of ſilent dejection.

Godfrey and Peregrine ſeated themſelves in the poſt-chaiſe, and Jolter, the valet de chambre, and lacquey, beſtriding their beaſts, they proceeded for the place of their deſtination, at which they arrived in ſafety that ſame night, and beſpoke a paſſage in the packet-boat, which was to ſail next day.

CHAPTER XXXIV.

He adjuſts the method of his correſpondence with Gauntlet; meets by accident with an Italian charlatan, and a certain apothecary, who proves to be a noted character.

THERE the two friends adjuſted the articles of their future correſpondence; and Peregrine having written a letter to his miſtreſs, wherein he renewed his former vows of eternal fidelity, it was intruſted to the care of her brother; while Mr. Jolter, at the deſire of his pupil, provided an elegant ſupper, and ſome excellent Burgundy, that they might ſpend this eve of his departure with the greater enjoyment.

Things being thus diſpoſed, and a ſervant employed in laying the cloth, their ears were of a ſudden invaded by a ſtrange tumultuous noiſe in the next room, occaſioned by the overthrow of tables, chairs, and glaſſes, with odd unintelligible exclamations in broken French, and a jargon of threats in the Welch dialect. Our young gentlemen ran immediately into the apartment from whence this clamour ſeemed to proceed, and found a thin meagre ſwarthy figure, gaſping in all the agony of fear, under the hands of a ſquat, thick, hard-featured man, who collared him with great demonſtrations of wrath, ſaying, "If you was as mighty a magician as Owen Glendower, or the witch of Entor, look you, ay, or as Paul Beor himſelf, I will meke pold, by the aſſiſtance of Got, and in his Majeſty's naam, to ſeize and ſecure, and confine and confront you, until ſuch time as you ſuffer and endure and undergo the pains and penalties of the law, for your diabolical practices. Shentlements (added he, turning to

our adventurers), I take you to witneſs that I proteſt and aſſert and avow, that this perſon is as pig a necromancer as you would deſire to behold; and I ſupplicate and beſeech and entreat of you, that he may be prought pefore his petters, and compelled to give an account of his compact and commerce with the imps of darkneſs, look you; for as I am a Chriſtian ſoul, and hope for joyful reſurrection, I have this pleſſed evening ſeen him perform ſuch things as could not be done without the aid and inſtruction and connivance of the tevil."

Gauntlet ſeemed to enter into the ſentiments of this Welch reformer, and actually laid hold on the delinquent's ſhoulder, crying, "Damn the raſcal! I'll lay any wager that he's a Jeſuit, for none of his order travel without a familiar." But Peregrine, who looked upon the affair in another point of view, interpoſed in behalf of the ſtranger, whom he freed from his aggreſſors, obſerving that there was no occaſion to uſe violence, and aſked in French what he had done to incur the cenſure of the informer. The poor foreigner, more dead than alive, anſwered that he was an Italian charlatan, who had practiſed with ſome reputation in Padua, until he had the misfortune to attract the notice of the Inquiſition, by exhibiting certain wonderful performances by his ſkill in natural knowledge, which that tribunal conſidered as the effects of ſorcery, and perſecuted him accordingly; ſo that he had been fain to make a precipitate retreat into France, where not finding his account in his talents, he was now arrived in England, with a view of practiſing his art in London; and that, in conſequence of a ſpecimen which he had given to a company below, the choleric gentleman had followed him up ſtairs to his own apartment, and aſſaulted him in that inhoſpitable manner. He therefore earneſtly begged that our hero would take him under his protection; and if he entertained the leaſt ſuſpicion of his employing preternatural means in the operations of his art, he would freely communicate all the ſecrets in his poſſeſſion.

The youth diſpelled his apprehenſion, by aſſuring him that he was in no danger of ſuffering for his art in England, where, if ever he ſhould be queſtioned by the zeal of ſuperſtitious individuals, he had nothing to do but ap-

peal to the next juſtice of the peace, who would immediately quit him of the charge, and puniſh his accuſers for their impertinence and indiſcretion.

He then told Gauntlet and the Welchman that the ſtranger had a good action againſt them for an aſſault, by virtue of an act of parliament, which makes it criminal for any perſon to accuſe another of ſorcery and witchcraft, theſe idle notions being now juſtly exploded by all ſenſible men. Mr. Jolter, who had by this time joined the company, could not help ſignifying his diſſent from this opinion of his pupil, which he endeavoured to invalidate by the authority of Scripture, quotations from the fathers, and the confeſſion of many wretches who ſuffered death for having carried on correſpondence with evil ſpirits, together with the evidence of Satan's Inviſible World, and Moreton's Hiſtory of Witchcraft.

The ſoldier corroborated theſe teſtimonies by facts that had happened within the ſphere of his own knowledge; and, in particular, mentioned the caſe of an old woman in the pariſh in which he was born, who uſed to transform herſelf into the ſhapes of ſundry animals, and was at laſt killed by ſmall ſhot in the character of a hare. The Welchman thus ſupported, expreſſed his ſurpriſe at hearing that the legiſlature had ſhown ſuch tenderneſs for criminals of ſo dark a hue; and offered to prove, by undeniable inſtances, that there was not a mountain in Wales which had not been in his memory the ſcene of necromancy and witchcraft; "Wherefore (ſaid he), I am aſſuredly more than apove aſtoniſhed and confounded and concerned, that the parliament of Great Pritain ſhould, in their great wiſdoms, and their prudence, and their penetration, give countenance and encouragement, look you, to the works of darkneſs and the empire of Pelzepup; ofer and apove the evidence of holy writ, and thoſe writers who have been quoted by that aggurate and learned ſhentleman, we are informed by profane hiſtory, of the pribbles, and pranks of the old ſerpent, in the bortents and oragles of antiquity; as you will find in that moſt excellent hiſtorian Bolypius, and Titus Liſius; ay, and moreofer, in the commentaries of Julius Cæſar himſelf, who, as the olc world knows, was a moſt famous, and a moſt faliant, and a moſt wiſe, and a moſt prudent,

and a moſt fortunate chiftan, and a moſt renowned orator; ay, and a moſt elegant writer to boot."

Peregrine did not think proper to enter the liſts of diſpute with three ſuch obſtinate antagoniſts; but contented himſelf with ſaying, that he believed it would be no difficult matter to impugn the arguments they had advanced, though he did not find himſelf at all diſpoſed to undertake the taſk, which muſt of courſe break in upon the evening's entertainment. He therefore invited the Italian to ſupper, and aſked the ſame favour of his accuſer, who ſeemed to have ſomething curious and characteriſtic in his manner and diſpoſition, reſolving to make himſelf an eye-witneſs of thoſe ſurpriſing feats, which had given offence to the choleric Briton. This ſcrupulous gentleman thanked our hero for his courteſy, but declined communicating with the ſtranger, until his character ſhould be further explained; upon which his inviter, after ſome converſation with the charlatan, aſſuring him that he would himſelf undertake for the innocence of his art; and then he was prevailed upon to favour them with his company.

In the courſe of the converſation, Peregrine learnt that the Welchman was a ſurgeon of Canterbury, who had been called into a conſultation at Dover, and, underſtanding that his name was Morgan, took the liberty of aſking if he was not the perſon ſo reſpectfully mentioned in the Adventures of Roderick Random. Mr. Morgan aſſumed a look of gravity and importance at this interrogation, and, ſcrewing up his mouth, anſwered, "Mr. Rantum, my goot Sir, I believe upon my conſcience and ſalfation, is my very good frient and well-wiſher; and he and I have been companions, and meſſmates, and fellow-ſufferers, look you; but nevertheleſs, for all that, peradventure he hath not pehaved with ſo much complaiſance and affability, and reſpect, as I might have expected from him; pecauſe he hath revealed, and tivulged, and publiſhed our private affairs, without my knowledge, and privity, and conſent; but, as Got is my Saviour, I think he had no evil intention in his pelly: and though there be certain perſons, look you, who, as I am told, take upon them to laugh at his deſcriptions of my perſon, deportment, and converſation, I do affirm and maintain, and inſiſt with my heart,

and my plood, and my ſoul, that thoſe perſons are no petter than ignorant aſſes, and that they know not how to diſcern, and diſtinguiſh, and define true ridicule, or, as Ariſtotle calls it, the *to geloion*, no more, look you, than a herd of mountain goats; for I will make pold to obſerve, and I hope this goot company will be of the ſame opinion, that there is nothing ſaid of me in that performance which is unworthy of a Chriſtian and a ſhentleman."

Our young gentleman and his friends acquieſced in the juſtneſs of his obſervation. Peregrine particularly aſſured him, that, from reading the book, he had conceived the utmoſt regard and veneration for his character; and that he thought himſelf extremely fortunate in having this opportunity of enjoying his converſation. Morgan, not a little proud of ſuch advances from a perſon of Peregrine's appearance, returned the compliment with a profuſion of civility, and, in the warmth of acknowledgement, expreſſed a deſire of ſeeing him and his company at his houſe in Canterbury: "I will not pretend or preſume, kind Sir (ſaid he), to entertain you according to your merits and deſerts; but you ſhall be as welcome to my poor cottage, and my wife and family, as the Prince of Wales himſelf; and it ſhall go hard, if, one way or other, I do not find ways and means of making you confeſs that there is ſome goot fellowſhip in an ancient Briton: For though I am no petter than a ſimple apothecary, I have as goot plood circulating in my veins as any he in the country (and I can deſcribe, and delineate, and demonſtrate my pedigree to the ſatisfaction of the 'ole 'orld; and moreofer, by Got's goot providence and aſſiſtance, I can afford to treat my friend with a joint of goot mutton, and a pottle of excellent wine, and no tradeſman can peard me with a bill." He was congratulated on his happy ſituation, and aſſured that our youth would viſit him on his return from France, provided he ſhould take Canterbury on his route. As Peregrine manifeſted an inclination of being acquainted with the ſtate of his affairs, he very complaiſantly ſatisfied his curioſity, by giving him to know, that his ſpouſe had left off breeding, after having bleſſed him with two boys and a girl, who were ſtill alive and well; that he lived in good

eſteem with his neighbours, and by his practice, which was conſiderably extended immediately after the publication of Roderick Random, had ſaved ſome thouſand pounds. He had begun to think of retiring among his own relations in Glamorganſhire, though his wife had made objections to this propoſal, and oppoſed the execution of it with ſuch obſtinacy, that he had been at infinite pains in aſſerting his own prerogative, by convincing her, both from reaſon and example, that he was king and prieſt in his own family, and that ſhe owed the moſt implicit ſubmiſſion to his will. He likewiſe informed the company, that he had lately ſeen his friend Roderick, who had come from London on purpoſe to viſit him, after having gained his law-ſuit with Mr. Topehall, who was obliged to pay Narciſſa's fortune; that Mr. Random, in all appearance, led a very happy life in the converſation of his father and bed-fellow, by whom he enjoyed a ſon and daughter; and that Morgan had received, in a preſent form him, a piece of very fine linen of his wife's own making, ſeveral kits of ſalmon, and two caſks of pickled pork, the moſt delicate he had ever taſted, together with a barrel of excellent herrings for ſalmagundy, which he knew to be his favourite diſh.

This topic of converſation being diſcuſſed, the Italian was deſired to exhibit a ſpecimen of his art, and in a few minutes conducted the company into the next room, where, to their great aſtoniſhment and affright, they beheld a thouſand ſerpents winding along the cieling. Morgan, ſtruck with this phænomenon, which he had not ſeen before, began to utter exorciſms with great devotion, Mr. Jolter ran terrified out of the room, Gauntlet drew his hanger, and Peregrine himſelf was diſconcerted. The operator perceiving their confuſion, deſired them to retire, and calling them back in an inſtant, there was not a viper to be ſeen. He raiſed their admiration by ſundry other performances, and the Welchman's former opinion and abhorrence of his character began to recur, when, in conſideration of the civility with which he had been treated, this Italian imparted to them all the methods by which he had acted ſuch wonders, that were no other than the effects of natural cauſes curiouſly combined; ſo that Morgan became a convert to his ſkill, aſked pardon for the

ſuſpición he had entertained, and invited the ſtranger to paſs a few days with him at Canterbury. The ſcruples of Godfrey and Jolter were removed at the ſame time, and Peregrine teſtified his ſatisfaction by a handſome gratuity which he beſtowed upon their entertainer.

The evening being ſpent in this ſociable manner, every man retired to his reſpective chamber, and next morning they breakfaſted together, when Morgan declared he would ſtay till he ſhould ſee our hero fairly embarked, that he might have the pleaſure of Mr. Gauntlet's company to his own habitation: Meanwhile, by the ſkipper's advice, the ſervants were ordered to carry a ſtore of wine and proviſion on board, in caſe of accident; and as the packet-boat could not ſail before one o'clock, the company walked up hill to viſit the caſtle, where they ſaw the ſword of Julius Cæſar, and Queen Elizabeth's pocket-piſtol, repeated Shakſpeare's deſcription, while they ſurveyed the chalky cliffs on each ſide, and caſt their eyes towards the city of Calais, that was obſcured by a thick cloud, which did not much regale their eye-ſight, becauſe it ſeemed to portend foul weather.

Having viewed every thing remarkable in this place, they returned to the pier, where, after the compliments of parting, and an affectionate embrace between the two young gentlemen, Peregrine and his governor ſtepped aboard, the ſails were hoiſted, and they went to ſea with a fair wind, while Godfrey, Morgan, and the conjurer walked back to the inn, from whence they ſet out for Canterbury, before dinner.

CHAPTER XXXV.

He embarks for France; is overtaken by a ſtorm; is ſurpriſed with the appearance of Pipes; lands at Calais, and has an affray with the officers of the cuſtom-houſe.

SCARCE had the veſſel proceeded two leagues on the paſſage, when the wind ſhifting, blew directly in their teeth; ſo that they were obliged to haul upon a wind, and alter their courſe. The ſea running pretty high at the ſame

time, our hero, who was below in his cabin, began to be ſqueamiſh, and, in conſequence of the ſkipper's advice, went upon the deck for the comfort of his ſtomach; while the governor, experienced in theſe diſaſters, ſlipt into bed, where he lay at his eaſe, amuſing himſelf with a treatiſe on the cycloid, with algebraical demonſtrations, which never failed to engage his imagination in the moſt agreeable manner.

In the mean time the wind increaſed to a very hard gale, the veſſel pitched with great violence, the ſea waſhed over the decks, the maſter was alarmed, the crew were confounded, the paſſengers were overwhelmed with ſickneſs and fear, and univerſal diſtraction enſued. In the midſt of this uproar, Peregrine holding faſt by the taffrill, and looking ruefully ahead, the countenance of Pipes preſented itſelf to his aſtoniſhed view, riſing as it were from the hold of the ſhip. At firſt he imagined it was a fear-formed ſhadow of his own brain, though he did not remain long in this terror, but plainly perceived that it was no other than the real perſon of Thomas, who, jumping on the quarter deck, took charge of the helm, and dictated to the ſailors with as much authority as if he had been commander of the ſhip. The ſkipper looked upon him as an angel ſent to his aſſiſtance, and the crew ſoon diſcovering him to be a thorough-bred ſeaman, notwithſtanding his livery frock, obeyed his orders with ſuch alacrity, that in a little time the confuſion vaniſhed, and every neceſſary ſtep was taken to weather the gale.

Our young gentleman immediately conceived the meaning of Tom's appearance on board, and, when the tumult was a little ſubſided, went up, and encouraged him to exert himſelf for the preſervation of the ſhip, promiſing to take him again into his ſervice, from which he ſhould never be diſmiſſed, except at his own deſire. This aſſurance had a ſurpriſing effect upon Pipes, who, though he made no manner of reply, thruſt the helm into the maſter's hand, ſaying, "Here, you old bum-boat woman, take hold of the tiller, and keep her thus, boy, thus;" and ſkipped about the veſſel, trimming the ſails, and managed the ropes with ſuch agility and ſkill, that every body on deck ſtood amazed at his dexterity.

Mr. Jolter was far from being unconcerned at the un-

nmon motion of the veſſel, the ſinging of the wind, l the uproar which he heard above him; he looked vards the cabin door with the moſt fearful expectation, hope of ſeeing ſome perſon who could give ſome ac-ınt of the weather, and what was doing upon deck; t not a ſoul appeared, and he was too well acquainted h the diſpoſition of his own bowels to make the leaſt ɛration in his attitude. When he had lain a good ile in all the agony of ſuſpence, the boy tumbled head-g into his apartment with ſuch noiſe, that he believed : maſt had gone by the board, and ſtarting upright in bed, aſked, with all the ſymptoms of horror, what was : cauſe of that diſturbance? The boy, half ſtunned his fall, anſwered in a dolorous tone, "I'm come to put the dead-lights." At the mention of dead-lights, the aning of which he did not underſtand, the poor go-nor's heart died within him, and he ſhivered with de-ir. His recollection forſaking him, he fell upon his :es in the bed, and fixing his eyes upon the book which s in his hand, began to pronounce aloud with great vour, "The time of a complete oſcillation in the cy-id, is to the time in which a body would fall through the s of the cycloid DV, as the circumference of a circle its diameter." He would in all likelihood have pro-ded with the demonſtration of this propoſition, had he : been ſeized with ſuch a qualm, as compelled him to p the book, and accommodate himſelf to the emer-ıcy of his diſtemper; he therefore ſtretched himſelf at l length, and, putting up ejaculations to Heaven, be-ı to prepare himſelf for his latter end, when all of a lden, the noiſe above was intermitted; and, as he could t conceive the cauſe of this tremendous ſilence, he ima-ed that either the men were waſhed overboard, or it, deſpairing of ſafety, they had ceaſed to oppoſe the npeſt. While he was harrowed by this miſerable un-tainty, which, however, was not altogether unenlight-:d by ſome ſcattered rays of hope, the maſter entered : cabin; then he aſked, with a voice half extinguiſhed fear, how matters went upon deck? and the ſkipper, th a large bottle of brandy applied to his mouth, an-ered in a hollow tone, "All's over now, maſter." Up-which, Mr. Jolter, giving himſelf over for loſt, ex-

claimed with the utmoſt horror, "Lord have mercy upon us! Chriſt have mercy upon us!" and repeated this ſupplication as it were mechanically, until the maſter undeceived him, by explaining the meaning of what he had ſaid, and aſſuring him that the ſquall was over.

Such a ſudden tranſition from fear to joy occaſioned a violent agitation both in his mind and body; and it was a full quarter of an hour before he recovered the right uſe of his organs. By this time the weather cleared up, the wind began to blow again from the right corner, and the ſpires of Calais appeared at the diſtance of five leagues; ſo that the countenances of all on board were lighted up with joyous expectation; and Peregrine, venturing to go down into the cabin, comforted his governor with an account of the happy turn of their affairs.

Jolter, tranſported with the thoughts of a ſpeedy landing, began to launch out in praiſe of that country for which they were bound. He obſerved, that France was the land of politeneſs and hoſpitality, which were conſpicuous in the behaviour of all ranks and degrees, from the peer to the peaſant; that a gentleman and a foreigner, far from being inſulted and impoſed upon by the lower claſs of people, as in England, was treated with the utmoſt reverence, candour, and reſpect; that their fields were fertile, their climate pure and healthy, their farmers rich and induſtrious, and the ſubjects in general the happieſt of men. He would have proſecuted this favourite theme ſtill farther, had not his pupil been obliged to run upon deck, in conſequence of certain warnings he received from his ſtomach.

The ſkipper ſeeing his condition, very honeſtly reminded him of the cold ham and fowls, with a baſket of wine, which he had ordered to be ſent on board, and aſked if he would have the cloth laid below. He could not have choſen a more ſeaſonable opportunity of manifeſting his own diſintereſtedneſs. Peregrine made wry faces at the mention of food, bidding him (for Chriſt's ſake) talk no more on that ſubject. He then deſcended into the cabin, and put the ſame queſtion to Mr. Jolter, who, he knew, entertained the ſame abhorrence for his propoſal; and, meeting with the like reception from him, went between decks, and repeated his courteous proffer to the valet de

chambre and lacquey, who lay ſprawling in all the pangs of a double evacuation, and rejected his civility with the moſt horrible loathing. Thus baffled in all his kind endeavours, he ordered his boy to ſecure the proviſion in one of his own lockers, according to the cuſtom of the ſhip.

It being low water when they arrived on the French coaſt, the veſſel could not enter the harbour, and they were obliged to bring to, and wait for a boat, which in leſs than half an hour came along-ſide from the ſhore. Mr. Jolter now came upon deck, and ſnuffing up the French air with ſymptoms of infinite ſatisfaction, aſked of the boatman (with the friendly appellation of *Mes enfans*) what they demanded for tranſporting him and his pupil, with their baggage, to the pier. But how was he diſconcerted, when thoſe polite, candid, reaſonable watermen, demanded a Louis d'or for that ſervice! Peregrine, with a ſarcaſtic ſneer, obſerved, that he already began to perceive the juſtice of his encomiums on the French; and the diſappointed governor could ſay nothing in his own vindication, but that they were debauched by their intercourſe with the inhabitants of Dover. His pupil, however, was ſo much offended at their extortion, that he abſolutely refuſed to employ them, even when they abated one half in their demand, and ſwore he would ſtay on board till the packet ſhould be able to enter the harbour, rather than encourage ſuch impoſition.

The maſter, who, in all probability, had ſome ſort of fellow-feeling with the boatmen, in vain repreſented, that he could not with ſafety lie to, or anchor upon a lee-ſhore; our hero having conſulted Pipes, anſwered, that he had hired his veſſel to tranſport him to Calais, and that he would oblige him to perform what he had undertaken.

The ſkipper, very much mortified at this peremptory reply, which was not over and above agreeable to Mr. Jolter, diſmiſſed the boat, notwithſtanding the ſolicitations and condeſcenſion of the watermen. Running a little farther in ſhore, they came to an anchor, and waited till there was water enough to float them over the bar. Then they ſtood into the harbour, and our gentleman, with his attendants and baggage, were landed on the pier by the ſailors, whom he liberally rewarded for their trouble.

He was immediately plied by a great number of porters, who, like ſo many hungry wolves, laid hold on his luggage, and began to carry it off piece-meal, without his order or direction. Incenſed at this officious inſolence, he commanded them to deſiſt, with many oaths and opprobrious terms that his anger ſuggeſted; and, perceiving that one of them did not ſeem to pay any regard to what he ſaid, but marched off with his burden, he ſnatched a cudgel out of his lacquey's hand, and, overtaking the fellow in a twinkling, brought him to the ground with one blow. He was inſtantly ſurrounded by the whole congregation of this *canaille*, who reſented the injury which their brother had ſuſtained, and would have taken immediate ſatisfaction of the aggreſſor, had not Pipes, ſeeing his maſter involved, brought the whole crew to his aſſiſtance, and exerted himſelf ſo manfully, that the enemy were obliged to retreat with many marks of defeat, and menaces of intereſting the commandant in their quarrel. Jolter, who knew and dreaded the power of the French governor, began to ſhake with apprehenſion, when he heard their repeated threats; but they durſt not apply to this magiſtrate, who, upon a fair repreſentation of the caſe, would have puniſhed them ſeverely for their rapacious and inſolent behaviour. Peregrine, without further moleſtation, availed himſelf of his own attendants, who ſhouldered his baggage, and followed him to the gate, where they were ſtopped by the centinels, until their names ſhould be regiſtered.

Mr. Jolter, who had undergone this examination before, reſolved to profit by his experience, and cunningly repreſented his pupil as a young Engliſh lord. This intimation, ſupported by the appearance of his equipage, was no ſooner communicated to the officer, than he turned out the guard, and ordered his ſoldiers to reſt upon their arms, while his lordſhip paſſed in great ſtate to the *Lion d'Argent*, where he took up his lodging for the night, reſolving to ſet out for Paris next morning in a poſt-chaiſe.

The governor triumphed greatly in this piece of complaiſance and reſpect with which they had been honoured, and reſumed his beloved topic of diſcourſe, in applauding the method and ſubordination of the French government, which was better calculated for maintaining order, and

protecting the people, than any conſtitution upon earth. Of their courteous attention to ſtrangers, there needed no other proof than the compliment which had been paid to them, together with the governor's connivance at Peregrine's employing his own ſervants in carrying the baggage to the inn, contrary to the privilege of the inhabitants.

While he expatiated with a remarkable degree of ſelf-indulgence on this ſubject, the valet de chambre coming into the room, interrupted his harangue, by telling his maſter that their trunks and portmanteaus muſt be carried to the cuſtom-houſe, in order to be ſearched, and ſealed with lead, which muſt remain untouched until their arrival at Paris.

Peregrine made no objection to this practice, which was in itſelf reaſonable enough; but when he underſtood that the gate was beſieged by another multitude of porters, who inſiſted upon their right of carrying the goods, and alſo of fixing their own price, he abſolutely refuſed to comply with their demand. Nay, he chaſtiſed ſome of the moſt clamorous among them with his foot, and told them, that if their cuſtom-houſe officers had a mind to examine his baggage, they might come to the inn for that purpoſe. The valet de chambre was abaſhed at this boldneſs of his maſter's behaviour, which, the lacquey, ſhrugging up his ſhoulders, obſerved, was *bien a l'Angloiſe*; while the governor repreſented it as an indignity to the whole nation, and endeavoured to perſuade his pupil to comply with the cuſtom of the place. But Peregrine's natural haughtineſs of diſpoſition hindered him from giving ear to Jolter's wholeſome advice; and, in leſs than half an hour, they obſerved a file of muſqueteeers marching up to the gate. At ſight of this detachment the tutor trembled, the valet grew pale, and the lacquey croſſed himſelf; but our hero, without exhibiting any other ſymptoms than thoſe of indignation, met them on the threſhold, and, with a ferocious air, demanded their buſineſs. The corporal, who commanded the file, anſwered with great deliberation, that he had orders to convey his baggage to the cuſtom-houſe; and ſeeing the trunks ſtanding in the entry, placed his men between them and the owner, while the porters that followed took them up, and proceeded to the Douane without oppoſition.

Pickle was not mad enough to diſpute the authority of this meſſage: But, in order to gall, and ſpecify his contempt for thoſe who brought it, he called aloud to his valet, deſiring him, in French, to accompany his things, and ſee that none of his linens and effects ſhould be ſtolen by the ſearchers. The corporal, mortified at this ſatirical inſinuation, darted a look of reſentment at the author, as if he had been intereſted for the glory of his nation; and told him, that he could perceive he was a ſtranger in France, or elſe he would have ſaved himſelf the trouble of ſuch a needleſs precaution.

CHAPTER XXXVI.

He makes a fruitleſs attempt in gallantry; departs for Boulogne, where he ſpends the evening with certain Engliſh exiles.

HAVING thus yielded to the hand of power, he inquired if there was any other Engliſh company in the houſe; when, underſtanding that a gentleman and lady lodged in the next apartment, and had beſpoke a poſt-chaiſe for Paris, he ordered Pipes to ingratiate himſelf with their footman, and, if poſſible, learn their names and condition, while he and Mr. Jolter, attended by the lacquey, took a turn round the ramparts, and viewed the particulars of the fortification.

Tom was ſo very ſucceſsful in his inquiry, that when his maſter returned, he was able to give him a ſatisfactory account of his fellow-lodgers, in conſequence of having treated his brother with a bottle of wine. The people in queſtion were a gentleman and his lady lately arrived from England, in their way to Paris. The huſband was a man of good fortune, who had been a libertine in his youth, and a profeſſed declaimer againſt matrimony. He wanted neither ſenſe nor experience, and piqued himſelf in particular upon his art of avoiding the ſnares of the female ſex, in which he pretended to be deeply verſed. But, notwithſtanding all his caution and ſkill, he had lately fallen a ſacrifice to the attractions of an oyſter wench, who had found means to decoy him into the bands

wedlock; and, in order to evade the compliments and ngratulations of his friends and acquaintance, he had me ſo far on a tour to Paris, where he intended to itiate his ſpouſe in the beau monde. In the mean time choſe to live upon the reſerve, becauſe her natural ta-nts had as yet received but little cultivation; and he id not the moſt implicit confidence in her virtue and ſcretion, which, it ſeems, had like to have yielded to e addreſſes of an officer at Canterbury, who had made ift to inſinuate himſelf into her acquaintance and fa-our.

Peregrine's curioſity being inflamed by this informa-ion, he lounged about the yard, in hopes of ſeeing the lulcinea who had captivated the old batchelor; and at ength, obſerving her at a window, took the liberty of owing to her with great reſpect. She returned the com-liment with a curtſey, and appeared ſo decent in her dreſs nd manner, that, unleſs he had been previouſly informed f her former life and converſation, he never would have reamed that her education was different from that of ther ladies of faſhion; ſo eaſy is it to acquire that ex-ternal deportment on which people of condition value themſelves ſo much. Not but that Mr. Pickle pretended to diſtinguiſh a certain vulgar audacity in her countenance, which, in a lady of birth and fortune, would have paſſed for an agreeable vivacity that enlivens the aſpect, and gives poignancy to every feature; but as ſhe poſſeſſed a pair of fine eyes, and a clear complexion overſpread with the glow of health, which never fails of recommending the owner, he could not help gazing at her with deſire, and forming the deſign of making a conqueſt of her heart. With this view, he ſent his compliments to her huſband, whoſe name was Hornbeck, with an intimation, that he propoſed to ſet out next day for Paris, and as he under-ſtood that he was reſolved upon the ſame journey, he ſhould be extremely glad of his company on the road, if he was not better engaged. Hornbeck, who in all pro-bability did not chooſe to accommodate his wife with a ſquire of our hero's appearance, ſent a civil anſwer to his meſſage, profeſſing infinite mortification at his being un-able to embrace the favour of this kind offer, by reaſon of the indiſpoſition of his wife, who, he was afraid,

would not be in a condition for ſome days to bear the fatigue of travelling. This rebuff, which Peregrine aſcribed to the huſband's jealouſy, ſtifled his project in embryo; he ordered his French ſervant to take a place for himſelf in the diligence, where all his luggage was ſtowed, except a ſmall trunk with ſome linen and other neceſſaries, that was fixed upon the poſt-chaiſe which they hired of the landlord; and early next morning he and Mr. Jolter departed from Calais, attended by his valet de chambre and Pipes on horſeback. They proceeded without any accident as far as Boulogne, where they breakfaſted, and viſited old father Graham, a Scottiſh gentleman of the governor's acquaintance, who had lived as a capuchin in that place for the ſpace of threeſcore years, and during that period conformed to all the auſterities of the order with the moſt rigorous exactneſs; being equally remarkable for the frankneſs of his converſation, the humanity of his diſpoſition, and the ſimplicity of his manners. From Boulogne they took their departure about noon, and, as they propoſed to ſleep that night at Abbeville, commanded the poſtillion to drive with extraordinary ſpeed. Perhaps it was well for his cattle that the axle-tree gave way, and the chaiſe of courſe overturned, before they had travelled one-third part of the ſtage.

This accident compelled them to return to the place from whence they had ſet out, and as they could not procure another convenience, they found themſelves under the neceſſity of ſtaying till their chaiſe could be refitted. Underſtanding that this operation would detain them a whole day, our young gentleman had recourſe to his patience, and demanded to know what they would have for dinner; the garçon or waiter thus queſtioned, vaniſhed in a moment, and immediately they were ſurpriſed with the appearance of a ſtrange figure, which, from the extravagance of its dreſs and geſticulation, Peregrine miſtook for a madman of the growth of France. This phantom (which, by the bye, happened to be no other than the cook), was a tall, long-legged, meagre, ſwarthy fellow, that ſtooped very much; his cheek-bones were remarkably raiſed, his noſe bent into the ſhape and ſize of a powder-horn, and the ſockets of his eyes as raw round the edges, as if the ſkin had been pared off. On his

head he wore an handkerchief, which had once been white, and now ſerved to cover the upper part of a black periwig, to which was attached a bag, at leaſt a foot ſquare, with a ſolitaire and roſe that ſtuck up on each ſide to his ear; ſo that he looked like a criminal on the pillory. His back was accommodated with a linen waiſtcoat, his hands adorned with long ruffles of the ſame piece, his middle was girded by an apron tucked up, that it might not conceal his white ſilk ſtockings rolled; and at his entrance he brandiſhed a bloody weapon full three feet in length. Peregrine, when he firſt ſaw him approach in this menacing attitude, put himſelf upon his guard; but, being informed of his quality, peruſed his bill of fare, and having beſpoke three or four things for dinner, walked out with Mr. Jolter to view both towns, which they had not leiſure to conſider minutely before. In their return from the harbour, they met with four or five gentlemen, all of whom ſeemed to look with an air of dejection, and, perceiving our hero and his governor to be Engliſh by their dreſs, bowed with great reſpect as they paſſed. Pickle, who was naturally compaſſionate, felt an emotion of ſympathy; and ſeeing a perſon, who by his habit he judged to be one of their ſervants, accoſted him in Engliſh, and aſked who the gentlemen were. The lacquey gave him to underſtand that they were his own countrymen, exiled from their native homes, in conſequence of their adherence to an unfortunate and ruined cauſe; and that they were gone to the ſea ſide, according to their daily practice, in order to indulge their longing eyes with a proſpect of the white cliffs of Albion, which they muſt never more approach.

Though our young gentleman differed widely from them in point of political principles, he was not one of thoſe enthuſiaſts who look upon every ſchiſm from the eſtabliſhed articles of faith as damnable, and exclude the ſceptic from every benefit of humanity and Chriſtian forgiveneſs: He could eaſily comprehend how a man of the moſt unblemiſhed morals might, by the prejudice of education, or indiſpenſible attachments, be engaged in ſuch a blame-worthy and pernicious undertaking; and thought that they had already ſuffered ſeverely for their imprudence. He was affected with the account of their

diurnal pilgrimage to the ſea ſide, which he conſidered as a pathetic proof of their affliction, and inveſted Mr. Jolter with the agreeable office of going to them with a compliment in his name, and begging the honour of drinking a glaſs with them in the evening. They accepted the propoſal with great ſatisfaction and reſpectful acknowledgment, and in the afternoon waited upon the kind inviter, who treated them with coffee, and would have detained them to ſupper; but they entreated the favour of his company at the houſe which they frequented, ſo earneſtly, that he yielded to their ſolicitations, and with his governor was conducted by them to the place, where they had provided an elegant repaſt, and regaled them with ſome of the beſt claret in France.

It was eaſy for them to perceive that their principal gueſt was no favourer of their ſtate maxims, and therefore they induſtriouſly avoided every ſubject of converſation which could give the leaſt offence; not but that they lamented their own ſituation, which cut them off from all their deareſt connections, and doomed them to perpetual baniſhment from their families and friends; but they did not, even by the moſt diſtant hint, impeach the juſtice of that ſentence by which they were condemned; although one of them, who ſeemed to be about the age of thirty, wept bitterly over his misfortune, which had involved a beloved wife and three children in miſery and diſtreſs, and, in the impatience of his grief, curſed his own fate with frantic imprecations. His companions, with a view of beguiling his ſorrow, and manifeſting their own hoſpitality at the ſame time, changed the topic of diſcourſe, and circulated the bumpers with great aſſiduity; ſo that all their cares were overwhelmed and forgotten, ſeveral drinking French catches were ſung, and mirth and good fellowſhip prevailed.

In the midſt of this elevation, which commonly unlocks the moſt hidden ſentiment, and diſpels every conſideration of caution and conſtraint, one of the entertainers, being more intoxicated than his fellows, propoſed a toaſt, to which Peregrine with ſome warmth excepted, as an unmannerly inſult. The other maintained his propoſition with indecent heat; and the diſpute beginning to grow very ſerious, the company interpoſed, and gave judgment

againſt their friend, who was ſo keenly reproached and rebuked for his impolite behaviour, that he retired in high dudgeon, threatening to relinquiſh their ſociety, and branding them with the appellation of apoſtates from the common cauſe. Mortified at the behaviour of their companion, thoſe that remained were earneſt in their apologies to their gueſts, whom they beſought to forgive his intemperance, aſſuring them with great confidence, that he would, upon the recovery of his reflection, wait upon them in perſon, and aſk pardon for the umbrage he had given. Pickle was ſatisfied with their remonſtrances, reſumed his good humour, and the night being pretty far advanced, reſiſted all their importunities with which he was entreated to ſee another bottle go round, and was eſcorted to his own lodgings more than half ſeas over. Next morning, about eight o'clock, he was waked by his valet de chambre, who told him that two of the gentlemen with whom he had ſpent the evening, were in the houſe, and deſired the favour of being admitted into his chamber. He could not conceive the meaning of this extraordinary viſit, and, ordering his man to ſhow them into his apartment, beheld the perſon who had affronted him enter, with the gentleman who had reprehended his rudeneſs.

He who had given the offence, after having made an apology for diſturbing Mr. Pickle, told him that his friend there preſent had been with him early that morning, and propoſed the alternative of either fighting with him immediately, or coming to beg pardon for his unmannerly deportment over night; that, though he had courage enough to face any man in the field in a righteous cauſe, he was not ſo brutal as to diſobey the dictates of his own duty and reflection, in conſequence of which, and not out of any regard to the other's menaces, which he deſpiſed, he had now taken the liberty of interrupting his repoſe, that he might, as ſoon as poſſible, atone for the injury he had done him, which he proteſted was the effect of intoxication alone, and begged his forgiveneſs accordingly. Our hero accepted of this acknowledgment very graciouſly, thanked the other gentleman for the gallant part he had acted in his behalf; and, perceiving that his companion was a little irritated at his officious

inſtance of our young gentleman's civility, which he acknowledged by a meſſage, importing that he and his wife would do themſelves the pleaſure of profiting by his courteous offer. Peregrine's cheeks glowed when he found himſelf on the eve of being acquainted with Mrs. Hornbeck, of whoſe heart he had already made a conqueſt in imagination; and he forthwith ſet his invention at work to contrive ſome means of defeating her huſband's vigilance.

When ſupper was ready, he in perſon gave notice to his gueſt, and leading the lady into his apartment, ſeated her in an elbow chair at the upper end of the table, ſqueezing her hand, and darting a moſt inſidious glance at the ſame time. This abrupt behaviour he practiſed, on the preſumption that a lady of her breeding was not to be addreſſed with the tedious forms that muſt be obſerved in one's advances to a perſon of birth and genteel education. In all probability his calculation was juſt; for Mrs. Hornbeck gave no ſigns of diſcontent at this ſort of treatment, but, on the contrary, ſeemed to conſider it as a proof of the young gentleman's regard; and though ſhe did not venture to open her mouth three times during the whole repaſt, ſhe ſhowed herſelf particularly well ſatisfied with her entertainer, by ſundry ſly and ſignificant looks, while her huſband's eyes were directed another way, and divers loud peals of laughter, ſignifying her approbation of the ſallies which he uttered in the courſe of their converſation. Her ſpouſe began to be very uneaſy at the frank demeanour of his yoke-fellow, whom he endeavoured to check in her vivacity, by aſſuming a ſeverity of aſpect; but whether ſhe obeyed the dictates of her own diſpoſition, which perhaps was merry and unreſerved, or wanted to puniſh Mr. Hornbeck for his jealouſy of temper, certain it is, her gaiety increaſed to ſuch a degree, that her huſband was grievouſly alarmed and incenſed at her conduct, and reſolved to make her ſenſible of his diſpleaſure, by treading in ſecret upon her toes. He was however ſo diſconcerted by his indignation, that he miſtook his mark, and applied the ſharp heel of his ſhoe to the ſide of Mr. Jolter's foot, comprehending his little toe that was ſtudded with an angry corn, which he invaded with ſuch a ſudden jerk, that the governor, unable to en-

he torture in ſilence, ſtarted up, and, dancing on oor, roared hideouſly with repeated bellowings, to nſpeakable enjoyment of Peregrine and the lady, aughed themſelves almoſt into convulſions at the Hornbeck, confounded at the miſtake he had com- l, begged pardon of the injured tutor with great tion, proteſting that the blow he had ſo unfortu- received was intended for an ugly cur which he ht had poſted himſelf under the table. It was lucky m that there was actually a dog in the room, to juſ- nis excuſe, which Jolter admitted with the tears ig over his cheeks; and the economy of the table ecompoſed.

ſoon, however, as the ſtrangers could with decency raw, this ſuſpicious huſband took his leave of the , on pretence of being fatigued with his journey, aving, by way of compliment, propoſed that they l travel together next day; and Peregrine handed dy to her chamber, where he wiſhed her good night nother warm ſqueeze, which ſhe returned. This rable hint made his heart bound with a tranſport of he lay in wait for an opportunity of declaring him- nd ſeeing the huſband go down into the yard with lle, glided ſoftly into his apartment, where he found moſt undreſſed. Impelled by the impetuoſity of his n, which was ſtill more inflamed by her preſent luſ- appearance, and encouraged by the approbation ſhe ready expreſſed, he ran towards her with eagerneſs, ſ, "Zounds! Madam, your charms are irreſiſtible!" without further ceremony, would have claſped her arms, had ſhe not begged him, for the love of God, ire, for ſhould Mr. Hornbeck return and find him , ſhe would be undone for ever. He was not ſo d by his paſſion, but that he ſaw the reaſonableneſs r fear, and as he could not pretend to crown his s at that interview, he avowed himſelf her lover, d her that he would exhauſt his whole invention in g a proper opportunity for throwing himſelf at her and in the mean time he raviſhed ſundry ſmall fa- , which ſhe, in the hurry of her fright, could not old from his impudence of addreſs. Having thus ly ſettled the preliminaries, he withdrew to his own

chamber, and ſpent the whole night in contriving ſtrata-gems to elude the jealous caution of his fellow-traveller.

CHAPTER XXXVIII.

They ſet out in company, breakfaſt at Abbeville, dine at Amiens, and about eleven o'clock arrive at Chantilly, where Peregrine executes a plan which he had concerted upon Hornbeck.

THE whole company, by agreement, roſe and departed before day, and breakfaſted at Abbeville, where they became acquainted with the fineſſe of their Bernay landlord, who had impoſed upon them, in affirming that they would not have been admitted after the gates were ſhut. From thence they proceeded to Amiens, where they dined, and were peſtered by begging friars; and the roads being deep, it was eleven o'clock at night before they reached Chantilly, where they found ſupper already dreſſed, in conſequence of having diſpatched the valet de chambre before them on horſeback.

The conſtitution of Hornbeck being very much impaired by a life of irregularity, he found himſelf ſo fatigued with his day's journey, which amounted to upwards of an hundred miles, that, when he ſat down at table, he could ſcarcely ſit upright; and, in leſs than three minutes, began to nod in his chair. Peregrine, who had foreſeen and provided for this occaſion, adviſed him to exhilarate his ſpirits with a glaſs of wine; and the propoſal being embraced, tipped his valet de chambre the wink, who, according to the inſtructions he had received, qualified the Burgundy with thirty drops of laudanum, which this unfortunate huſband ſwallowed in one glaſs. The doſe, co-operating with his former drowſineſs, lulled him ſo faſt aſleep, as it were inſtantaneouſly, that it was found neceſſary to convey him to his own chamber, where his footman undreſſed and put him to bed. Nor was Jolter (naturally of a ſluggiſh diſpoſition) able to reſiſt his propenſity to ſleep, without ſuffering divers dreadful yawns, which encouraged his pupil to adminiſter the ſame doſe to him, which had operated ſo ſucceſsfully upon the other Argus. This cordial had not ſuch a gentle effect upon

the rugged organs of Jolter, as upon the more delicate nerves of Hornbeck; but diſcovered itſelf in certain involuntary ſtartings, and convulſive motions in the muſcles of his face; and when his nature at length yielded to the power of this medicine, he ſounded the trumpet ſo loud through his noſtrils, that our adventurer was afraid the noiſe would wake his other patient, and conſequently prevent the accompliſhment of his aim. The governor was therefore committed to the care of Pipes, who lugged him into the next room, and having ſtripped off his clothes, tumbled him into his neſt, while the two lovers remained at full liberty to indulge their mutual paſſion.

Peregrine, in the impatience of his inclination, would have finiſhed the fate of Hornbeck immediately; but his inamorata diſapproved of his intention, and repreſented that their being together by themſelves for any length of time, would be obſerved by her ſervant, who was kept as a ſpy upon her actions; ſo that they had recourſe to another ſcheme, which was executed in this manner—He conducted her into her own apartment, in preſence of her footman, who lighted them thither, and, wiſhing her good reſt, returned to his own chamber, where he waited till every thing was quiet in the houſe; then, ſtealing ſoftly to her door, which had been left open for his admiſſion in the dark, he found the huſband ſtill ſecure in the embraces of ſleep, and the lady in a looſe gown, ready to ſeal his happineſs. He conveyed her to his own chamber; but his guilty paſſion was not gratified.

The opium which had been given to Jolter, together with the wine he had drank, produced ſuch a perturbation in his fancy, that he was viſited with horrible dreams, and, among other miſerable ſituations, imagined himſelf in danger of periſhing in the flames, which he thought had taken hold on his apartment.—This viſion made ſuch an impreſſion upon his faculties, that he alarmed the whole houſe with the repeated cries of *fire! fire!* and even leaped out of his bed, though he ſtill continued faſt aſleep. The lovers were very diſagreeably diſturbed by this dreadful exclamation, and Mrs. Hornbeck, running in great confuſion to the door, had the mortification to ſee the footman, with a light in his hand, enter her huſband's chamber, in order to give him notice of this acci-

dent. She knew that ſhe would be inſtantly miſſed, and could eaſily divine the conſequence, unleſs her invention could immediately trump up ſome plauſible excuſe for her abſence.

Women are naturally fruitful of expedients in caſes of ſuch emergency; ſhe employed but a few ſeconds in recollection, and ruſhing directly towards the apartment of the governor, who ſtill continued to hollow in the ſame note, exclaimed in a ſcreaming tone, "Lord have mercy upon us! where! where!" By this time all the ſervants were aſſembled in ſtrange attire; Peregrine burſt into Jolter's room, and ſeeing him ſtalking in his ſhirt, with his eyes ſhut, beſtowed ſuch a ſlap upon his back, as in a moment diſſolved his dream, and reſtored him to the uſe of his ſenſes. He was aſtoniſhed and aſhamed at being diſcovered in ſuch an indecent attitude; and taking refuge under the clothes, aſked pardon of all preſent for the diſturbance he had occaſioned; ſoliciting with great humility the forgiveneſs of the lady, who, to a miracle, counterfeited the utmoſt agitation of terror and ſurpriſe. Meanwhile, Hornbeck being awakened by the repeated efforts of his man, no ſooner underſtood that his wife was miſſing, than all the chimeras of jealouſy taking poſſeſſion of his imagination, he ſtarted up in a ſort of phrenzy, and ſnatching his ſword, flew ſtraight to Peregrine's chamber; where, though he found not that which he looked for, he unluckily perceived an under-petticoat, which his wife had forgot in the hurry of her retreat. This diſcovery added fuel to the flame of his reſentment. He ſeized the fatal proof of his diſhonour, and meeting his ſpouſe in her return to bed, preſented it to her view, ſaying, with a moſt expreſſive countenance, "Madam, you have dropped your under-petticoat in the next room." Mrs. Hornbeck, who inherited from nature a moſt admirable preſence of mind, looked earneſtly at the object in queſtion, and with incredible ſerenity of countenance, affirmed that the petticoat muſt belong to the houſe, for ſhe had none ſuch in her poſſeſſion. Peregrine, who walked behind her, hearing this aſſeveration, immediately interpoſed, and pulling Hornbeck by the ſleeve, into his chamber, "Gads zooks! (ſaid he) what buſineſs had you with that petticoat?

Can't you let a young fellow enjoy a little amour with an innkeeper's daughter, without expoſing his infirmities to your wife? Pſhaw! that ſo malicious, becauſe you have quitted theſe adventures yourſelf, to ſpoil the ſport of other people."—The poor huſband was ſo confounded at the effrontery of his wife, and this cavalier declaration of the young man, that his faith began to waver; he diſtruſted his own conſcious diffidence of temper, which, that he might not expoſe, he expreſſed no doubts of Peregrine's veracity, but, aſking pardon for the miſtake he had committed, retired. He was not yet ſatisfied with the behaviour of his ingenuous helpmate, but, on the contrary, determined to inquire more minutely into the circumſtances of this adventure, which turned out ſo little to his ſatisfaction, that he ordered his ſervant to get every thing ready for his departure by break of day; and when our adventurer roſe next morning, he found that his fellow-travellers were gone above three hours, though they had agreed to ſtay all the forenoon, with a view of ſeeing the Prince of Conde's palace, and to proceed altogether for Paris in the afternoon.

Peregrine was a little chagrined, when he underſtood that he was ſo ſuddenly deprived of this untaſted morſel; and Jolter could not conceive the meaning of their abrupt and uncivil diſappearance, which, after many profound conjectures, he accounted for, by ſuppoſing that Hornbeck was ſome ſharper who had run away with an heireſs, whom he found it neceſſary to conceal from the inquiry of her friends.

The pupil, who was well aſſured of the true motive, allowed his governor to enjoy the triumph of his own penetration, and conſoled himſelf with the hope of ſeeing his Dulcinea again at ſome of the public places in Paris, which he propoſed to frequent. Thus comforted, he viſited the magnificent ſtables and palace of Chantilly, and immediately after dinner they ſet out for Paris, where they arrived in the evening, and hired apartments at an hotel in the Fauxbourgh St. Germaine, not far from the playhouſe.

CHAPTER XXXIX.

He is involved in an adventure at Paris, and taken priſoner by the city-guard. Becomes acquainted with a French nobleman, who introduces him in the beau monde.

THEY were no ſooner ſettled in theſe lodgings than our hero wrote to his uncle an account of their ſafe arrival, and ſent another letter to his friend Gauntlet, with a very tender billet encloſed for his dear Emilia, to whom he repeated all his former vows of conſtancy and love.

The next care that engroſſed him was that of beſpeaking ſeveral ſuits of clothes ſuitable to the French mode, and in the mean time he never appeared abroad, except in the Engliſh coffeehouſe, where he ſoon became acquainted with ſome of his own countrymen, who were at Paris on the ſame footing with himſelf.—The third evening after his journey, he was engaged in a party of thoſe young ſparks, at the houſe of a noted traiteur, whoſe wife was remarkably handſome, and otherwiſe extremely well-qualified for alluring cuſtomers to her houſe. To this lady our young gentleman was introduced as a ſtranger freſh from England; and he was charmed with her perſonal accompliſhments, as well as with the freedom and gaiety of her converſation.—Her frank deportment perſuaded him that ſhe was one of thoſe kind creatures who granted favours to the beſt bidder; on this ſuppoſition he began to be ſo importunate in his addreſſes, that the fair bourgeoiſe was compelled to cry aloud in defence of her own virtue. Her huſband ran immediately to her aſſiſtance, and, finding her in a very alarming ſituation, flew upon her raviſher with ſuch fury, that he was fain to quit his prey, and turn againſt the exaſperated traiteur, whom he puniſhed without mercy for his impudent intruſion. The lady ſeeing her yoke-fellow treated with ſo little reſpect, eſpouſed his cauſe, and fixing her nails in his antagoniſt's face, ſcarified all one ſide of his noſe. The noiſe of this encounter brought all the ſervants of the houſe to the reſcue of their maſter, and Peregrine's company oppoſing them, a general battle enſued, in which the French were totally routed, the wife inſulted, and the huſband kicked down ſtairs.

The publican, enraged at the indignity which had been offered to him and his family, went out into the ſtreet, and implored the protection of the guet or city-guard, which, having heard his complaint, fixed their bayonets and ſurrounded the door, to the number of twelve or fourteen. The young gentlemen, fluſhed with their ſucceſs, and conſidering the ſoldiers as ſo many London watchmen, whom they had often put to flight, drew their ſwords, and ſallied out, with Peregrine at their head. Whether the guard reſpected them as foreigners, or inexperienced youths intoxicated with liquor, they opened to right and left, and gave them room to paſs without oppoſition. This complaiſance, which was the effect of compaſſion, being miſinterpreted by the Engliſh leader, he out of mere wantonneſs attempted to trip up the heels of the ſoldier that ſtood next him, but failed in the execution, and received a blow on his breaſt with the butt end of his fuſil, that made him ſtagger ſeveral paces backward. Incenſed at this audacious application, the whole company charged the detachment ſword in hand, and, after an obſtinate engagement, in which divers wounds were given and received, every ſoul of them was taken, and conveyed to the main-guard. The commanding officer, being made acquainted with the circumſtances of the quarrel, in conſideration of their youth and national ferocity, for which the French make large allowances, ſet them all at liberty, after having gently rebuked them for the irregularity and inſolence of their conduct; ſo that all our hero acquired by his gallantry and courage, was a number of ſcandalous marks upon his viſage, that confined him a whole week to his chamber. It was impoſſible to conceal this diſaſter from Mr. Jolter, who, having obtained intelligence of the particulars, did not fail to remonſtrate againſt the raſhneſs of the adventure, which, he obſerved, muſt have been fatal to them, had their enemies been other than Frenchmen, who, of all people under the ſun, moſt rigorouſly obſerve the laws of hoſpitality.

As the governor's acquaintance lay chiefly among Iriſh and Engliſh prieſts, and a ſet of low people who live by making themſelves neceſſary to ſtrangers, either in teaching the French language, or executing ſmall commiſſions with which they are entruſted, he was not the moſt pro-

per perſon in the world for regulating the taſte of a young gentleman who travelled for improvement, in expectation of making a figure one day in his own country. Being conſcious of his own incapacity, he contented himſelf with the office of a ſteward, and kept a faithful account of all the money that was diſburſed in the courſe of their family expence; not but that he was acquainted with all the places which were viſited by ſtrangers on their firſt arrival at Paris; and he knew to a liard what was commonly given to the Swiſs of each remarkable hotel; though, with reſpect to the curious painting and ſtatuary that every where abound in that metropolis, he was more ignorant than the domeſtic that attends for a livre a-day.

In ſhort, Mr. Jolter could give a very good account of the ſtages on the road, and ſave the expence of Antonini's detail of the curioſities in Paris; he was a connoiſſeur in ordinaries, from twelve to five and thirty livres, knew all the rates of a fiacre and remiſe, could diſpute with a taileur or a traiteur upon the articles of his bill, and ſcold the ſervants in tolerable French. But the laws, cuſtoms, and genius of the people, the characters of individuals, and ſcenes of poliſhed life, were ſubjects which he had neither opportunities to obſerve, inclination to conſider, nor diſcernment to diſtinguiſh. All his maxims were the ſuggeſtions of pedantry and prejudice; ſo that his perception was obſcured, his judgment biaſſed, his addreſs awkward, and his converſation abſurd and unentertaining; yet ſuch as I have repreſented this tutor is the greateſt part of thoſe animals who lead raw boys about the world, under the denomination of travelling governors. Peregrine, therefore, being perfectly well acquainted with the extent of Mr. Jolter's abilities, never dreamed of conſulting him in the diſpoſition of his conduct, but parcelled out his time according to the dictates of his own reflection, and the information and direction of his companions, who had lived longer in France, and conſequently were better acquainted with the pleaſures of the place.

As ſoon as he was in a condition to appear a la Francoiſe, he hired a genteel chariot by the month, made the tour of the Luxembourg gallery, Palais Royal, all the remarkable hotels, churches, and celebrated places in Paris; viſited St. Cloud, Marli, Verſailles, Trianon, St. Germain,

and Fountainbleau; enjoyed the opera, maſquerades, Italian and French comedy; and ſeldom failed of appearing in the public walks, in hopes of meeting with Mrs. Hornbeck, or ſome adventure ſuited to his romantic diſpoſition. He never doubted that his perſon would attract the notice of ſome diſtinguiſhed inamorata, and was vain enough to believe that few female hearts were able to reſiſt the artillery of his accompliſhments, ſhould he once find an opportunity of planting it to advantage. He preſented himſelf, however, at all the ſpectacles for many weeks, without reaping the fruits of his expectation; and began to entertain a very indifferent idea of the French diſcernment, which had overlooked him ſo long, when one day, in his way to the opera, his chariot was ſtopped by an embarras in the ſtreet, occaſioned by two peaſants, who, having driven their carts againſt each other, quarrelled, and went to loggerheads on the ſpot. Such a rencounter is ſo uncommon in France, that the people ſhut up their ſhops, and from their windows threw cold water upon the combatants, with a view of putting an end to the battle, which was maintained with great fury and very little skill, until one of them receiving an accidental fall, the other took the advantage of this misfortune, and faſtening upon him as he lay, began to thump the pavement with his head. Our hero's equipage being detained cloſe by the field of this contention, Pipes could not bear to ſee the laws of boxing ſo ſcandalouſly tranſgreſſed, and, leaping from his ſtation, pulled the offender from his antagoniſt, whom he raiſed up, and, in the Engliſh language, encouraged to a ſecond eſſay, inſtructing him at the ſame time, by clenching his fiſts according to art, and putting himſelf in a proper attitude. Thus confirmed, the enraged carman ſprung upon his foe, and in all appearance would have effectually revenged the injury he had ſuſtained, if he had not been prevented by the interpoſition of a lacquey belonging to a nobleman, whoſe coach was obliged to halt in conſequence of the diſpute. This footman, who was diſtinguiſhed by a cane, deſcending from his poſt, without the leaſt ceremony or expoſtulation, began to employ his weapon upon the head and ſhoulders of the peaſant who had been patronized by Pipes; upon which Thomas, reſenting ſuch ungenerous behaviour, be-

ſtowed ſuch a ſtomacher upon the officious intermeddler, as diſcompoſed the whole economy of his entrails, and obliged him to diſcharge the interjection Ah! with demonſtrations of great anguiſh and amazement. The other two footmen who ſtood behind the coach, ſeeing their fellow-ſervant ſo inſolently aſſaulted, flew to his aſſiſtance, and rained a moſt diſagreeable ſhower upon the head of his aggreſſor, who had no means of diverſion or defence. Peregrine, though he did not approve of Tom's conduct, could not bear to ſee him ſo roughly handled, eſpecially as he thought his own honour concerned in the fray, and therefore quitting his machine, came to the reſcue of his attendant, and charged his adverſaries ſword in hand. Two of them no ſooner perceived this reinforcement than they betook themſelves to flight; and Pipes, having twiſted the cane out of the hands of the third, belaboured him ſo unmercifully, that our hero thought proper to interpoſe his authority in his behalf. The common people ſtood aghaſt at this unprecedented boldneſs of Pickle, who, underſtanding that the perſon whoſe ſervants he had diſciplined was a general and prince of the blood, went up to the coach, and aſked pardon for what he had done, imputing his own behaviour to his ignorance of the other's quality. The old nobleman accepted of his apology with great politeneſs, thanking him for the trouble he had taken to reform the manners of his domeſtics; and gueſſing from our youth's appearance, that he was ſome ſtranger of condition, very courteouſly invited him into the coach, on the ſuppoſition that they were both going to the opera. Pickle gladly embraced this opportunity of becoming acquainted with a perſon of ſuch rank, and, ordering his own chariot to follow, accompanied the count to his loge, where he converſed with him during the whole entertainment.

He ſoon perceived that Peregrine was not deficient in ſpirit or ſenſe, and ſeemed particularly pleaſed with his engaging manner and eaſy deportment, qualifications for which the Engliſh nation is by no means remarkable in France, and therefore the more conſpicuous and agreeable in the character of our hero, whom the nobleman carried home that ſame evening, and introduced to his lady and ſeveral perſons of faſhion, who ſupped at his

houſe. Peregrine was quite captivated by their affable behaviour and the vivacity of their diſcourſe; and, after having been honoured with particular marks of conſideration, took his leave, fully determined to cultivate ſuch a valuable acquaintance.

His vanity ſuggeſted, that now the time was come when he ſhould profit by his talents among the fair ſex, on whom he reſolved to employ his utmoſt art and addreſs. With this view he aſſiduouſly engaged in all parties to which he had acceſs by means of his noble friend, who let ſlip no opportunity of gratifying his ambition. He, for ſome time, ſhared in all his amuſements, and was entertained in many of the beſt families of France; but he did not long enjoy that elevation of hope, which had flattered his imagination. He ſoon perceived that it would be impoſſible to maintain the honourable connections he had made, without engaging every day at quadrille, or, in other words, loſing his money; for every perſon of rank, whether male or female, was a profeſſed gameſter, who knew and practiſed all the fineſſe of the art, of which he was entirely ignorant. Beſides, he began to find himſelf a mere novice in French gallantry, which is ſupported by an amazing volubility of tongue, an obſequious and incredible attention to trifles, a ſurpriſing faculty of laughing out of pure complaiſance, and a nothingneſs of converſation, which he could never attain. In ſhort, our hero, who, among his own countrymen, would have paſſed for a ſprightly entertaining fellow, was conſidered in the brilliant aſſemblies of France as a youth of a very phlegmatic diſpoſition. No wonder then that his pride was mortified at his own want of importance, which he did not fail to aſcribe to their defect in point of judgment and taſte: He conceived a diſguſt at the mercenary conduct, as well as the ſhallow intellects of the ladies; and, after he had ſpent ſome months, and a round ſum of money, in fruitleſs attendance and addreſſes, he fairly quitted the purſuit, and conſoled himſelf with the converſation of a merry *fille de joye*, whoſe good graces he acquired by an allowance of twenty Louis per month. That he might the more eaſily afford this expence, he diſmiſſed his chariot and French lacquey at the ſame time.

He then entered himſelf in a noted academy, in order to finiſh his exerciſes, and contracted an acquaintance with a few ſenſible people, whom he diſtinguiſhed at the coffee-houſe and ordinary to which he reſorted, and who contributed not a little to the improvement of his knowledge and taſte: For, prejudice apart, it muſt be owned that France abounds with men of conſummate honour, profound ſagacity, and the moſt liberal education. From the converſation of ſuch, he obtained a diſtinct idea of their government and conſtitution; and though he could not help admiring the excellent order and economy of their police, the reſult of all his inquiries was ſelf-congratulation on his title to the privileges of a Britiſh ſubject. Indeed this invaluable birth-right was rendered conſpicuous by ſuch flagrant occurrences, which fell every day almoſt under his obſervation, that nothing but the groſſeſt prejudice could diſpute its exiſtence.

CHAPTER XL.

Acquires a diſtinct idea of the French government; quarrels with a mouſquetaire, whom he afterwards fights and vanquiſhes, after having puniſhed him for interfering in his amorous recreations.

Among many other inſtances of the ſame nature, I believe it will not be amiſs to exhibit a few ſpecimens of their adminiſtration, which happened during his abode at Paris, that thoſe who have not the opportunity of obſerving for themſelves, or are in danger of being influenced by miſrepreſentation, may compare their own condition with that of their neighbours, and do juſtice to the conſtitution under which they live.

A lady of diſtinguiſhed character having been lampooned by ſome obſcure ſcribbler, who could not be diſcovered, the miniſtry, in conſequence of her complaint, ordered no fewer than five and twenty abbes to be apprehended and ſent to the Baſtile, on the maxim of Herod, when he commanded the innocents to be murdered, hoping that the principal object of his cruelty would not eſcape in the general calamity; and the friends of thoſe unhappy priſoners durſt not even complain of the unjuſt

perſecution, but ſhrugged up their ſhoulders, and, in ſilence, deplored their misfortune, uncertain whether or not they ſhould ever ſet eyes on them again.

About the ſame time a gentleman of family, who had been oppreſſed by a certain powerful duke that lived in the neighbourhood, found means to be introduced to the king, who, receiving his petition very graciouſly, aſked in what regiment he ſerved; and, when the memorialiſt anſwered, that he had not the honour of being in the ſervice, returned the paper unopened, and refuſed to hear one circumſtance of his complaint; ſo that, far from being redreſſed, he remained more than ever expoſed to the tyranny of his oppreſſors: Nay, ſo notorious is the diſcouragement of all thoſe who preſume to live independent of court favour and connections, that one of the gentlemen, whoſe friendſhip Peregrine cultivated, frankly owned he was in poſſeſſion of a moſt romantic place in one of the provinces, and deeply enamoured of a country life; and yet he durſt not reſide upon his own eſtate, leſt, by ſlackening in his attendance upon the great, who honoured him with their protection, he ſhould fall a prey to ſome rapacious intendant.

As for the common people, they are ſo much inured to the ſcourge and inſolence of power, that every ſhabby ſubaltern, every beggarly cadet of the nobleſſe, every low retainer to the court, inſults and injures them with impunity. A certain ecuyer, or horſe-dealer, belonging to the King, being one day under the hands of a barber, who happened to cut the head of a pimple on his face, he ſtarted up, and, drawing his ſword, wounded him deſperately in the ſhoulder. The poor tradeſman, hurt as he was, made an effort to retire, and was followed by this barbarous aſſaſſin, who, not contented with the vengeance he had taken, plunged his ſword a ſecond time into his body, and killed him on the ſpot. Having performed this inhuman exploit, he dreſſed himſelf with great deliberation, and, going to Verſailles, immediately obtained a pardon for what he had done; triumphing in his brutality with ſuch inſolence, that the very next time he had occaſion to be ſhaved, he ſat with his ſword ready drawn, in order to repeat the murder, in caſe the barber ſhould commit the ſame miſtake. Yet ſo tamed are thoſe

poor people to ſubjection, that when Peregrine mentioned this aſſaſſination to his own trimmer, with expreſſions of horror and deteſtation, the infatuated wretch replied, that without all doubt it was a misfortune, but it proceeded from the gentleman's paſſion; and obſerved, by way of encomium on the government, that ſuch vivacity is never puniſhed in France.

A few days after this outrage was committed, our youth, who was a profeſſed enemy to all oppreſſion, being in one of the firſt loges at the comedy, was eye-witneſs of an adventure, which filled him with indignation: A tall ferocious fellow, in the parterre, without the leaſt provocation, but prompted by the mere wantonneſs of pride, took hold of the hat of a very decent young man, who happened to ſtand before him, and twirled it round upon his head. The party thus offended turned to the aggreſſor, and civilly aſked the reaſon of ſuch treatment, but he received no anſwer; and when he looked the other way, the inſult was repeated: Upon which he expreſſed his reſentment as became a man of ſpirit, and deſired the offender to walk out with him. No ſooner did he thus ſignify his intention, than his adverſary, ſwelling with rage, cocked his hat fiercely in his face, and, fixing his hands in his ſides, pronounced with the moſt imperious tone, "Hark ye, Mr. Round Periwig, you muſt know that I am a mouſquetaire." Scarce had this awful word eſcaped from his lips, when the blood forſook the lips of the poor challenger, who, with the moſt abject ſubmiſſion, begged pardon for his preſumption, and with difficulty obtained it, on condition that he ſhould immediately quit the place. Having thus exerciſed his authority, he turned to one of his companions, and, with an air of diſdainful ridicule, told him he was like to have had an affair with a Bourgeois; adding, by way of heightening the irony, "Egad! I believe he's a phyſician."

Our hero was ſo much ſhocked and irritated at this licentious behaviour, that he could not ſuppreſs his reſentment, which he manifeſted, by ſaying to this Hector, "Sir, a phyſician may be a man of honour." To this remonſtrance, which was delivered with a very ſignificant countenance, the mouſquetaire made no other reply, but

that of echoing his aſſertion with a loud laugh, in which he was joined by his confederates. Peregrine, glowing with reſentment, called him a *Fanfaron*, and withdrew in expectation of being followed into the ſtreet. The other underſtood the hint, and a rencounter muſt have enſued, had not the officer of the guard, who overheard what paſſed, prevented their meeting, by putting the mouſquetaire immediately under arreſt. Our young gentleman waited at the door of the parterre, until he was informed of this interpoſition, and then went home very much chagrined at his diſappointment; for he was an utter ſtranger to fear and diffidence on thoſe occaſions, and had ſet his heart upon chaſtiſing the inſolence of this bully, who had treated him with ſuch diſreſpect.

This adventure was not ſo private but that it reached the ears of Mr. Jolter, by the canal of ſome Engliſh gentlemen who were preſent when it happened; and the governor, who entertained a moſt dreadful idea of the mouſquetaires, being alarmed at a quarrel, the conſequence of which might be fatal to his charge, waited on the Britiſh Ambaſſador, and begged he would take Peregrine under his immediate protection. His Excellency, having heard the circumſtances of the diſpute, ſent one of his gentleman to invite the youth to dinner; and, after having aſſured him that he might depend upon his countenance and regard, repreſented the raſhneſs and impetuoſity of his conduct ſo much to his conviction, that he promiſed to act more circumſpectly for the future, and drop all thoughts of the mouſquetaire from that moment.

A few days after he had taken this laudable reſolution, Pipes, who had carried a billet to his miſtreſs, informed him that he had perceived a laced hat lying upon a marble ſlab in her apartment; and that, when ſhe came out of her own chamber to receive the letter, ſhe appeared in manifeſt diſorder.

From theſe hints of intelligence, our young gentleman ſuſpected, or rather made no doubt of her infidelity; and, being by this time well nigh cloyed with poſſeſſion, was not ſorry to find that ſhe had given him cauſe to renounce her correſpondence. That he might therefore detect her in the very breach of duty, and, at the ſame time, puniſh

the gallant who had the preſumption to invade his territories, he concerted with himſelf a plan, which was executed in this manner: During his next interview with his dulcinea, far from diſcovering the leaſt ſign of jealouſy or diſcontent, he affected the appearance of extraordinary fondneſs; and, after having ſpent the afternoon with the ſhow of uncommon ſatisfaction, told her he was engaged in a party for Fountainbleau, and would ſet out from Paris that ſame evening; ſo that he ſhould not have the pleaſure of ſeeing her again for ſome days.

The lady, who was very well verſed in the arts of her occupation, pretended to receive this piece of news with great affliction, and conjured him, with ſuch marks of real tenderneſs, to return as ſoon as poſſible to her longing arms, that he went away almoſt convinced of her ſincerity. Determined, however, to proſecute his ſcheme, he actually departed from Paris with two or three gentlemen of his acquaintance, who had hired a remiſe for a jaunt to Verſailles; and, having accompanied them as far as the village of Paſſe, returned in the duſk of the evening on foot.

He waited patiently till midnight, and then arming himſelf with a caſe of pocket piſtols, and attended by truſty Tom, with a cudgel in his hand, repaired to the lodgings of his ſuſpected inamorata. Having given Pipes his cue, he knocked gently at the door, which was no ſooner opened by the lacquey, than he bolted in, before the fellow could recollect himſelf from the confuſion occaſioned by his unexpected appearance; and, leaving Tom to guard the door, ordered the trembling valet to light him up ſtairs into his lady's apartment. The firſt object that preſented itſelf to his view, when he entered the antichamber, was a ſword upon the table, which he immediately ſeized, exclaiming in a loud and menacing voice, that his miſtreſs was falſe, and then in bed with another gallant, whom he would inſtantly put to death. This declaration, confirmed by many terrible oaths, he calculated for the hearing of his rival, who, underſtanding his ſanguinary purpoſe, ſtarted up in great trepidation, and, naked as he was, dropped from the balcony into the ſtreet, while Peregrine thundered at the door for admittance; and, gueſſing his deſign, gave him an opportunity of mak-

ing this precipitate retreat. Pipes, who ſtood centinel at the door, obſerving the fugitive deſcend, attacked him with his cudgel, and ſweating him from one end of the ſtreet to the other, at laſt committed him to the guet, by whom he was conveyed to the officer on duty in a moſt diſgraceful and deplorable condition.

Meanwhile, Peregrine having burſt open the chamber door, found the lady in the utmoſt dread and conſternation, and the ſpoils of her favourate ſcattered about the room; but his reſentment was doubly gratified, when he learnt upon inquiry, that the perſon who had been ſo diſagreeably interrupted was no other than that individual mouſquetaire, with whom he had quarreled at the comedy. He upbraided the nymph with her perfidy and ingratitude, and, telling her that ſhe muſt not expect the continuance of his regard, or the appointments which ſhe had hitherto enjoyed from his bounty, went home to his own lodgings, overjoyed at the iſſue of the adventure.

The ſoldier, exaſperated at the diſgrace he had undergone, as well as at the outrageous inſult of the Engliſh valet, whom he believed his maſter had tutored for that purpoſe, no ſooner extricated himſelf from the opprobrious ſituation he had incurred, than, breathing vengeance againſt the author of the affront, he came to Peregrine's apartment, and demanded ſatisfaction upon the ramparts next morning before ſun-riſe. Our hero aſſured him, he would not fail to pay his reſpects to him at the time and place appointed; and, foreſeeing that he might be prevented from keeping this engagement by the officious care of his governor, who ſaw the mouſquetaire come in, he told Mr. Jolter, that the Frenchman had viſited him in conſequence of an order he had received from his ſuperiors, to make an apology for his rude behaviour to him in the playhouſe, and that they had parted good friends. This aſſurance, together with Pickle's very tranquil and unconcerned behaviour through the day, quieted the terrors which had begun to take poſſeſſion of his tutor's imagination; ſo that the youth had an opportunity of giving him the ſlip at night, when he betook himſelf to the lodgings of a friend, whom he engaged as his ſecond, and with whom he immediately took the field, in order to

avoid the ſearch which Jolter, upon miſſing him, might ſet on foot.

This was a neceſſary precaution; for, as he did not appear at ſupper, and Pipes, who uſually attended him in his excurſions, could give no account of his motions, the governor was dreadfully alarmed at his abſence, and ordered his man to run in queſt of his maſter to all the places which he uſed to frequent, while he himſelf went to the commiſſaire, and, communicating his ſuſpicions, was accommodated with a party of the horſe-guards, who patroled round all the environs of the city, with a view of preventing the rencounter. Pipes might have directed them to the lady, by whoſe information they could have learnt the name and lodging of the mouſquetaire, and, if he had been apprehended, the duel would not have happened; but he did not chooſe to run the riſk of diſobliging his maſter, by intermeddling in the affair, and was moreover very deſirous that the Frenchman ſhould be humbled; for he never doubted that Peregrine was more than a match for any two men in France. In this confidence, therefore, he ſought his maſter with great diligence, not with a view of diſappointing his intention, but in order to attend him to the battle, that he might ſtand by him, and ſee juſtice done.

While this inquiry was carried on, our hero and his companion concealed themſelves among ſome weeds that grew on the edge of the parapet, a few yards from the ſpot where he had agreed to meet the mouſquetaire; and ſcarce had the morning rendered objects diſtinguiſhable, when they perceived their men advancing boldly to the place. Peregrine, ſeeing them approach, ſprung forward to the ground, that he might have the glory of anticipating his antagoniſt; and, ſwords being drawn, all four were engaged in a twinkling. Pickle's eagerneſs had well nigh coſt him his life; for, without minding his footing, he flew directly to his oppoſite, and, ſtumbling over a ſtone, was wounded on one ſide of his head, before he could recover his attitude. Far from being diſpirited at this check, it ſerved only to animate him the more: Being endowed with uncommon agility, he retrieved his poſture in a moment, and, having parried a ſecond thruſt, returned the longe with ſuch incredible ſpeed, that the

ſoldier had not time to reſume his guard, but was immediately run through the bend of his right arm, and, the ſword dropping out of his hand, our hero's victory was complete.

Having diſpatched his own buſineſs, and received the acknowledgment of his adverſary, who, with a look of infinite mortification, obſerved, that his was the fortune of the day, he ran to part the ſeconds, juſt as the weapon was twiſted out of his companion's hand; upon which he took his place, and, in all likelihood, an obſtinate diſpute would have enſued, had they not been interrupted by the guard, at ſight of whom the two Frenchmen ſcampered off. Our young gentleman and his friend allowed themſelves to be taken priſoners by the detachment which had been ſent out for that purpoſe, and were carried before the magiſtrate, who, having ſharply reprimanded them for preſuming to act in contempt of the laws, ſet them at liberty, in conſideration of their being ſtrangers, cautioning them, at the ſame time, to beware of ſuch exploits for the future.

When Peregrine returned to his own lodgings, Pipes, ſeeing the blood trickling down upon his maſter's neck-cloth and ſolitaire, gave evident tokens of ſurpriſe and concern, not for the conſequences of the wound, which he did not ſuppoſe dangerous, but for the glory of Old England, which he was afraid had ſuffered in the engagement; for he could not help ſaying, with an air of chagrin, as he followed the youth into his chamber, "I do ſuppoſe as how you gave that lubberly Frenchman as good as he brought."

CHAPTER XLI.

Mr. Jolter threatens to leave him on account of his miſconduct, which he promiſes to rectify; but his reſolution is defeated by the impetuoſity of his paſſions. He meets accidentally with Mrs. Hornbeck, who elopes with him from her huſband, but is reſtored by the interpoſition of the Britiſh ambaſſador.

THOUGH Mr. Jolter was extremely well pleaſed at the ſafety of his pupil, he could not forgive him for the terror and anxiety he had undergone on his account; and

roundly told him, that, notwithſtanding the inclination and attachment he had to his perſon, he would immediately depart for England, if ever he ſhould hear of his being involved in ſuch another adventure; for it could not be expected that he would ſacrifice his own quiet, to an unrequited regard for one who ſeemed determined to keep him in continual uneaſineſs and apprehenſion.

To this declaration Pickle made anſwer, that Mr. Jolter, by this time, ought to be convinced of the attention he had always paid to his eaſe and ſatisfaction; ſince he well knew, that he had ever looked upon him in the light of a friend, rather than as a counſellor or tutor, and deſired his company in France, with a view of promoting his intereſt, not for any emolument he could expect from his inſtruction. This being the caſe, he was at liberty to conſult his own inclinations, with regard to going or ſtaying; though he could not help owning himſelf obliged by the concern he expreſſed for his ſafety, and would endeavour, for his own ſake, to avoid giving him any cauſe of diſturbance in time to come.

No man was more capable of moralizing upon Peregrine's miſconduct than himſelf; his reflections were extremely juſt and ſagacious, and attended with no other diſadvantage but that of occurring too late. He projected a thouſand ſalutary ſchemes of deportment, but, like other projectors, he never had intereſt enough with the miniſtry of his paſſions to bring any one of them to bear. He had, in the heyday of his gallantry, received a letter from his friend Gauntlet, with a kind poſtſcript from his charming Emilia; but it arrived at a very unſeaſonable juncture, when his imagination was engroſſed by conqueſts that more agreeably flattered his ambition; ſo that he could not find leiſure and inclination, from that day, to honour the correſpondence which he himſelf had ſolicited. His vanity had, by this time, diſapproved of the engagement he had contracted in the rawneſs and inexperience of youth; ſuggeſting, that he was born to make ſuch an important figure in life as ought to raiſe his ideas above the conſideration of any ſuch middling connections, and fix his attention upon objects of the moſt ſublime attraction. Theſe dictates of ridiculous pride had almoſt effaced the remembrance of his amiable miſtreſs, or at leaſt

ſo far warped his morals and integrity, that he actually began to conceive hopes of her altogether unworthy of his own character and her deſerts.

Meanwhile, being deſtitute of a toy for the dalliance of his idle hours, he employed ſeveral ſpies, and almoſt every day made a tour of the public places in perſon, with a view of procuring intelligence of Mr. Hornbeck, with whoſe wife he longed to have another interview. In this courſe of expectation had he exerciſed himſelf a whole fortnight, when, chancing to be at the hoſpital of invalids, with a gentleman lately arrived from England, he no ſooner entered the church, than he perceived this lady, attended by her ſpouſe, who, at ſight of our hero, changed colour, and looked another way, in order to diſcourage any communication between them. But the young man, who was not ſo eaſily repulſed, advanced with great aſſurance to his fellow-traveller, and, taking him by the hand, expreſſed his ſatisfaction at this unexpected meeting, kindly upbraiding him for his precipitate retreat from Chantilly. Before Hornbeck could make any reply, he went up to his wife, whom he complimented in the ſame manner, aſſuring her, with ſome ſignificant glances, he was extremely mortified that ſhe had put it out of his power to pay his reſpects to her on his firſt arrival at Paris; and then, turning to her huſband, who thought proper to keep cloſe to him in this conference, begged to know where he could have the honour of waiting upon him; obſerving, at the ſame time, that he himſelf lived a l' Academie de Palfrenier.

Mr. Hornbeck, without making any apology for his elopement on the road, thanked Mr. Pickle for his complaiſance in a very cool and diſobliging manner, ſaying, that, as he intended to ſhift his lodgings in a day or two, he could not expect the pleaſure of ſeeing him until he ſhould be ſettled, when he would call at the academy, and conduct him to his new habitation.

Pickle, who was not unacquainted with the ſentiments of this jealous gentleman, did not put much confidence in his promiſe, and therefore made divers efforts to enjoy a little private converſation with his wife; but he was baffled in all his attempts by the indefatigable vigilance of her keeper, and reaped no other immediate pleaſure from

this accidental meeting than that of a kind ſqueeze while he handed her into the coach. However, as he had been witneſs to ſome inſtances of her invention, and was no ſtranger to the favourable diſpoſition of her heart, he entertained ſome faint hopes of profiting by her underſtanding, and was not deceived in his expectations; for, the very next afternoon, a Savoyard called at the academy, and put the following billet in his hand:

" Coind Sur,

" HEAVING the playſure of meating with you at the oſpital of anvilheads, I take this lubbertea of latin you know, that I lotch at the Hottail de May cong dangle rouy Doghouſeten, with two poſtis at the gait, naytheir of um very hole, ware I ſhall be at the windore, if in kais you will be ſo good as to paſs that way at ſicks a cloak in the heavening, when Mr. Hornbeck goes to the Calfhay de Contea. Prey for the loaf of Geeſus keep this from the nolegs of my huſsban, ells he will make me leed a hell upon urth. Being all from, deer Sur,

" Your moſt umbell ſervan wile

" DEBORAH HORNBECK."

Our young gentleman was raviſhed at the receipt of this elegant epiſtle, which was directed A Monſr Monſr Pickhell, a la Gaddamme de Paul Freny, and did not fail to obey the ſummons at the hour of aſſignation; when the lady, true to her appointment, beckoned him up ſtairs, and he had the good fortune to be admitted unſeen.

After the firſt tranſports of their mutual joy at meeting, ſhe told him, that her huſband had been very ſurly and croſs ever ſince the adventure at Chantilly, which he had not yet digeſted; that he had laid ſevere injunctions upon her to avoid all commerce with Pickle, and even threatened to ſhut her up in a convent for life, if ever ſhe ſhould diſcover the leaſt inclination to renew that acquaintance; that ſhe had been cooped up in her chamber ſince her arrival at Paris, without being permitted to ſee the place, or indeed any company, except that of her landlady, whoſe language ſhe did not underſtand; ſo that, her ſpirit being broke, and her health impaired, he was prevailed upon, ſome days ago, to indulge her in a few

airings, during which ſhe had ſeen the gardens of the Luxembourg, the Thuilleries, and Palais Royal, though at thoſe times when there was no company in the walks; and that it was in one of thoſe excurſions ſhe had the happineſs of meeting with him. Finally, ſhe gave him to underſtand, that, rather than continue longer under ſuch confinement, with the man whom ſhe could not love, ſhe would inſtantly give him the ſlip, and put herſelf under the protection of her lover.

Raſh and unthinking as this declaration might be, the young gentleman was ſo much of a gallant, that he would not baulk the lady's inclinations, and too infatuated by his paſſion to foreſee the conſequences of ſuch a dangerous ſtep. He therefore, without heſitation, embraced the propoſal, and, the coaſt being clear, they ſallied into the ſtreet, where Peregrine called a fiacre, and ordered the coachman to drive them to a tavern: But, knowing it would not be in his power to conceal her from the ſearch of the lieutenant de police, if ſhe ſhould remain within the walls of Paris, he hired a remiſe, and carried her that ſame evening to Villejuif, about four leagues from town, where he ſtaid with her all night; and, having boarded her on a genteel penſion, and ſettled the economy of his future viſits, returned next day to his own lodgings.

While he thus enjoyed his ſucceſs, her huſband endured the tortures of the damned. When he returned from the coffeehouſe, and underſtood that his wife had eloped, without being perceived by any perſon in the family, he began to rave and foam with rage and jealouſy, and, in the fury of diſtraction, accuſed the landlady of being an accomplice in her eſcape, threatening to complain of her to the commiſſaire. The woman could not conceive how Mrs. Hornbeck, who ſhe knew was an utter ſtranger to the French language, and kept no ſort of company, could elude the caution of her huſband, and find any refuge in a place where ſhe had no acquaintance; and began to ſuſpect the lodger's emotion was no other than an affected paſſion to conceal his own practices upon his wife, who had perhaps fallen a ſacrifice to his jealous diſpoſition. She therefore ſpared him the trouble of putting his menaces into execution, by going to the magiſtrate

without any farther deliberation, and giving an account of what ſhe knew concerning this myſterious affair, with certain inſinuations againſt Hornbeck's character, which ſhe repreſented as peeviſh and capricious to the laſt degree.

While ſhe thus anticipated the purpoſe of the plaintiff, her information was interrupted by the arrival of the party himſelf, who exhibited his complaint with ſuch evident marks of perturbation, anger, and impatience, that the commiſſaire could eaſily perceive that he had no ſhare in the diſappearance of his wife; and directed him to the lieutenant de police, whoſe province it is to take cognizance of ſuch occurrences. This gentleman, who preſides over the city of Paris, having heard the particulars of Hornbeck's misfortune, aſked if he ſuſpected any individual perſon as the ſeducer of his yoke-fellow; and, when he mentioned Peregrine as the object of his ſuſpicion, granted a warrant, and a detachment of ſoldiers, to ſearch for and retrieve the fugitive.

The huſband conducted them immediately to the academy, where our hero lodged, and having rummaged the whole place, to the aſtoniſhment of Mr. Jolter, without finding either his wife or the ſuppoſed raviſher, accompanied them to all the public houſes in the Fauxbourg; which having examined alſo without ſucceſs, he returned to the magiſtrate in a ſtate of deſpair, and obtained a promiſe of his making ſuch an effectual inquiry, that, in three days, he ſhould have an account of her, provided ſhe was alive, and within the walls of Paris.

Our adventurer, who had foreſeen all this diſturbance, was not at all ſurpriſed when his governor told him what had happened; and conjured him to reſtore the woman to the right owner, with many pathetic remonſtrances touching the heinous ſin of adultery, the diſtraction of the unfortunate huſband, and the danger of incurring the reſentment of an arbitrary government, which, upon application being made, would not fail of eſpouſing the cauſe of the injured. He denied, with great effrontery, that he had the leaſt concern in the matter, pretended to reſent the deportment of Hornbeck, whom he threatened to chaſtiſe for his ſcandalous ſuſpicion, and expreſſed his diſpleaſure at the credulity of Jolter, who ſeemed to doubt the veracity of his aſſeveration.

Notwithſtanding this confident behaviour, Jolter could not help entertaining doubts of his ſincerity; and, viſiting the diſconſolate ſwain, begged he would, for the honour of his country, as well as for the ſake of his own reputation, diſcontinue his addreſſes to the lieutenant de police, and apply to the Britiſh ambaſſador, who, by dint of friendly admonitions, would certainly prevail upon Mr. Pickle to do him all the juſtice in his power, if he was really the author of the injury he had ſuſtained. The governor urged this advice with the appearance of ſo much ſympathy and concern, promiſing to co-operate with all his influence in his behalf, that Hornbeck embraced the propoſal, communicated his purpoſe to the magiſtrate, who commended the reſolution as the moſt decent and deſirable expedient he could uſe, and then waited upon his excellency, who readily eſpouſed his cauſe, and, ſending for the young gentleman that ſame evening, read him ſuch a lecture in private, as extorted a confeſſion of the whole affair. Not that he aſſailed him with ſour and ſupercilious maxims, or ſevere rebuke, becauſe he had penetration enough to diſcern that Peregrine's diſpoſition was impregnable to all ſuch attacks; but he firſt of all rallied him upon his intriguing genius, then, in an humourous manner, deſcribed the diſtraction of the poor cuckold, who, he owned, was juſtly puniſhed for the abſurdity of his conduct; and, laſtly, upon the ſuppoſition that it would be no great effort in Pickle to part with ſuch a conqueſt, eſpecially after it had been for ſome time poſſeſſed. He repreſented the neceſſity and expediency of reſtoring her, not only out of regard to his own character, and that of his nation, but alſo with a view to his eaſe, which would in a little time be very much invaded by ſuch an encumbrance, that in all probability would involve him in a thouſand difficulties and diſguſts. Beſides, he aſſured him, that he was already, by order of the lieutenant de police, ſurrounded with ſpies, who would watch all his motions, and immediately diſcover the retreat in which he had diſpoſed of his prize. Theſe arguments, and the frank familiar manner in which they were delivered, but, above all, the laſt conſideration, induced the young gentleman to diſcloſe the whole of his proceedings to the ambaſſador, and promiſed to be go-

verned by his direction, provided the lady ſhould not ſuffer for the ſtep ſhe had taken, but be received by her huſband with due reverence and reſpect. Theſe ſtipulations being agreed to, he undertook to produce her in eight and forty hours; and, taking coach immediately, drove to the place of her reſidence, where he ſpent a whole day and a night in convincing her of the impoſſibility of their enjoying each other in that manner. Then, returning to Paris, he delivered her into the hands of the ambaſſador, who, having aſſured her that ſhe might depend upon his friendſhip and protection, in caſe ſhe ſhould find herſelf aggrieved by the jealous temper of Mr. Hornbeck, reſtored her to her legitimate lord, whom he counſelled to exempt her from that reſtraint which in all probability had been the cauſe of her elopement, and endeavour to conciliate her affection by tender and reſpectful uſage.

The huſband behaved with great humility and compliance, proteſting that his chief ſtudy ſhould be to contrive parties for her pleaſure and ſatisfaction. But no ſooner did he regain poſſeſſion of his ſtray-ſheep, than he locked her up more cloſely than ever; and, after having revolved various ſchemes for her reformation, determined to board her in a convent, under the inſpection of a prudent abbeſs, who ſhould ſuperintend her morals, and recal her to the paths of virtue, which ſhe had forſaken. With this view he conſulted an Engliſh prieſt of his acquaintance, who adviſed him to ſettle her in a monaſtery at Liſle, that ſhe might be as far as poſſible from the machinations of her lover; and gave him a letter of recommendation to the ſuperior of a certain convent in that place, for which Mr. Hornbeck ſet out in a few days with his troubleſome charge.

CHAPTER XLII.

Peregrine reſolves to return to England; is diverted with the odd characters of two of his countrymen, with whom he contracts an acquaintance in the apartments of the Palais Royal.

In the mean time, our hero received a letter from his aunt, importing that the commodore was in a very de-

clining way, and longed much to ſee him at the garriſon; and, at the ſame time, he heard from his ſiſter, who gave him to underſtand, that the young gentleman who had for ſome time made his addreſſes to her, was become very preſſing in his ſolicitations; ſo that ſhe wanted to know in what manner ſhe ſhould anſwer his repeated entreaties. Theſe two conſiderations determined the young gentleman to return to his native country, a reſolution that was far from being diſagreeable to Jolter, who knew that the incumbent on a living which was in the gift of Trunnion, was extremely old, and that it would be his intereſt to be upon the ſpot at the ſaid incumbent's deceaſe.

Peregrine, who had reſided about fifteen months in France, thought he was now ſufficiently qualified for eclipſing moſt of his cotemporaries in England, and therefore prepared for his departure with infinite alacrity, being moreover inflamed with the moſt ardent deſire of reviſiting his friends, and renewing his connections, particularly with Emilia, whoſe heart he, by this time, thought he was able to reduce on his own terms.

As he propoſed to make the tour of Flanders and Holland in his return to England, he reſolved to ſtay at Paris a week or two after his affairs were ſettled, in hope of finding ſome agreeable companion diſpoſed for the ſame journey, and, in order to refreſh his memory, made a ſecond circuit round all the places in that capital, where any curious production of art is to be ſeen. In the courſe of this ſecond examination, he chanced to enter the Palais Royal, juſt as two gentlemen alighted from a fiacre at the gate, and all three being admitted at the ſame time, he ſoon perceived that the ſtrangers were of his own country. One of them was a young man, in whoſe air and countenance appeared all the uncouth gravity and ſupercilious ſelf-conceit of a phyſician piping hot from his ſtudies; while the other, to whom his companion ſpoke by the appellation of Mr. Pallet, diſplayed at firſt ſight a ſtrange compoſition of levity and aſſurance. Indeed their characters, dreſs, and addreſs, were ſtrongly contraſted: The doctor wore a ſuit of black, and a huge tye-wig, neither ſuitable to his own age, nor the faſhion of the country where he then lived; whereas the other, though ſeemingly turned of fifty, ſtrutted in a gay ſum-

mer dreſs of the Pariſian cut, with a bag to his own gray hair, and a red feather in his hat, which he carried under his arm. As theſe figures ſeemed to promiſe ſomething entertaining, Pickle entered into converſation with them immediately, and ſoon diſcovered that the old gentleman was a painter from London, who had ſtole a fortnight from his occupation, in order to viſit the remarkable paintings of France and Flanders; and that the doctor had taken the opportunity of accompanying him in his tour. Being extremely talkative, he not only communicated theſe particulars to our hero in a very few minutes after their meeting, but alſo took occaſion to whiſper in his ear, that his fellow traveller was a man of vaſt learning, and, beyond all doubt, the greateſt poet of the age. As for himſelf, he was under no neceſſity of making his own eulogium; for he ſoon gave ſuch ſpecimens of his taſte and talents, as left Pickle no room to doubt of his capacity.

While they ſtood conſidering the pictures in one of the firſt apartments, which are by no means the moſt maſterly compoſitions, the Swiſs, who ſets up for a connoiſſeur, looking at a certain piece, pronounced the word *Magnifique!* with a note of admiration; upon which Mr. Pallet, who was not at all a critic in the French language, replied with great vivacity, "*Manufac*, you mean, and a very indifferent piece of manufacture it is; pray, Gentlemen, take notice, there is no keeping in thoſe heads upon the back ground, nor no relief in the principal figure: Then you'll obſerve the ſhadings are harſh to the laſt degree; and—come a little cloſer this way—don't you perceive that the fore-ſhortening of that arm is monſtrous—agad, Sir, there is an abſolute fracture in the limb—Doctor, you underſtand anatomy; don't you think that muſcle evidently miſplaced? Hark ye, Mr. what d'ye call um (turning to the attendant), what is the name of the dauber who painted that miſerable performance?" The Swiſs, imagining that he was all this time expreſſing his ſatisfaction, ſanctioned his ſuppoſed commendation, by exclaiming *ſans prix*. "Right (cried Pallet), I could not recollect his name, though his manner is quite familiar to me. We have a few pieces in England done by that ſame Sangpree; but there they are in no eſtimation;

we have more taſte among us, than to reliſh the productions of ſuch a miſerable gout. A'n't he an ignorant coxcomb, Doctor?" The phyſician, aſhamed of his companion's blunder, thought it was neceſſary, for the honour of his own character, to take notice of it before the ſtranger, and therefore anſwered his queſtion, by repeating this line from Horace,

Mutato nomine, de te fabula narratur.

The painter, who was rather more ignorant of Latin than of French, taking it for granted that this quotation of his friend conveyed an aſſent to his opinion, "Very true (ſaid he), *Potatoe domine date*, This piece is not worth a ſingle potatoe." Peregrine was aſtoniſhed at this ſurpriſing perverſion of the words and meaning of a Latin line, which, at firſt, he could not help thinking was a premeditated joke; but, upon ſecond thoughts, he ſaw no reaſon to doubt that it was the extemporaneous effect of ſheer pertneſs and ignorance, at which he broke out into an immoderate fit of laughter. Pallet, believing that the gentleman's mirth was occaſioned by his arch animadverſion upon the work of Sangpree, underwent the ſame emotion in a much louder ſtrain, and endeavoured to heighten the jeſt by more obſervations of the ſame nature; while the Doctor, confounded at his impudence and want of knowledge, reprimanded him in theſe words of Homer:—

Siga me tis alloe Achaion touton akouſe muthon.

This rebuke, the reader will eaſily perceive, was not calculated for the meridian of his friend's intellects, but uttered with a view of raiſing his own character in the opinion of Mr. Pickle, who retorted this parade of learning in three verſes from the ſame author, being part of the ſpeech of Polydamas to Hector, importing that it is impoſſible for one man to excel in every thing. The ſelf-ſufficient phyſician, who did not expect ſuch a repartee from a youth of Peregrine's appearance, looked upon his reply as a fair challenge, and inſtantly rehearſed forty or fifty lines of the Iliad in a breath. Obſerving that the ſtranger made no effort to match this effuſion, he interpreted his ſilence into ſubmiſſion; then, in order to aſ-

certain his victory, inſulted him with divers fragments of authors, whom his ſuppoſed competitor did not even know by name; while Mr. Pallet ſtared with admiration at the profound ſcholarſhip of his companion. Our young gentleman, far from repining at this ſuperiority, laughed within himſelf at the ridiculous ambition of the pedantic doctor. He rated him in his own mind as a mere index-hunter, who held the eel of ſcience by the tail, and foreſaw an infinite fund of diverſion in his ſolemnity and pride, if properly extracted by means of his fellow-traveller's vanity and aſſurance. Prompted by theſe conſiderations, he reſolved to cultivate their acquaintance, and, if poſſible, amuſe himſelf at their expence in his journey through Flanders, underſtanding that they were determined upon the ſame route. In this view he treated them with extraordinary attention, and ſeemed to pay particular deference to the remarks of the painter, who with great intrepidity pronounced judgment upon every picture in the palace, or, in other words, expoſed his own nakedneſs, in every ſentence that proceeded from his mouth.

When they came to conſider the Murder of the Innocents, by Le Brun, the Swiſs obſerved, that it was *un beau morceau*; and Mr. Pallet replied, "Yes, yes, one may ſee with half an eye, that it can be the production of no other; for Bomorſo's ſtyle, both in colouring and drapery, is altogether peculiar; then his deſign is tame, and his expreſſion antic and unnatural. Doctor, you have ſeen my Judgment of Solomon; I think I may, without preſumption—but I don't chooſe to make compariſons; I leave that odious taſk to other people, and let my works ſpeak for themſelves. France, to be ſure, is rich in the arts; but what is the reaſon? The king encourages men of genius with honour and rewards; whereas, in England, we are obliged to ſtand upon our own feet, and combat the envy and malice of our brethren—Agad! I have a good mind to come and ſettle here in Paris; I ſhould like to have an apartment in the Louvre, with a ſnug penſion of ſo many thouſand livres." In this manner did Pallet proceed with an eternal rotation of tongue, floundering from one miſtake to another, until it was the turn of Pouſſin's Seven Sacraments

to be examined. Here again the Swiſs, out of the abundance of his zeal, expreſſed his admiration, by ſaying theſe pieces were *impayable*; when the painter, turning to him with an air of exultation, "Pardon me, friend, there you happen to be miſtaken; theſe are none of Impayable's, but done by Nicholas Pouſeen. I have ſeen prints of them in England; ſo that none of your tricks upon travellers, Mr. Swiſs, or Swaſh, or what's your name." He was very much elated by this imaginary triumph of his underſtanding, which animated him to perſevere in his curious obſervations upon all the other pieces of that celebrated collection; but perceiving that the doctor manifeſted no ſigns of pleaſure and ſatisfaction, but rather beheld them with a ſilent air of diſdain, he could not digeſt his indifference, and aſked, with a waggiſh ſneer, if ever he had ſeen ſuch a number of maſterpieces before? The phyſician, eyeing him with a look of compaſſion, mingled with contempt, obſerved, that there was nothing here which deſerved the attention of any perſon acquainted with the ideas of the ancients; and that the author of the fineſt piece now in being was unworthy to clean the bruſhes of one of thoſe great maſters who are celebrated by the Greek and Roman writers. "O lud! O lud! (exclaimed the painter, with a loud laugh), you have fairly brought yourſelf into a dilemma at laſt, dear doctor; for it is well known that your ancient Greek and Roman artiſts knew nothing at all of the matter, in compariſon with our modern maſters; for this good reaſon, becauſe they had but three or four colours, and knew not how to paint with oil: Beſides, which of all your old fuſty Grecians would you put upon a footing with the divine Raphael, the moſt excellent Michael Angelo Bona Roti, the graceful Guido, the bewitching Titian, and, above all others, the ſublime Rubens, the"—He would have proceeded with a long catalogue of names which he had got by heart for the purpoſe, without retaining the leaſt idea of their ſeveral qualifications, had not he been interrupted by his friend, whoſe indignation being kindled by the irreverence with which he mentioned the Greeks, he called him blaſphemer, Goth, Bœotian, and, in his turn, aſked with great vehemence, which of thoſe puny moderns could match with Panænus of Athens, and his brother

Phidias, Polycletus of Sicyon, Polygnotus the Thraſſian, Parrhaſius of Epheſus, ſirnamed Abrodiaitos, or *the Beau*, and Apelles, the prince of painters? He challenged him to ſhow any portrait of theſe days that could vie with the Helen of Zeuxis the Heraclean, or any compoſition equal to the ſacrifice of Iphigenia, by Timanthes the Sicyonian; not to mention the twelve gods of Aſclepiadorus the Athenian, for which Mnaſon, tyrant of Elatea, gave him about three hundred pounds a piece; or Homer's hell, by Nicias, who refuſed ſixty talents, amounting to upwards of eleven thouſand pounds, and generouſly made a preſent of it to his own country. He deſired him to produce a collection equal to that in the Temple of Delphos, mentioned in the Ion of Euripides, where Hercules and his companion Iolaus are repreſented in the act of killing the Lernæan hydra, with golden ſickles, *kruſeais harpais*, where Bellerophon appears on his winged ſteed, vanquiſhing the fire-breathing chimera, *tan puripneouſan*, and the war of the giants is deſcribed—here Jupiter ſtands wielding the red-hot thunderbolt, *Keraunon amphipuron*; there Pallas, dreadful to the view, *Gorgopon*, brandiſheth her ſpear againſt the huge Enceladus; and Bacchus, with ſlender ivy rods, defeats and ſlays the *gas teknon*, or mighty ſon of earth. The painter was aſtoniſhed and confounded at this rhapſody of names and inſtances, which was uttered with ſurpriſing eagerneſs and rapidity, and ſuſpected at firſt that the whole was the creation of his own brain: But when Pickle, with a view of flattering the doctor's ſelf-conceit, eſpouſed his ſide of the queſtion, and confirmed the truth of every thing he advanced, Mr. Pallet changed his opinion, and in emphatic ſilence adored the immenſity of his friend's underſtanding. In ſhort, Peregrine eaſily perceived that they were falſe enthuſiaſts, without the ſmalleſt pretenſions to taſte and ſenſibility, and pretended to be in raptures with they knew not what; the one thinking it was incumbent upon him to expreſs tranſports on ſeeing the works of thoſe who had been moſt eminent in his profeſſion, whether they did or did not really raiſe his admiration; and the other, as a ſcholar, deeming it his duty to magnify the ancients above all competition, with an affected fervour, which the knowledge of their excellencies never inſpired. Indeed, our

young gentleman ſo ſucceſsfully accommodated himſelf to the diſpoſitions of each, that, long before their review was finiſhed, he was become a particular favourite with both.

From the Palais Royal he accompanied them to the cloiſters of the Carthuſians, where they conſidered the hiſtory of St. Bruno, by Le Sueur, whoſe name being utterly unknown to the painter, he gave judgment againſt the whole compoſition, as pitiful and paltry, though in the opinion of all good judges it is a moſt maſterly performance.

Having ſatisfied their curioſity in this place, Peregrine aſked them to favour him with their company at dinner; but whether out of caution againſt the inſinuations of one whoſe character they did not know, or by reaſon of a prior engagement, they declined his invitation, on pretence of having an appointment at a certain ordinary, though they expreſſed a deſire of being farther acquainted with him; and Mr. Pallet took the freedom of aſking his name, which he not only declared, but promiſed, as they were ſtrangers in Paris, to wait upon them next day in the forenoon, in order to conduct them to the hotel de Thouloufe, and the houſes of ſeveral other noblemen, remarkable for paintings or curious furniture. They thankfully embraced his propoſal, and that ſame day made inquiry among the Engliſh gentlemen about the character of our hero, which they found ſo much to their ſatisfaction, that, upon their ſecond meeting, they courted his good graces without reſerve; and, as they had heard of his intended departure, begged earneſtly to have the honour of accompanying him through the Low Countries. He aſſured them, that nothing could be more agreeable to him than the proſpect of having ſuch fellow-travellers; and they immediately appointed a day for ſetting out on that tour.

CHAPTER XLIII.

He introduces his new friends to Mr. Jolter, with whom the doctor enters into a diſpute upon government, which had well nigh terminated in open war.

MEANWHILE, he not only made them acquainted with every thing worth ſeeing in town, but attended them in their excurſions to all the king's houſes within a day's journey of Paris; and, in the courſe of theſe parties, treated them with an elegant dinner at his own apartments, where a diſpute aroſe between the doctor and Mr. Jolter, which had well nigh terminated in an irreconcileable animoſity. Theſe gentlemen, with an equal ſhare of pride, pedantry, and ſaturnine diſpoſition, were, by the accidents of education and company, diametrically oppoſite in political maxims; the one, as we have already obſerved, being a bigoted high-churchman, and the other a rank republican. It was an article of the governor's creed, that the people could not be happy, nor the earth yield its fruits in abundance, under a reſtricted clergy and limited government; whereas, in the doctor's opinion, it was an eternal truth, that no conſtitution was ſo perfect as the democracy, and that no country could flouriſh, but under the adminiſtration of the mob.

Theſe conſiderations being premiſed, no wonder that they happened to diſagree in the freedom of an unreſerved converſation, eſpecially as their entertainer took all opportunities of encouraging and inflaming the contention. The firſt ſource of their difference was an unlucky remark of the painter, who obſerved that the partridge, of which he was then eating, had the fineſt reliſh of any he had ever taſted. His friend owned that the birds were the beſt of the kind he had ſeen in France; but affirmed that they were neither ſo plump nor delicious as thoſe that were caught in England.—The governor, conſidering this obſervation as the effect of prejudice and inexperience, ſaid, with a ſarcaſtical ſmile, "I believe, Sir, you are very well diſpoſed to find every thing here inferior to the productions of your own country." "True, Sir, (anſwered the phyſician, with a certain ſolemnity of aſpect), and not without good reaſon, I hope." "And

pray (reſumed the tutor), why may not the partridges of France be as good as thoſe of England?" "For a very plain reaſon (replied the other), becauſe they are not ſo well fed. The iron hand of oppreſſion is extended to all animals within the French dominions, even to the beaſts of the field and the fowls of the air. *Kuneſſin oionoiſi te paſi.*" "Egad! (cried the painter), that is a truth not to be controverted; for my own part, I am none of your tit-bits, one would think, but yet there's a freſhneſs in the Engliſh complexion, a *ginſeekye*, I think you call it, ſo inviting to a hungry Frenchman, that I have caught ſeveral in the very act of viewing me with an eye of extreme appetite as I paſſed; and as for their curs, or rather their wolves, whenever I ſet eyes on one of 'em, Ah! your humble ſervant, Mr. ſon of a bitch; I am upon my guard in an inſtant. The doctor can teſtify that their very horſes, or more properly their live carrion, that drew our chaiſe, uſed to reach back their long necks, and ſmell at us, as a couple of delicious morſels." This ſally of Mr. Pallet, which was received with a general laugh of approbation, would, in all probability, have ſtifled the diſpute in embryo, had not Mr. Jolter, with a ſelf-applauding ſimper, ironically complimented the ſtrangers on their talking like true Engliſhmen. The doctor, affronted at the inſinuation, told him, with ſome warmth, that he was miſtaken in his conjecture, his affections and ideas being confined to no particular country; for he conſidered himſelf as a citizen of the world. He owned himſelf more attached to England than to any other kingdom, but this preference was the effect of reflection, and not of prejudice; becauſe the Britiſh conſtitution approached nearer than any other to that perfection of government, the democracy of Athens, which he hoped one day to ſee revived: He mentioned the death of Charles the Firſt, and the expulſion of his ſon, with raptures of applauſe; inveighed with great acrimony againſt the kingly name; and, in order to ſtrengthen his opinion, repeated forty or fifty lines from one of the Philippics of Demoſthenes. Jolter, hearing him ſpeak ſo diſreſpectfully of the higher powers, glowed with indignation. He ſaid his doctrines were deteſtable, and deſtructive of all right, order, and ſociety; that monarchy was of divine inſtitution, there-

fore indefeaſible by any human power; and, of conſequence, thoſe events in the Engliſh hiſtory, which he had ſo liberally commended, were no other than flagrant inſtances of ſacrilege, perfidy, and ſedition; that the democracy of Athens was a moſt abſurd conſtitution, productive of anarchy and miſchief, which muſt always happen when the government of a nation depends upon the caprice of the ignorant hair-brained vulgar; that it was in the power of the moſt profligate member of the commonwealth, provided he was endowed with eloquence, to ruin the moſt deſerving, by a deſperate exertion of his talents upon the populace, who had been often perſuaded to act in the moſt ungrateful and imprudent manner againſt the greateſt patriots that their country had produced; and, finally, he averred, that the liberal arts and ſciences had never flouriſhed ſo much in a republic as under the encouragement and protection of abſolute power; witneſs the Auguſtan age, and the reign of Lewis the Fourteenth; nor was it to be ſuppoſed that genius and merit could ever be ſo amply recompenſed by the individuals, or diſtracted councils of a commonwealth, as by the generoſity and magnificence of one who had the whole treaſures at his own command.

Peregrine, who was pleaſed to find the conteſt grow warm, obſerved that there ſeemed to be a good deal of truth in what Mr. Jolter advanced; and the painter, whoſe opinion began to waver, looked with a face of expectation at his friend, who, modelling his features into an expreſſion of exulting diſdain, aſked of his antagoniſt, if he did not think that very power of rewarding merit enabled an abſolute prince to indulge himſelf in the moſt arbitrary licence over the lives and fortunes of his people? Before the governor had time to anſwer this queſtion, Pallet broke forth into an exclamation of "By the Lord! that is certainly fact, egad! that was a home-thruſt, doctor." When Mr. Jolter, chaſtiſing this ſhallow intruder with a contemptuous look, affirmed, that though ſupreme power furniſhed a good prince with the means of exerting his virtues, it would not ſupport a tyrant in the exerciſe of cruelty and oppreſſion; becauſe in all nations the genius of the people muſt be conſulted by their governors, and the burden proportioned to the ſhoulders on

which it is laid.—" Elſe, what follows?" ſaid the phyſician). " The conſequence is plain (replied the governor), inſurrection, revolt, and his own deſtruction; for it is not to be ſuppoſed that the ſubjects of any nation would be ſo abject and puſillanimous, as to neglect the means which Heaven had put in their power for their own preſervation." " Gadzooks; you're in the right, Sir (cried Pallet), that I grant you muſt be confeſſed; doctor, I'm afraid we have got into the wrong box." This ſon of Pæan, however, far from being of his friend's opinion, obſerved, with an air of triumph, that he would not only demonſtrate the ſophiſtry of the gentleman's laſt allegation by arguments and facts, but even confute him with his own words. Jolter's eyes kindling at this preſumptuous declaration, he told his antagoniſt, while his lip quivered with reſentment, that, if his arguments were no better than his breeding, he was ſure he would make very few converts to his opinion; and the doctor, with all the inſolence of triumph, adviſed him to beware of diſputes for the future, until he ſhould have made himſelf more maſter of his ſubject.

Peregrine both wiſhed and hoped to ſee the diſputants proceed to arguments of more weight and conviction; and the painter, dreading the ſame iſſue, interpoſed with the uſual exclamation of " For God's ſake, gentlemen!" when the governor roſe from table in great dudgeon, and left the room, muttering ſome ejaculation, of which the word coxcomb only could be diſtinctly heard. The phyſician, being thus left maſter of the field of battle, was complimented on his victory by Peregrine, and ſo elevated by his ſucceſs, that he declaimed a full hour on the abſurdity of Jolter's propoſition, and the beauty of the democratic adminiſtration; canvaſſed the whole ſcheme of Plato's republic, with many quotations from that ideal author, touching the *to kalon*; from thence he made a tranſition to the moral ſenſe of Shafteſbury, and concluded his harangue with the greateſt part of that frothy writer's rhapſody, which he repeated with all the violence of enthuſiaſtic agitation, to the unſpeakable ſatisfaction of his entertainer, and the unutterable admiration of Pallet, who looked upon him as ſomething ſupernatural and divine. So intoxicated was this vain young man with the

ironical praiſes of Pickle, that he forthwith ſhook off all reſerve, and, having profeſſed a friendſhip for our hero, whoſe taſte and learning he did not fail to extol, intimated, in plain terms, that he was the only perſon in theſe latter ages who poſſeſſed that ſublime genius, that portion of the divinity or *Ti Theion*, which immortalized the Grecian poets; that as Pythagoras affirmed the ſpirit of Euphorbus had tranſmigrated into his body, he, the doctor, was ſtrangely poſſeſſed with the opinion that he himſelf was inſpired by the ſoul of Pindar; becauſe, making allowance for the difference of languages in which they wrote, there was a ſurpriſing affinity between his own works and thoſe of that celebrated Theban; and, as a confirmation of this truth, he immediately produced a ſample of each, which, though in ſpirit and verſification as different as the Odes of Horace and our preſent poet laureat, Peregrine did not ſcruple to pronounce altogether congenial, notwithſtanding the violence he by this ſentence offered to his own conſcience, and a certain alarm of his pride, that was weak enough to be diſturbed by the phyſician's ridiculous vanity and preſumption, which, not contented with diſplaying his importance in the world of taſte and polite literature, manifeſted itſelf in arrogating certain material diſcoveries in the province of phyſic, which could not fail to advance him to the higheſt pinnacle of that profeſſion, conſidering the recommendation of his other talents, together with a liberal fortune which he inherited from his father.

CHAPTER XLIV.

The doctor prepares an entertainment in the manner of the ancients, which is attended with divers ridiculous circumſtances.

In a word, our young gentleman, by his inſinuating behaviour, acquired the full confidence of the doctor, who invited him to an entertainment, which he intended to prepare in the manner of the ancients.—Pickle, ſtruck with this idea, eagerly embraced the propoſal, which he honoured with many encomiums, as a plan in all reſpects

worthy of his genius and apprehenſion; and the day was appointed at ſome diſtance of time, that the treater might have leiſure to compoſe certain pickles and confections, which were not to be found among the culinary preparations of theſe degenerate days.

With a view of rendering the phyſician's taſte more conſpicuous, and extracting from it the more diverſion, Peregrine propoſed that ſome foreigners ſhould partake of the banquet; and the taſk being left to his care and diſcretion, he actually beſpoke the company of a French marquis, an Italian count, and a German baron, whom he knew to be egregious coxcombs, and therefore more likely to enhance the joy of the entertainment.

Accordingly, the hour being arrived, he conducted them to the hotel where the phyſician lodged, after having regaled their expectations with an elegant meal in the genuine old Roman taſte; and they were received by Mr. Pallet, who did the honours of the houſe, while his friend ſuperintended the cook below. By this communicative painter, the gueſts underſtood that the doctor had met with numerous difficulties in the execution of his deſign; that no fewer than five cooks had been diſmiſſed, becauſe they could not prevail upon their own conſciences to obey his directions in things that were contrary to the preſent practice of their art; and that although he had at laſt engaged a perſon, by an extraordinary premium, to comply with his orders, the fellow was ſo aſtoniſhed, mortified, and incenſed at the commands he had received, that his hair ſtood on end, and he begged, on his knees, to be releaſed from the agreement he had made; but finding that his employer inſiſted upon the performance of his contract, and threatened to introduce him to the commiſſaire, if he ſhould flinch from the bargain, he had, in the diſcharge of his office, wept, ſung, curſed, and capered, for two whole hours without intermiſſion.

While the company liſtened to this odd information, by which they were prepoſſeſſed with ſtrange notions of the dinner, their ears were invaded by a piteous voice that exclaimed in French, "For the love of God! dear Sir! for the paſſion of Jeſus Chriſt! ſpare me the mortification of the honey and oil!" Their ears ſtill vibrated with the ſound, when the doctor entering, was by Pere-

grine made acquainted with the ſtrangers, to whom he, in the the tranſports of his wrath, could not help complaining of the want of complaiſance he had found in the Pariſian vulgar, by which his plan had been almoſt entirely ruined and ſet aſide. The French marquis, who thought the honour of his nation was concerned at this declaration, profeſſed his ſorrow for what had happened, ſo contrary to the eſtabliſhed character of the people, and undertook to ſee the delinquents ſeverely puniſhed, provided he could be informed of their names or places of abode. The mutual compliments that paſſed on this occaſion were ſcarce finiſhed, when a ſervant, coming into the room, announced dinner; and the entertainer led the way into another apartment, where they found a long table, or rather two boards joined together, and furniſhed with a variety of diſhes, the ſteams of which had ſuch evident effect upon the nerves of the company, that the marquis made frightful grimaces, under pretence of taking ſnuff; the Italian's eyes watered, the German's viſage underwent ſeveral diſtortions of features; our hero found means to exclude the odour from his ſenſe of ſmelling, by breathing only through his mouth; and the poor painter, running into another room, plugged his noſtrils with tobacco. The doctor himſelf, who was the only perſon then preſent whoſe organs were not diſcompoſed, pointing to a couple of couches placed on each ſide of the table, told his gueſts that he was ſorry he could not procure the exact triclinia of the ancients, which were ſomewhat different from theſe conveniencies, and deſired they would have the goodneſs to repoſe themſelves without ceremony, each in his reſpective couchette, while he and his friend Mr. Pallet would place themſelves upright at the ends, that they might have the pleaſure of ſerving thoſe that lay along. This diſpoſition, of which the ſtrangers had no previous idea, diſconcerted and perplexed them in a moſt riduculous manner; the marquis and baron ſtood bowing to each other, on pretence of diſputing the lower ſeat, but in reality with a view of profiting by the example of each other, for neither of them underſtood the manner in which they were to loll; and Peregrine, who enjoyed their confuſion, handed the count to the other ſide, where, with the moſt miſchievous polite-

neſs, he inſiſted upon his taking poſſeſſion of the upper place.

In this diſagreeable and ludicrous ſuſpence, they continued acting a pantomime of geſticulations, until the doctor earneſtly entreated them to wave all compliment and form, leſt the dinner ſhould be ſpoiled before the ceremonial could be adjuſted. Thus conjured, Peregrine took the lower couch on the left-hand ſide, laying himſelf gently down, with his face towards the table. The marquis, in imitation of this pattern (though he would have much rather faſted three days than run the riſk of diſcompoſing his dreſs by ſuch an attitude), ſtretched himſelf upon the oppoſite place, reclining upon his elbow in a moſt painful and awkward ſituation, with his head raiſed above the end of the couch, that the economy of his hair might not ſuffer by the projection of his body. The Italian, being a thin limber creature, planted himſelf next to Pickle, without ſuſtaining any misfortune, but that of his ſtocking being torn by a ragged nail of the ſeat, as he raiſed his legs on a level with the reſt of his limbs. But the baron, who was neither ſo weildy nor ſupple in his joints as his companions, flounced himſelf down with ſuch precipitation, that his feet, ſuddenly tilting up, came in furious contact with the head of the marquis, and demoliſhed every curl in a twinkling, while his own ſkull, at the ſame inſtant, deſcended upon the ſide of his couch with ſuch violence, that his periwig was ſtruck off, and the whole room filled with pulvilio.

The drollery of diſtreſs that attended this diſaſter entirely vanquiſhed the affected gravity of our young genman, who was obliged to ſuppreſs his laughter by cramming his handkerchief in his mouth; for the bare-headed German aſked pardon with ſuch ridiculous confuſion, and the marquis admitted his apology with ſuch rueful complaiſance, as were ſufficient to awake the mirth of a Quietiſt.

This misfortune being repaired as well as the circumſtances of the occaſion would permit, and every one ſettled according to the arrangement already deſcribed, the doctor graciouſly undertook to give ſome account of the diſhes as they occurred, that the company might be di-

rected in their choice; and, with an air of infinite ſatiſfaction, thus began—"This here, gentlemen, is a boiled gooſe, ſerved up in a ſauce compoſed of pepper, lovage, coriander, mint, rue, anchovies, and oil! I wiſh, for your ſakes, gentlemen, it was one of the geeſe of Ferrara, ſo much celebrated among the ancients for the magnitude of their livers, one of which is ſaid to have weighed upwards of two pounds; with this food, exquiſite as it was, did the tyrant Heliogabulus regale his hounds. But I beg pardon, I had almoſt forgot the ſoup, which I hear is ſo neceſſary an article at all tables in France. At each end there are diſhes of the ſalacacabia of the Romans, one is made of parſley, pennyroyal, cheeſe, pine-tops, honey, vinegar, brine, eggs, cucumbers, onions, and hen livers; the other is much the ſame as the ſoup-maigre of this country. Then there is a loin of veal boiled with fennel and carraway ſeed, on a pottage compoſed of pickle, oil, honey, and flour, and a curious hachis of the lights, liver, and blood of a hare, together with a diſh of roaſted pigeons. Monſieur le Baron, ſhall I help you to a plate of this ſoup?" The German, who did not at all diſapprove of the ingredients, aſſented to the propoſal, and ſeemed to reliſh the compoſition; while the marquis being aſked by the painter which of the ſilly-kickabys he choſe, was, in conſequence of his deſire, accommodated with a portion of the ſoup-maigre; and the count, in lieu of ſpoon-meat, of which he ſaid he was no great admirer, ſupplied himſelf with a pigeon, therein conforming to the choice of our young gentleman, whoſe example he determined to follow through the whole courſe of the entertainment.

The Frenchman having ſwallowed the firſt ſpoonful, made a full pauſe, his throat ſwelled, as if an egg had ſtuck in his gullet, his eyes rolled, and his mouth underwent a ſeries of involuntary contractions and dilatations. Pallet, who looked ſtedfaſtly at this connoiſſeur, with a view of conſulting his taſte, before he himſelf would venture upon the ſoup, began to be diſturbed at theſe emotions, and obſerved, with ſome concern, that the poor gentleman ſeemed to be going into a fit; when Peregrine aſſured him, that theſe were ſymptoms of ecſtaſy, and, for further confirmation, aſked the marquis how he found

the ſup. It was with infinite difficulty that his complaiſance could ſo far maſter his diſguſt, as to enable him to anſwer, "Altogether excellent, upon my honour!" And the painter being certified of his approbation, lifted the ſpoon to his mouth without ſcruple; but far from juſtifying the eulogium of his taſter, when this precious compoſition diffuſed itſelf upon his palate, he ſeemed to be deprived of all ſenſe and motion, and ſat like the leaden ſtatue of ſome river god, with the liquor flowing out at both ſides of his mouth.

The doctor, alarmed at this indecent phenomenon, earneſtly inquired into the cauſe of it; and when Pallet recovered his recollection, and ſwore that he would rather ſwallow porridge made of burning brimſtone than ſuch an infernal meſs as that which he had taſted, the phyſician, in his own vindication, aſſured the company, that, except the uſual ingredients, he had mixed nothing in the ſoup but ſome ſal armoniac, inſtead of the ancient nitrum, which could not now be procured; and appealed to the marquis, whether ſuch a ſuccedaneum was not an improvement on the whole. The unfortunate petit-maitre, driven to the extremity of his condeſcenſion, acknowledged it to be a maſterly refinement; and deeming himſelf obliged, in point of honour, to evince his ſentiments by his practice, forced a few more mouthfuls of this diſagreeable potion down his throat, till his ſtomach was ſo much offended, that he was compelled to ſtart up of a ſudden; and, in the hurry of his elevation, overturned his plate into the boſom of the baron. The emergency of his occaſions would not permit him to ſtay and make apologies for this abrupt behaviour; ſo that he flew into another apartment, where Pickle found him puking, and croſſing himſelf with great devotion; and a chair, at his deſire, being brought to the door, he ſlipped into it more dead than alive, conjuring his friend Pickle to make his peace with the company, and in particular excuſe him to the baron, on account of the violent fit of illneſs with which he had been ſeized. It was not without reaſon that he employed a mediator; for when our hero returned to the dining-room, the German got up, and was under the hands of his own lacquey, who wiped the greeſe from a rich embroidered waiſtcoat, while he, al-

to a ſenſible noſe, the ſtuffing being a mixture of pepper, lovage, and *aſſa fœtida*, and the ſauce conſiſting of wine and herring-pickle, which he had uſed inſtead of the celebrated *garum* of the Romans; that famous pickle having been prepared ſometimes of the *ſcombri*, which were a ſort of Tunny fiſh, and ſometimes of the *ſilurus*, or ſhad fiſh; nay, he obſerved that there was a third kind called *garum hæmation*, made of the guts, gills, and blood of the *thynnus*.

The phyſician, finding it would be impracticable to reeſtabliſh the order of the banquet, by preſenting again the diſhes which had been diſcompoſed, ordered every thing to be removed, a clean cloth to be laid, and the deſert to be brought in.

Meanwhile, he regretted his incapacity to give them a ſpecimen of the *alieus*, or fiſh meals of the ancients, ſuch as the *jus diabaton*, the conger-eel, which, in Galen's opinion, is hard of digeſtion, the *cornuta* or gurnard, deſcribed by Pliny in his Natural Hiſtory, who ſays, the horns of many of them were a foot and a half in length; the mullet and lamprey, that were in the higheſt eſtimation of old, of which laſt Julius Cæſar borrowed ſix thouſand for one triumphal ſupper. He obſerved, that the manner of dreſſing them was deſcribed by Horace, in the account he gives of the entertainment to which Mæcenas was invited by the epicure Naſiedenus,

Affertur ſquillos inter Murena natantes, &c.

and told them, that they were commonly eaten with the *thus Syriacum*, a certain anodyne and aſtringent ſeed, which qualified the purgative nature of the fiſh. Finally, this learned phyſician gave them to underſtand, that, though this was reckoned a luxurious diſh in the zenith of the Roman taſte, it was by no means comparable, in point of expence, to ſome preparations in vogue about the time of that abſurd voluptuary Heliogabalus, who ordered the brains of ſix hundred oſtriches to be compounded in one meſs.

By this time the deſert appeared, and the company were not a little rejoiced to ſee plain olives in ſalt and water: But what the maſter of the feaſt valued himſelf upon was, a ſort of jelly, which he affirmed to be pre-

ferable to the *hypotrimma* of Heſychius, being a mixture of vinegar, pickle, and honey, boiled to a proper conſiſtence, and candied *aſſa fœtida*, which he aſſerted, in contradiction to Aumelbergius and Liſter, was no other than the *laſer Syriacum*, ſo precious as to be ſold among the ancients to the weight of a ſilver penny. The gentlemen took his word for the excellency of this gum, but contented themſelves with the olives, which gave ſuch an agreeable reliſh to the wine, that they ſeemed very well diſpoſed to conſole themſelves for the diſgraces they had endured; and Pickle, unwilling to loſe the leaſt circumſtance of entertainment that could be enjoyed in their company, went in queſt of the painter, who remained in his penitentials in another apartment, and could not be perſuaded to re-enter the banqueting room, until Peregrine undertook to procure his pardon from thoſe whom he had injured. Having aſſured him of this indulgence, our young gentleman led him in like a criminal, bowing on all hands with an air of humility and contrition; and particularly addreſſing himſelf to the count, to whom he ſwore in Engliſh, as God was his Saviour, he had no intent to affront man, woman, or child; but was fain to make the beſt of his way, that he might not give the honourable company cauſe of offence, by obeying the dictates of nature in their preſence.

When Pickle interpreted this apology to the Italian, Pallet was forgiven in very polite terms, and even received into favour by his friend the doctor, in conſequence of our hero's interceſſion; ſo that all the gueſts forgot their chagrin, and paid their reſpects ſo piouſly to the bottle, that, in a ſhort time, the champagne produced very evident effects in the behaviour of all preſent.

CHAPTER XLV.

The painter is perſuaded to accompany Pickle to a maſquerade in woman's apparel; is engaged in a troubleſome adventure, and, with his companion, conveyed to the Baſtile.

THE painter, at the requeſt of Pickle, who had a deſign upon the count's ſenſe of hearing, favoured the company

with the ſong of *Bumper Squire Jones*, which yielded infinite ſatisfaction to the baron; but affected the delicate ears of the Italian in ſuch a manner, that his features expreſſed aſtoniſhment and diſquiet; and, by his ſudden and repeated journeys to the door, it plainly appeared, that he was in the ſame predicament with thoſe who, as Shakſpeare obſerves, when the bagpipe ſings in the noſe, cannot contain their urine for affection.

With a view, therefore, of vindicating muſic from ſuch a barbarous taſte, Mr. Pallet had no ſooner performed his taſk, than the count honoured his friends with ſome favourite airs of his own country, which he warbled with infinite grace and expreſſion, though they had not energy ſufficient to engage the attention of the German, who fell faſt aſleep upon his couch, and ſnored ſo loud as to interrupt, and totally annul this raviſhing entertainment; ſo that they were fain to have recourſe again to the glaſs, which made ſuch innovation upon the brain of the phyſician, that he ſung divers odes of Anacreon, to a tune of his own compoſing, and held forth upon the muſic and recitative of the ancients with great erudition; while Pallet, having found means to make the Italian acquainted with the nature of his profeſſion, harangued upon painting with wonderful volubility, in a language which (it was well for his own credit) the ſtranger did not underſtand.

At length the doctor was ſeized with ſuch a qualm, that he begged Peregrine to lead him to his chamber; and the baron being waked, retired with the count.

Peregrine, being rendered frolicſome with the wine he had drank, propoſed that he and Pallet ſhould go to a maſquerade, which he recollected was to be given that night. The painter did not want curioſity and inclination to accompany him, but expreſſed his apprehenſion of loſing him in the ball, an accident which could not fail to be very diſagreeable, as he was an utter ſtranger to the language and the town. To obviate this objection, the landlady, who was of their council, adviſed him to appear in a woman's dreſs, which would lay his companion under the neceſſity of attending him with more care, as he could not, with decency, detach himſelf from the lady whom he ſhould introduce; beſides, ſuch a ſup-

poſed connection would hinder the ladies of pleaſure from accoſting and employing their ſeducing arts upon a perſon already engaged.

Our young gentleman, foreſeeing the abundance of diverſion in the execution of this project, ſeconded the propoſal with ſuch importunity and addreſs, that the painter allowed himſelf to be habited in a ſuit belonging to the landlady, who alſo procured for him a maſk and domino, while Pickle provided himſelf with a Spaniſh dreſs. In this diſguiſe, which they put on about eleven o'clock, did they, attended by Pipes, ſet out in a fiacre for the ball room, into which Pickle led this ſuppoſititious female, to the aſtoniſhment of the whole company, who had never ſeen ſuch an uncouth figure in the appearance of a woman.

After they had taken a view of all the remarkable maſks, and the painter had been treated with a glaſs of liquor, his miſchievous companion gave him the ſlip, and vaniſhing in an inſtant, returned with another maſk and a domino over his habit, that he might enjoy Pallet's perplexity, and be at hand to protect him from inſult.

The poor painter, having loſt his guide, was almoſt diſtracted with anxiety, and ſtalked about the room in queſt of him, with ſuch huge ſtrides and oddity of geſture, that he was followed by a whole multitude, who gazed at him as a preternatural phenomenon. This attendance increaſed his uneaſineſs to ſuch a degree, that he could not help uttering a ſoliloquy aloud, in which he curſed his fate for having depended upon the promiſe of ſuch a wag; and ſwore, that, if once he was clear of this ſcrape, he would not bring himſelf into ſuch a premunire again for the whole kingdom of France.

Divers petit-maitres underſtanding the maſque was a foreigner, who, in all probability, could not ſpeak French, made up to him in their turns, in order to diſplay their wit and addreſs, and teized him with ſeveral arch queſtions, to which he made no other anſwer than, "No *parly Francy*. Damn your chattering!—Go about your buſineſs, can't ye?" Among the maſks was a nobleman, who began to be very free with the ſuppoſed lady, and attempted to plunge his hand into her boſom: But the painter was too modeſt to ſuffer ſuch indecent treatment; and, when the gallant repeated his efforts in a manner

ſtill more indelicate, lent him ſuch a box on the ear, as made the lights dance before him, and created ſuch a ſuſpicion of Pallet's ſex, that the Frenchman ſwore he was either a male or hermaphrodite, and inſiſted upon a ſcrutiny, for the ſake of his own honour, with ſuch obſtinacy of reſentment, that the fictitious nymph was in imminent danger, not only of being expoſed, but alſo of undergoing ſevere chaſtiſement, for having made ſo free with the prince's ear; when Peregrine, who ſaw and overheard every thing that paſſed, thought it was high time to interpoſe; and accordingly aſſerted his pretenſions to the inſulted lady, who was overjoyed at this proof of his protection.

The affronted gallant perſevered in demanding to know who ſhe was, and our hero as ſtrenuouſly refuſed to give him that ſatisfaction: ſo that high words enſued; and the prince threatening to puniſh his inſolence, the young gentleman, who was not ſuppoſed to know his quality, pointed to the place where his own ſword uſed to hang; and ſnapping his fingers in his face, laid hold on the painter's arm, and led him to another part of the room, leaving his antagoniſt to the meditations of his own revenge.

Pallet, having chid his conductor for his barbarous deſertion, made him acquainted with the difficulty in which he had been involved, and flatly telling him, he would not put it in his power to give him the ſlip again, held faſt by his arm during the remaining part of the entertainment, to the no ſmall diverſion of the company, whoſe attention was altogether engroſſed in the contemplation of ſuch an awkward, ungainly, ſtalking apparition. At laſt, Pickle being tired of exhibiting this raree-ſhow, complied with the repeated deſires of his companion, and handed her into the coach; which he himſelf had no ſooner entered, than they were ſurrounded by a file of muſqueteers, commanded by an exempt, who, ordering the coach-door to be opened, took his place with great deliberation, while one of his detachment mounted the box, in order to direct the driver.

Peregrine at once conceived the meaning of this arreſt, and it was well for him he had no weapon wherewith to ſtand upon his defence; for ſuch was the impetuoſity and

raſhneſs of his temper, that, had he been armed, he would have run all riſks rather than ſurrender himſelf to any odds whatever; but Pallet imagining that the officer was ſome gentleman who had miſtaken their carriage for his own, deſired his friend to undeceive the ſtranger; and, when he was informed of the real ſtate of their condition, his knees began to ſhake, his teeth to chatter, and he uttered a moſt doleful lamentation, importing his fear of being carried to ſome hideous dungeon of the Baſtile, where he ſhould ſpend the reſt of his days in miſery and horror, and never ſee the light of God's ſun, nor the face of a friend, but periſh in a foreign land, far removed from his family and connections. Pickle damned him for his puſillanimity; and the exempt hearing a lady bemoan herſelf ſo piteouſly, expreſſed his mortification at being the inſtrument of giving her ſuch pain, and endeavoured to conſole them, by repreſenting the lenity of the French government, and the ſingular generoſity of the prince, by whoſe order they were apprehended.

Peregrine, whoſe diſcretion ſeemed to forſake him on all ſuch occaſions, exclaimed with great bitterneſs againſt the arbitrary adminiſtration of France, and inveighed, with many expreſſions of contempt, againſt the character of the offended prince, whoſe reſentment (far from being noble, he ſaid) was pitiful, ungenerous, and unjuſt. To this remonſtrance the officer made no reply, but ſhrugged up his ſhoulders in ſilent aſtoniſhment at the *hardieſſe* of the priſoner, and the fiacre was juſt on the point of ſetting out, when they heard the noiſe of a ſcuffle at the back of the coach, and the voice of Tom Pipes pronouncing, "I'll be damn'd if I do." This truſty attendant had been deſired by one of the guard to deſcend from his ſtation in the rear, but, as he reſolved to ſhare his maſter's fate, he took no notice of their entreaties, until they were ſeconded by force; and that he endeavoured to repel with his heel, which he applied with ſuch energy to the jaws of the ſoldier who firſt came in contact with him, that they emitted a craſhing ſound like a dried walnut between the grinders of a templar in the pit. Exaſperated at this outrage, the other ſaluted Tom's poſteriors with his bayonet, which incommoded him ſo much, that he could no longer keep his poſt, but leaping upon the ground, gave

his antagoniſt a chuck under the chin, which laid him upon his back, and then ſkipping over him with infinite agility, abſconded among the crowd of coaches, till he ſaw the guard mount before and behind upon his maſter's fiacre, which no ſooner ſet forward than he followed at a ſmall diſtance, to reconnoitre the place where Peregrine ſhould be confined.

After having proceeded ſlowly through many windings and turnings, to a part of Paris in which Pipes was an utter ſtranger, the coach ſtopped at a great gate, with a wicket in the middle, which being opened at the approach of the carriage, the priſoners were admitted; and the guard returning with the fiacre, Tom determined to watch in that place all night, that in the morning he might make ſuch obſervations as might be conducive to the enlargement of his maſter.

CHAPTER XLVI.

By the fidelity of Pipes, Jolter is informed of his pupil's fate. Confers with the phyſician. Applies to the ambaſſador, who, with great difficulty, obtains the diſcharge of the priſoners, on certain conditions.

THIS plan he executed, notwithſtanding the pain of his wound, and the queſtions of the city guard both horſe and foot, to which he could make no other anſwer than "*Anglois, Anglois;*" and as ſoon as it was light, taking an accurate ſurvey of the caſtle (for ſuch it ſeemed to be) into which Peregrine and Pallet had been conveyed, together with its ſituation in reſpect to the river, he went home to their lodgings, and waking Mr. Jolter, gave him an account of the adventure. The governor wrung his hands in the utmoſt grief and conſternation, when he heard this unfortunate piece of news; he did not doubt that his pupil was impriſoned in the Baſtile for life; and, in the anguiſh of his apprehenſion, curſed the day on which he had undertaken to ſuperintend the conduct of ſuch an imprudent young man, who had, by reiterated inſults, provoked the vengeance of ſuch a mild forbearing adminiſtration. That he might not, however, neglect any

means in his power to extricate him from his preſent misfortune, he diſpatched Thomas to the doctor, with an account of his companion's fate, that they might join their intereſt in behalf of the captives; and the phyſician being informed of what had happened, immediately dreſſed himſelf, and repaired to Jolter, whom he accoſted in theſe words: "Now, Sir, I hope you are convinced of your error, in aſſerting, that oppreſſion can never be the effect of arbitrary power. Such a calamity as this could never have happened under the Athenian democracy: Nay, even when the tyrant Piſiſtratus got poſſeſſion of that commonwealth, he durſt not venture to rule with ſuch abſolute and unjuſt dominion. You ſhall ſee now that Mr. Pickle and my friend Pallet will fall a ſacrifice to the tyranny of lawleſs power; and, in my opinion, we ſhall be acceſſary to the ruin of this poor enſlaved people, if we beſtir ourſelves in demanding or imploring the releaſe of our unhappy countrymen; as we may thereby prevent the commiſſion of a flagrant crime, which would fill up the vengeance of Heaven againſt the perpetrators, and perhaps be the means of reſtoring a whole nation to the unſpeakable fruition of freedom. For my own part, I ſhould rejoice to ſee the blood of my father ſpilt in ſuch a glorious cauſe, provided ſuch a victim would furniſh me with the opportunity of diſſolving the chains of ſlavery, and vindicating that liberty which is the birth-right of man. Then would my name be immortalized among the patriot heroes of antiquity, and my memory, like that of Harmodius and Ariſtogiton, be honoured by ſtatues erected at the public expence." This rhapſody, which was delivered with great emphaſis and agitation, gave ſo much offence to Jolter, that, without ſpeaking one word, he retired in great wrath to his own chamber, and the republican returned to his lodging, in full hope of his prognoſtic being verified in the death and deſtruction of Peregrine and the painter, which muſt give riſe to ſome renowned revolution, wherein he himſelf would act a principal part. But the governor, whoſe imagination was not quite ſo warm and prolific, went directly to the ambaſſador, whom he informed of his pupil's ſituation, and beſought to interpoſe with the French

miniſtry, that he and the other Britiſh ſubject might obtain their liberty.

His excellency aſked if Jolter could gueſs at the cauſe of his impriſonment, that he might be the better prepared to vindicate or excuſe his conduct; but neither he nor Pipes could give the ſmalleſt hint of intelligence on that ſubject; though he furniſhed himſelf from Tom's own mouth with a circumſtantial account of the manner in which his maſter had been arreſted, as well as of his own behaviour, and the diſaſter he had received on that occaſion. His lordſhip never doubted that Pickle had brought this calamity upon himſelf by ſome unlucky prank he had played at the maſquerade; eſpecially when he underſtood that the young gentleman had drank freely in the afternoon, and been ſo whimſical as to go thither with a man in woman's apparel; and he, that ſame day, waited on the French miniſter, in full confidence of obtaining his diſcharge; but met with more difficulty than he expected, the court of France being extremely punctilious in every thing that concerns a prince of the blood: The ambaſſador was therefore obliged to talk in very high terms; and though the preſent circumſtances of the French politics would not allow them to fall out with the Britiſh adminiſtration for trifles, all the favour he could procure, was a promiſe that Pickle ſhould be ſet at liberty, provided he would aſk pardon of the prince to whom he had given offence. His excellency thought this was but a reaſonable condeſcenſion, ſuppoſing Peregrine to have been in the wrong; and Jolter was admitted to him, in order to communicate and reinforce his lordſhip's advice, which was, that he ſhould comply with the terms propoſed. The governor, who did not enter this gloomy fortreſs without fear and trembling, found his pupil in a diſmal apartment, void of all furniture, but a ſtool and truckle-bed; the moment he was admitted, he perceived the youth whiſtling with great unconcern, and working with his pencil at the bare wall, on which he had delineated a ludicrous figure, labelled with the name of the nobleman whom he had affronted, and an Engliſh maſtiff with his leg lifted up, in the attitude of making water in his ſhoe. He had been even ſo preſumptuous as to explain the device with ſatirical inſcriptions in the French

language, which, when Jolter peruſed, his hair ſtood on end with affright. The very turnkey was confounded and overawed by the boldneſs of his behaviour, which he had never ſeen matched by any inhabitant of that place; and actually joined his friend in perſuading him to ſubmit to the eaſy demand of the miniſter. But our hero, far from embracing the counſel of this advocate, handed him to the door with great ceremony, and diſmiſſed him with a kick on the breech; and to all the ſupplications, and even tears of Jolter, made no other reply, than that he would ſtoop to no condeſcenſion, becauſe he had committed no crime; but would leave his caſe to the cognizance and exertion of the Britiſh court, whoſe duty it was to ſee juſtice done to its own ſubjects: He deſired, however, that Pallet, who was confined in another place, might avail himſelf of his own diſpoſition, which was ſufficiently pliable. But when the governor deſired to ſee his fellow-priſoner, the turnkey gave him to underſtand, that he had received no orders relating to the lady, and therefore could not admit him into her apartment; though he was complaiſant enough to tell him that ſhe ſeemed very much mortified at her confinement, and at certain times behaved as if her brain was not a little diſordered. Jolter, thus baffled in all his endeavours, quitted the Baſtile with a heavy heart, and reported his fruitleſs negotiation to the ambaſſador, who could not help breaking forth into ſome acrimonious expreſſions againſt the obſtinacy and inſolence of the young man, who, he ſaid, deſerved to ſuffer for his folly. Nevertheleſs, he did not deſiſt from his repreſentations to the French miniſtry, which he found ſo unyielding, that he was obliged to threaten in plain terms to make it a national concern; and not only write to his court for inſtructions, but even adviſe the council to make repriſals, and ſend ſome French gentleman in London to the Tower.

This intimation had an effect upon the miniſtry at Verſailles, who, rather than run the riſk of incenſing a people, whom it was neither their intereſt nor inclination to diſoblige, conſented to diſcharge the offenders, on condition that they ſhould leave Paris in three days after their enlargement. This propoſal was readily agreed to by Peregrine, who was now a little more tractable, and hear-

tily tired of being cooped up in ſuch an uncomfortable abode, for the ſpace of three long-days, without any ſort of communication or entertainment, but that which his own imagination ſuggeſted.

CHAPTER XLVII.

Peregrine makes himſelf merry at the expence of the painter, who curſes his landlady, and breaks with the doctor.

As he could eaſily conceive the ſituation of his companion in adverſity, he was unwilling to leave the place, until he had reaped ſome diverſion from his diſtreſs, and with that view repaired to the dungeon of the afflicted painter, to which he had by this time free acceſs. When he entered, the firſt object that preſented itſelf to his eye was ſo uncommonly ridiculous, that he could ſcarce preſerve that gravity of countenance which he had affected in order to execute the joke he had planned. The forlorn Pallet ſat upright in his bed, in a diſhabille that was altogether extraordinary. He had laid aſide his monſtrous hoop, together with his ſtays, gown, and petticoat, wrapped his lappets about his head by way of night-cap, and wore his domino as a looſe morning-dreſs; his grizzled locks hung down about his lack-luſtre eyes and tawney neck, in all the diſorder of negligence; his gray beard briſtled about half an inch through the remains of the paint with which his viſage had been bedaubed, and every feature of his face was lengthened to the moſt ridiculous expreſſion of grief and diſmay. Seeing Peregrine come in, he ſtarted up in a ſort of frantic ecſtaſy, and, running towards him with open arms, no ſooner perceived the woeful appearance into which our hero had modelled his phyſiognomy, than he ſtopped ſhort all of a ſudden, and the joy which had begun to take poſſeſſion of his heart was in a moment diſpelled by the moſt rueful preſages; ſo that he ſtood in a moſt ludicrous poſture of dejection, like a malefactor at the Old Bailey, when ſentence is about to be pronounced. Pickle, taking him by the hand, heaved a profound ſigh, and after having proteſted that he was

extremely mortified at being pitched upon as the meſſenger of bad news, told him, with an air of ſympathy and infinite concern, that the French court having diſcovered his ſex, had reſolved, in conſideration of the outrageous indignity he offered in public to a prince of the blood, to detain him in the Baſtile a priſoner for life; and that this ſentence was a mitigation obtained by the importunities of the Britiſh ambaſſador, the puniſhment ordained by law being no other than breaking alive upon the wheel. Theſe tidings aggravated the horrors of the painter to ſuch a degree, that he roared aloud, and ſkipped about the room in all the extravagance of diſtraction; taking God and man to witneſs that he would rather ſuffer immediate death, than endure one year's impriſonment in ſuch a hideous place; and curſing the hour of his birth, and the moment on which he departed from his own country. "For my own part (ſaid his tormentor, in a hypocritical tone), I was obliged to ſwallow the bitter pill of making ſubmiſſions to the prince, who, as I had not preſumed to ſtrike him, received acknowledgments, in conſequence of which I ſhall be this day ſet at liberty; and there is even one expedient left for the recovery of your freedom. It is, I own, a diſagreeable remedy; but one had better undergo a little mortification, than be for ever wretched. Beſides, upon ſecond thoughts, I begin to imagine that you will not for ſuch a trifle ſacrifice yourſelf to the unceaſing horrors of a ſolitary dungeon, eſpecially as your condeſcenſion will in all probability be attended with advantages which you could not otherwiſe enjoy." Pallet, interrupting him with great eagerneſs, begged for the love of God that he would no longer keep him in the torture of ſuſpence, but mention that ſame remedy, which he was reſolved to ſwallow, let it be never ſo unpalatable.

Peregrine, having thus played upon his paſſions of fear and hope, anſwered, that, as the offence was committed in the habit of a woman, which was a diſguiſe unworthy of the other ſex, the French court was of opinion that the delinquent ſhould be reduced to the neuter gender; ſo that there was an alternative at his own option, by which he had it in his power to regain immediate freedom. "What! (cried the painter in deſpair), become a ſinger?

Gadzooks! and the devil and all that, I'll rather lie ſtill where I am, and let myſelf be devoured by vermin." Then thruſting out his throat, "Here is my wind-pipe (ſaid he), be ſo good, my dear friend, as to give it a ſlice or two; if you don't, I ſhall one of theſe days be found dangling in my garters. What an unfortunate raſcal I am! What a blockhead, and a beaſt, and a fool was I to truſt myſelf among ſuch a barbarous ruffian race! Lord forgive you, Mr. Pickle, for having been the immediate cauſe of my diſaſter; if you had ſtood by me from the beginning, according to your promiſe, I ſhould not have been teazed by that coxcomb who has brought me to this paſs. And why did I put on this damn'd unlucky dreſs? Lard curſe that chattering Jezebel of a landlady, who adviſed ſuch a prepoſterous diſguiſe! a diſguiſe which hath not only brought me to this paſs, but alſo rendered me abominable to myſelf and frightful to others; for when I this morning ſignified to the turnkey, that I wanted to be ſhaved, he looked at my beard with aſtoniſhment, and, croſſing himſelf, muttered his pater-noſter, believing me (I ſuppoſe) to be a witch, or ſomething worſe. And heaven confound that loathſome banquet of the ancients, which provoked me to drink too freely, that I might waſh away the taſte of that accurſed ſillikicaby."

Our young gentleman, having heard his lamentation to an end, excuſed himſelf for his conduct, by repreſenting, that he could not poſſibly foreſee the diſagreeable conſequences that attended it; and, in the mean time, ſtrenuouſly counſelled him to ſubmit to the terms of his enlargement. He obſerved, that he was now arrived at that time of life, when the luſts of the fleſh ſhould be entirely mortified within him, and his greateſt concern ought to be the health of his ſoul, to which nothing could more effectually contribute than the amputation which was propoſed; that his body, as well as his mind, would profit by the change, becauſe he would have no dangerous appetite to gratify, and no carnal thoughts to divert him from the duties of his profeſſion; and his voice, which was naturally ſweet, would improve to ſuch a degree, that he would captivate the ears of all the people of faſhion and taſte, and in a little time be celebaated under the appellation of the Engliſh Seneſino.

Theſe arguments did not fail to make an impreſſion upon the painter, who, nevertheleſs, ſtarted two objections to his compliance; namely the diſgrace of the puniſhment, and the dread of his wife. Pickle undertook to obviate theſe difficulties, by aſſuring him, that the ſentence would be executed ſo privately as never to tranſpire; and that his wife could not be ſo unconſcionable, after ſo many years of cohabitation, as to take exceptions to an expedient, by which ſhe would not only enjoy the converſation of her huſband, but even the fruits of thoſe talents which the knife would ſo remarkably refine.

Pallet ſhook his head at this laſt remonſtrance, as if he thought it would not be altogether convincing to his ſpouſe; but yielded to the propoſal, provided her conſent could be obtained. Juſt as he ſignified this condeſcenſion, the gaoler entered, and, addreſſing himſelf to the ſuppoſed lady, expreſſed his ſatisfaction in having the honour to tell her, that ſhe was no longer a priſoner. As the painter did not underſtand one word of what he ſaid, Peregrine undertook the office of interpreter, and made his friend believe the gaoler's ſpeech was no other than an intimation, that the miniſtry had ſent a ſurgeon to execute what was propoſed, and that the inſtruments and dreſſings were prepared in the next room. Alarmed and terrified at this ſudden appointment, he flew to the other end of the room, and ſnatching up an earthen chamber-pot, which was the only offenſive weapon in the place, put himſelf in a poſture of defence, and, with many oaths, threatened to try the temper of the barber's ſkull, if he ſhould preſume to ſet his noſe within the apartment.

The gaoler, who little expected ſuch a reception, concluded, that the poor gentlewoman had actually loſt her wits, and retreated with precipitation, leaving the door open as he went out. Upon which Pickle, gathering up the particulars of his dreſs with great diſpatch, crammed them into Pallet's arms, and, taking notice that now the coaſt was clear, exhorted him to follow his footſteps to the gate, where a hackney coach ſtood for his reception. There being no time for heſitation, the painter took his advice, and, without quitting the utenſil, which in his hurry he forgot to lay down, ſallied out in the rear of our hero, with all that wildneſs of terror and impatience

which may be reaſonably ſuppoſed to take poſſeſſion of a man who flies from perpetual impriſonment. Such was the tumult of his agitation, that his faculty of thinking was for the preſent utterly overwhelmed, and he ſaw no object but his conductor, whom he followed by a ſort of inſtinctive impulſe, without regarding the keepers and centinels, who, as he paſſed, with his clothes under one arm, and his chamber-pot brandiſhed above his head, were confounded, and even diſmayed at the ſtrange apparition.

During the whole courſe of this irruption, he ceaſed not to cry with great vociferation, "Drive, coachman, drive, in the name of God!" And the carriage had proceeded the length of a whole ſtreet, before he manifeſted the leaſt ſign of reflection, but ſtared like the Gorgon's head, with his mouth wide open, and each particular hair crawling and twining like an animated ſerpent. At length, however, he began to recover the uſe of his ſenſes, and aſked if Peregrine thought him out of all danger of being retaken. This unrelenting wag, not yet ſatisfied with the affliction he had impoſed upon the ſufferer, anſwered, with an air of doubt and concern, that he hoped they would not be overtaken, and prayed to God they might not be retarded by a ſtop of carriages. Pallet fervently joined in this ſupplication, and they advanced a few yards further, when the noiſe of a coach at full ſpeed behind them invaded their ears; and Pickle having looked out of the window, withdrew his head in ſeeming confuſion, and exclaimed, "Lord have mercy upon us! I wiſh that may not be a guard ſent after us. Methinks I ſaw the muzzle of a fuſil ſticking out of the coach." The painter, hearing theſe tidings, that inſtant thruſt himſelf half out at the window, with his helmet ſtill in his hand, bellowing to the coachman, as loud as he could roar, "Drive, damn ye, drive! to the gates of Jericho and ends of the earth! Drive, you raggamuffin, you raſcallion, you hell-hound! drive us to the pit of hell, rather than we ſhould be taken."

Such a phantom could not paſs without attracting the curioſity of the people, who ran to the doors and windows, in order to behold this object of admiration. With the ſame view, that coach, which was ſuppoſed to be in

purſuit of him, ſtopped juſt as the windows of each happened to be oppoſite; and Pallet looking behind, and ſeeing three men ſtanding upon the foot-board, armed with canes, which his fear converted into fuſils, never doubted that his friend's ſuſpicion was juſt; but, ſhaking his jordan at the imaginary guard, ſwore he would ſooner die than part with his precious ware. The owner of the coach, who was a nobleman of the firſt quality, miſtook him for ſome unhappy woman deprived of her ſenſes; and, ordering his coachman to proceed, convinced the fugitive, to his infinite joy, that this was no more than a falſe alarm. He was not, for all that, freed from anxiety and trepidation; but our young gentleman, fearing his brain would not bear a repetition of the ſame joke, permitted him to gain his own lodgings, without further moleſtation.

His landlady, meeting him on the ſtair, was ſo affected at his appearance, that ſhe ſcreamed aloud, and betook herſelf to flight; while he, curſing her with great bitterneſs, ruſhed into the apartment of the doctor, who, inſtead of receiving him with cordial embraces, and congratulating him upon his deliverance, gave evident tokens of umbrage and diſcontent; and even plainly told him, he hoped to have heard that he and Mr. Pickle had acted the glorious part of Cato—an event which would have laid the foundation of ſuch noble ſtruggles, as could not fail to end in happineſs and freedom; and that he had already made ſome progreſs in an ode that would have immortalized their names, and inſpired the flame of liberty in every honeſt breaſt.—"There (ſaid he) I would have proved, that great talents, and high ſentiments of liberty, do reciprocally produce and aſſiſt each other; and illuſtrated my aſſertions with ſuch notes and quotations from the Greek writers, as would have opened the eyes of the moſt blind and unthinking, and touched the moſt callous and obdurate heart. *O fool! to think the man, whoſe ample mind muſt graſp whatever yonder ſtars ſurvey*——Pray, Mr. Pallet, what is your opinion of that image of the mind's graſping the whole univerſe? For my own part, I can't help thinking it the moſt happy conception that ever entered my imagination.

The painter, who was not ſuch a flaming enthuſiaſt

in the cauſe of liberty, could not brook the doctor's reflections, which he thought favoured a little too much of indifference and deficiency in point of private friendſhip; and therefore ſeized the preſent opportunity of mortifying his pride, by obſerving, that the image was, without all doubt, very grand and magnificent; but that he had been obliged for the idea to Mr. Bayes, in the Rehearſal, who values himſelf upon the ſame figure, conveyed in theſe words, *But all theſe clouds, when by the eye of reaſon graſp'd*, &c. Upon any other occaſion, the painter would have triumphed greatly in this detection; but ſuch was the flutter and confuſion of his ſpirits, under the apprehenſion of being retaken, that, without further communication, he retreated to his own room, in order to reſume his own dreſs, which he hoped would alter his appearance in ſuch a manner, as to baffle all ſearch and examination; while the phyſician remained aſhamed and abaſhed, to find himſelf convicted of bombaſt by a perſon of ſuch contemptible talents. He was offended at this proof of his memory, and ſo much enraged at his preſumption in exhibiting it, that he could never forgive his want of reverence, and took every opportunity of expoſing his ignorance and folly in the ſequel. Indeed, the ties of private affection were too weak to engage the heart of this republican, whoſe zeal for the community had entirely ſwallowed up his concern for individuals. He loooked upon particular friendſhip as a paſſion unworthy of his ample ſoul, and was a profeſſed admirer of L. Manlius, Junius Brutus, and thoſe later patriots of the ſame name, who ſhut their ears againſt the cries of nature, and reſiſted all the dictates of gratitude and humanity.

CHAPTER XLVIII.

Pallet conceives a hearty contempt of his fellow-traveller, and attaches himſelf to Pickle, who, nevertheleſs, perſecutes him with his miſchievous talent upon the road to Flanders.

In the mean time, his companion having employed divers pails full of water, in cleanſing himſelf from the

ſqualour of a jail, ſubmitted his face to the barber, tinged his eye-brows with a ſable hue, and, being dreſſed in his own clothes, ventured to viſit Peregrine, who was ſtill under the hands of his valet-de-chambre, and who gave him to underſtand, that his eſcape had been connived at, and that the condition of their deliverance was their departure from Paris in three days.

The painter was tranſported with joy, when he learnt that he ran no riſk of being retaken; and, far from repining at the terms of his enlargement, would have willingly ſet out on his return to England that ſame afternoon; for the Baſtile had made ſuch an impreſſion upon him, that he ſtarted at the ſound of every coach, and turned pale at ſight of a French ſoldier. In the fulneſs of his heart, he complained of the doctor's indifference, and related what had paſſed at their meeting with evident marks of reſentment and diſreſpect; which were not at all diminiſhed, when Jolter informed him of the phyſician's behaviour, when he ſent for him to confer about the means of abridging their confinement. Pickle himſelf was incenſed at his want of bowels; and, perceiving how much he had ſunk in the opinion of his fellow-traveller, reſolved to encourage theſe ſentiments of diſguſt, and occaſionally foment the diviſion to a downright quarrel, which he foreſaw would produce ſome diverſion, and perhaps expoſe the poet's character in ſuch a light as would effectually puniſh him for his arrogance and barbarity. With this view, he levelled ſeveral ſatirical jokes at the doctor's pedantry and taſte, which had appeared ſo conſpicuous in the quotations he had got by heart from ancient authors; in his affected diſdain of the beſt pictures in the world, which, had he been endowed with the leaſt ſhare of diſcernment, he could not have beheld with ſuch inſenſibility; and, laſtly, in his ridiculous banquet, which none but an egregious coxcomb, devoid of all elegance and ſenſe, would have prepared, or preſented to rational beings. In a word, our young gentleman played the artillery of his wit againſt him with ſuch ſucceſs, that the painter ſeemed to wake from a dream, and went home with the moſt hearty contempt for the perſon he had formerly adored.

Inſtead of uſing the privilege of a friend, to enter his

apartment without ceremony, he ſent in his ſervant with a meſſage, importing, that he intended to ſet out from Paris next day, in company with Mr. Pickle, and deſiring to know whether or not he was or would be prepared for the journey. The doctor, ſtruck with the manner, as well as the matter of this intimation, went immediately to Pallet's room, and demanded to know the cauſe of ſuch a ſudden determination, without his privity or concurrence; and, when he underſtood the neceſſity of their affairs, rather than travel by himſelf, he ordered his baggage to be packed up, and ſignified his readineſs to conform to the emergency of the caſe; though he was not at all pleaſed with the cavalier behaviour of Pallet, to whom he threw out ſome hints of his own importance, and the immenſity of his condeſcenſion, in favouring him with ſuch marks of regard. But by this time theſe inſinuations had loſt their effect upon the painter, who told him, with an arch ſneer, that he did not at all queſtion his learning and abilities, and particularly his ſkill in cookery, which he ſhould never forget while his palate retained its function; but nevertheleſs adviſed him, for the ſake of the degenerate eaters of theſe days, to ſpare a little of his ſal armoniac in the next ſillykickaby he ſhould prepare; and bate ſomewhat of the devil's dung, which he had ſo plentifully crammed into the roaſted fowls, unleſs he had a mind to convert his gueſts into patients, with a view of licking himſelf whole for the expence of the entertainment.

The phyſician, nettled at theſe ſarcaſms, eyed him with a look of indignation and diſdain; and, being unwilling to expreſs himſelf in Engliſh, leſt, in the courſe of the altercation, Pallet ſhould be ſo much irritated as to depart without him, he vented his anger in Greek. The painter, though, by the ſound, he ſuppoſed this quotation to be Greek, complimented his friend upon his knowledge in the Welch language, and found means to rally him quite out of temper; ſo that he retired to his own chamber in the utmoſt wrath and mortification, and left his antagoniſt exulting over the victory he had won.

While thoſe things paſſed between theſe originals, Peregrine waited upon the ambaſſador, whom he thanked for his kind interpoſition, acknowledging the indiſcretion

of his own conduct, with ſuch appearance of conviction, and promiſes of reformation, that his excellency freely forgave him for all the trouble he had been put to on his account, fortified him with ſenſible advices, and, aſſuring him of his continual favour and friendſhip, gave him, at parting, letters of introduction to ſeveral perſons of quality belonging to the Britiſh court.

Thus diſtinguiſhed, our young gentleman took leave of all his French acquaintance, and ſpent the evening with ſome of thoſe who had enjoyed the greateſt ſhare of his intimacy and confidence; while Jolter ſuperintended his domeſtic concerns, and, with infinite joy, beſpoke a poſt-chaiſe and horſes, in order to convey him from a place where he lived in continual apprehenſion of ſuffering by the dangerous diſpoſition of his pupil. Every thing being adjuſted according to their plan, they and their fellow-travellers next day dined together, and, about four in the afternoon, took their departure in two chaiſes, eſcorted by the valet-de-chambre, Pipes, and the doctor's lacquey, on horſeback, well furniſhed with arms and ammunition, in caſe of being attacked by robbers on the road.

It was about eleven o'clock at night when they arrived at Senlis, which was the place at which they propoſed to lodge, and where they were obliged to knock up the people of the inn, before they could have their ſupper prepared. All the proviſion in the houſe was but barely ſufficient to furniſh one indifferent meal: However, the painter conſoled himſelf for the quantity with the quality of the diſhes, one of which was a fricaſſee of rabbit, a preparation which he valued above all the dainties that ever ſmoked upon the table of the ſumptuous Heliogabalus.

He had no ſooner expreſſed himſelf to this effect, than our hero, who was almoſt inceſſantly laying traps for diverſion at his neighbours expence, laid hold on the declaration; and, recollecting the ſtory of Scipio and the muleteer in Gil Blas, reſolved to perpetrate a joke upon the ſtomach of Pallet, which ſeemed particularly well diſpoſed to an hearty ſupper. He accordingly digeſted his plan; and, the company being ſeated at table, affected to gaze with peculiar eagerneſs at the painter, who had helped himſelf to a large portion of the fricaſſee, and be-

of what I aſſert, though ſuch fricaſſees are not the favourites of my taſte, I will eat a part of this without ſcruple." So ſaying, he ſwallowed ſeveral mouthfuls of the queſtioned coney, and Pallet ſeemed to eye it again with inclination; nay, he even reſumed his knife and fork, and, being juſt on the point of applying them, was ſeized with another qualm of apprehenſion, that broke out in an exclamation of "After all, Mr. Jolter, if it ſhould be a real ram-cat—Lord have mercy upon me! here is one of the claws." With theſe words he preſented the tip of a toe, of which Pipes had ſnipped off five or ſix from a duck that was roaſted, and purpoſely ſcattered them in the fricaſſee; and the governor could not behold this teſtimonial without ſymptoms of uneaſineſs and remorſe; ſo that he and the painter ſat ſilenced and abaſhed, and made faces at each other, while the phyſician, who hated them both, exulted over their affliction, bidding them be of good cheer, and proceed with their meal; for he was ready to demonſtrate, that the fleſh of a cat was as nouriſhing and delicious as veal or mutton, provided they could prove that the ſaid cat was not of the boar-kind, and had fed chiefly on vegetable diet, or even confined its carnivorus appetite to rats and mice, which he affirmed to be dainties of exquiſite taſte and flavour. He ſaid, it was a vulgar miſtake to think that all fleſh-devouring creatures were unfit to be eaten; witneſs the conſumption of ſwine and ducks, animals that delight in carnage, as well as fiſh, which prey upon each other, and feed on bait and carrion; together with the demand for bear, of which the beſt hams in the world are made. He then obſerved, that the Negroes on the coaſt of Guinea, who are healthy and vigorous people, prefer cats and dogs to all other fare; and mentioned from hiſtory ſeveral ſieges, during which the inhabitants, who were blocked up, lived upon theſe animals, and had recourſe even to human fleſh, which, to his certain knowledge, was in all reſpects preferable to pork; for, in the courſe of his ſtudies, he had, for the experiment's ſake, eaten a ſteak cut from the buttock of a perſon who had been hanged.

This diſſertation, far from compoſing, increaſed the diſquiet in the ſtomachs of the governor and painter, who, hearing the laſt illuſtration, turned their eyes upon the

orator, at the ſame inſtant, with looks of horror and diſguſt; and, the one muttering the term *cannibal*, and the other pronouncing the word *abomination*, they roſe from table in a great hurry, and, running towards another apartment, joſtled with ſuch violence in the paſſage, that both were overturned by the ſhock, which alſo contributed to the effect of their nauſea, that mutually defiled them as they lay.

CHAPTER XLIX.

Nor is the phyſician ſacred from his ridicule. They reach Arras, where our adventurer engages in play with two French officers, who next morning give the landlord an intereſting proof of their importance.

THE doctor remained ſullen and dejected during the whole journey—not but that he attempted to recover his importance, by haranguing upon the Roman highways, when Mr. Jolter deſired the company to take notice of the fine pavement upon which they travelled from Paris into Flanders; but Pallet, who thought he had now gained the aſcendency over the phyſician, exerted himſelf in maintaining the ſuperiority he had acquired, by venting various ſarcaſms upon his ſelf-conceit and affectation of learning, and even uttering puns and conundrums upon the remarks which the republican retailed. When he talked of the Flaminian Way, the painter queſtioned if it was a better pavement than the Fleminian way on which they travelled: And the doctor having obſerved, that this road was made for the convenience of drawing the French artillery into Flanders, which was often the ſeat of war, his competitor in wit replied, with infinite vivacity, "There are more great guns than the French King knows of drawn along this cauſeway, doctor!"

Encouraged by the ſucceſs of theſe efforts, which tickled the imagination of Jolter, and drew ſmiles (as he imagined) of approbation from our hero, he ſported in many other equivoques of the ſame nature; and at dinner told the phyſician, that he was like the root of the tongue, as being curſedly down in the mouth.

By this time, ſuch was the animoſity ſubſiſting between thoſe quondam friends, that they never converſed together, except with a view of expoſing each other to the ridicule or contempt of their fellow-travellers. The doctor was at great pains to point out the folly and ignorance of Pallet in private to Peregrine, who was often conjured in the ſame manner by the painter to take notice of the phyſician's want of manners and taſte. Pickle pretended to acquieſce in the truth of their mutual ſeverity, which indeed was extremely juſt; and, by malicious inſinuations, blew up their contention, with a view of bringing it to open hoſtility. But both ſeemed ſo averſe to deeds of mortal purpoſe, that for a long time his arts were baffled, and he could not ſpirit them up to any pitch of reſentment higher than ſcurrilous repartee.

Before they reached Arras, the city gates were ſhut, ſo that they were obliged to take up their lodging at an indifferent houſe in the ſuburbs, where they found a couple of French officers, who had alſo rode poſt from Paris ſo far on their way to Liſle. Theſe gentlemen were about the age of thirty, and their deportment diſtinguiſhed by ſuch an air of inſolence, as diſguſted our hero, who nevertheleſs accoſted them politely in the yard, and propoſed that they ſhould ſup together. They thanked him for the honour of his invitation, which, however, they declined upon pretence of having ordered ſomething for themſelves, but promiſed to wait upon him and his company immediately after their repaſt.

This they accordingly performed; and, after having drank a few glaſſes of Burgundy, one of them aſked if the young gentleman would, for paſtime, take a hand at quadrille. Peregrine eaſily divined the meaning of this propoſal, which was made with no other view than that of fleecing him and his fellow-travellers; for he well knew to what ſhifts a ſubaltern in the French ſervice is reduced, in order to maintain the appearance of a gentleman, and had reaſon to believe that moſt of them were ſharpers from their youth: But, as he depended a good deal upon his own penetration and addreſs, he gratified the ſtranger's deſire; and a party was inſtantly formed of the painter, the phyſician, the propoſer, and himſelf, the other officer having profeſſed himſelf utterly ignorant of

the game; yet, in the courſe of the play, he took his ſtation at the back of Pickle's chair, which was oppoſite to his friend, on pretence of amuſing himſelf with ſeeing his manner of conducting the cards. The youth was not ſuch a novice but that he perceived the deſign of this palpable piece of behaviour, which notwithſtanding he overlooked for the preſent, with a view of flattering their hopes in the beginning, that they might be the more effectually puniſhed by their diſappointment in the end.

The game was ſcarce begun, when, by the reflection of a glaſs, he diſcerned the officer at his back making ſigns to his companion, who, by theſe preconcerted geſtures, was perfectly informed of the contents of Peregrine's hand, and of conſequence fortunate in the courſe of the play.

Thus they were allowed to enjoy the fruits of their dexterity, until their money amounted to ſome Louis, when our young gentleman, thinking it high time to do himſelf juſtice, ſignified in very polite terms to the gentleman who ſtood behind him, that he could never play with eaſe and deliberation when he was overlooked by any byſtander, and begged that he would have the goodneſs to be ſeated.

As this was a remonſtrance which the ſtranger could not with any ſhow of breeding reſiſt, he aſked pardon, and retired to the chair of the phyſician, who frankly told him, that it was not the faſhion of his country for one to ſubmit his hand to the peruſal of a ſpectator; and when, in conſequence of this rebuff, he wanted to quarter himſelf upon the painter, he was refuſed by a wave of the hand, and ſhake of the head, with an exclamation of *Pardonnez moi!* which was repeated with ſuch emphaſis, as diſcompoſed his effrontery, and he found himſelf obliged to ſit down in a ſtate of mortification.

The odds being thus removed, fortune proceeded in her uſual channel; and though the Frenchman, deprived of his ally, endeavoured to practiſe divers ſtrokes of fineſſe, the reſt of the company obſerved him with ſuch vigilance and caution, as baffled all his attempts, and in a very little time he was compelled to part with his winning; But having engaged in the match with an inten-

tion of taking all advantages, whether fair or unfair, that his ſuperior ſkill ſhould give him over the Engliſhman, the money was not refunded without a thouſand diſputes, in the courſe of which he eſſayed to intimidate his antagoniſt with high words, which were retorted by our hero with ſuch intereſt, as convinced him that he had miſtaken his man, and perſuaded him to make his retreat in quiet. Indeed it was not without cauſe that they repined at the bad ſucceſs of their enterpriſe; becauſe, in all likelihood, they had nothing to depend upon for the preſent but their own induſtry, and knew not how to defray their expences on the road, except by ſome acquiſition of this kind.

Next morning they roſe at day-break, and, reſolving to anticipate their fellow-lodgers, beſpoke poſt horſes as ſoon as they could be admitted into the city; ſo that, when our company appeared, their beaſts were ready in the yard; and they only waited to diſcuſs the bill, which they had ordered to be made out. The landlord of the inn preſented his carte with fear and trembling to one of thoſe ferocious cavaliers, who no ſooner caſt his eye upon the ſum total, then he diſcharged a volley of dreadful oaths, and aſked if the king's officers were to be treated in that manner? the poor publican proteſted, with great humility, that he had the utmoſt reſpect for his majeſty, and every thing that belonged to him; and that, far from conſulting his own intereſt, all that he deſired was to be barely indemnified for the expence of their lodging.

This condeſcenſion ſeemed to have no other effect than that of encouraging their arrogance. They ſwore his extortion ſhould be explained to the commandant of the town, who would, by making him a public example, teach other innkeepers how to behave towards men of honour; and threatened with ſuch confidence of indignation, that the wretched landlord, dreading the conſequence of their wrath, implored pardon in the moſt abject manner, begging, with many ſupplications, that he might have the pleaſure of lodging them at his own charge. This was a favour which he with great difficulty obtained; they chid him ſeverely for his impoſition, exhorted him to have more regard for his own conſcience, as well as for the convenience of his gueſts; and cau-

tioning him in particular touching his behaviour to the gentlemen of the army, mounted their horſes, and rode off in great ſtate, leaving him very thankful for having ſo ſucceſsfully appeaſed the choler of two officers, who wanted either inclination or ability to pay their bill; for experience had taught him to be apprehenſive of all ſuch travellers, who commonly lay the landlord under contribution, by way of atonement for the extravagance of his demands, even after he has profeſſed his willingneſs to entertain them on their own terms.

CHAPTER L.

Peregrine moralizes upon their behaviour, which is condemned by the doctor, and defended by the governor. They arrive in ſafety at Liſle, dine at an ordinary, viſit the citadel. The phyſician quarrels with a North Briton, who is put in arreſt.

THESE honourable adventurers being gone, Peregrine, who was preſent during the tranſaction, informed himſelf of the particulars from the mouth of the inn-keeper himſelf, who took God and the ſaints to witneſs, that he ſhould have been a loſer by their cuſtom, even if the bill had been paid; becauſe he was on his guard againſt their objections, and had charged every article at an under price: But ſuch was the authority of officers in France, that he durſt not diſpute the leaſt circumſtance of their will; for, had the caſe come under the cognizance of the magiſtrate, he muſt in courſe have ſuffered by the maxims of their government, which never fail to abet the oppreſſion of the army; and beſides run the riſk of incurring their future reſentment, which would be ſufficient to ruin him from top to bottom.

Our hero boiled with indignation at this inſtance of injuſtice and arbitrary power; and, turning to his governor, aſked if this too was a proof of the happineſs enjoyed by the French people. Jolter replied, that every human conſtitution muſt in ſome things be imperfect; and owned, than in this kingdom gentlemen were more countenanced than the vulgar, becauſe it was to be preſumed that their own ſentiments of honour and ſuperior

qualifications would entitle them to this pre-eminence, which had alſo a retroſpective view to the merit of their anceſtors, in conſideration of which they were at firſt ennobled: But he affirmed, that the inn-keeper had miſrepreſented the magiſtracy, which in France never failed to puniſh flagrant outrages and abuſe, without reſpect of perſons.

The painter approved of the wiſdom of the French government, in bridling the inſolence of the mob, by which, he aſſured them, he had often ſuffered in his own perſon; having been often beſpattered by hackney-coachmen, joſtled by draymen and porters, and reviled in the moſt opprobrious terms by the watermen of London, where he had once loſt his bag and a conſiderable quantity of hair, which had been cut off by ſome raſcal in his paſſage through Ludgate, during the lord mayor's proceſſion. On the other hand, the doctor, with great warmth, alleged, that thoſe officers ought to ſuffer death, or baniſhment at leaſt, for having plundered the people in this manner, which was ſo impudent and barefaced, as plainly to prove they were certain of eſcaping with impunity, and that they were old offenders in the ſame degree of delinquency. He ſaid, that the greateſt man in Athens would have been condemned to perpetual exile, and ſeen his eſtate confiſcated for public uſe, had he dared in ſuch a licentious manner to violate the rights of a fellow-citizen; and as for the little affronts to which a man may be ſubject from the petulence of the multitude, he looked upon them as glorious indications of liberty, which ought not to be repreſſed, and would at any time rejoice to find himſelf overthrown in a kennel by the inſolence of a ſon of freedom, even though the fall ſhould coſt him a limb; adding, by way of illuſtration, that the greateſt pleaſure he ever enjoyed was in ſeeing a duſtman wilfully overturn a gentleman's coach, in which two ladies were bruiſed, even to the danger of their lives. Pallet, ſhocked at the extravagance of this declaration, "If that be the caſe (ſaid he), I wiſh you may ſee every bone in your body broke by the firſt carman you meet in the ſtreets of London."

This argument being diſcuſſed, and the reckoning diſcharged without any deduction, although the landlord, in

ſtating the articles, had an eye to the loſs he had ſuſtained by his own countrymen, they departed from Arras, and arrived in ſafety at Liſle, about two o'clock in the afternoon.

They had ſcarce taken poſſeſſion of their lodgings, in a large hotel in the Grande Place, when the inn-keeper gave them to underſtand, that he kept an ordinary below, which was frequented by ſeveral Engliſh gentleman who reſidered in town, and that dinner was then upon the table. Peregrine, who ſeized all opportunities of obſerving new characters, perſuaded his company to dine in public; and they were accordingly conducted to the place, where they found a mixture of Scotch and Dutch officers, who had come from Holland to learn their exerciſes at the academy, and ſome gentlemen in the French ſervice, who were upon garriſon duty in the citadel. Among theſe laſt was a perſon about the age of fifty, of a remarkably genteel air and polite addreſs, dignified with a Malteſe croſs, and diſtinguiſhed by the particular veneration of all thoſe who knew him. When he underſtood that Pickle and his friends were travellers, he accoſted the youth in Engliſh, which he ſpoke tolerably well; and, as they were ſtrangers, offered to attend them in the afternoon to all the places worth ſeeing in Liſle. Our hero thanked him for his exceſs of politeneſs, which (he ſaid) was peculiar to the French nation; and, ſtruck with his engaging appearance, induſtriouſly courted his converſation, in the courſe of which he learnt, that this chevalier was a man of good ſenſe and great experience, that he was perfectly well acquainted with the greateſt part of Europe, had lived ſome years in England, and was no ſtranger to the conſtitution and genius of that people.

Having dined, and drank to the healths of the Engliſh and French kings, two fiacres were called, in one of which the knight, with one of his companions, the governor, and Peregrine ſeated themſelves, the other being occupied by the phyſician, Pallet, and two Scottiſh officers, who propoſed to accompany them in their circuit. The firſt place they viſited was the citadel, round the ramparts of which they walked, under the conduct of the knight, who explained with great accuracy the intention

of every particular fortification belonging to that ſeemingly impregnable fortreſs; and, when they had ſatisfied their curioſity, took coach again, in order to view the arſenal, which ſtands in another quarter of the town; but, juſt as Pickle's carriage had croſſed the promenade, he heard his own name bawled aloud by the painter; and, ordering the fiacre to ſtop, ſaw Pallet with one half of his body thruſt out at the window of the other coach, crying with a terrified look, "Mr. Pickle, Mr. Pickle, for the love of God! halt, and prevent bloodſhed, elſe here will be carnage and cutting of throats." Peregrine, ſurpriſed at this exclamation, immediately alighted, and, advancing to the other vehicle, found one of their military companions ſtanding upon the ground, at the further ſide of the coach, with his ſword drawn, and fury in his countenance; and the phyſician, with a quivering lip and haggard aſpect, ſtruggling with the other, who had interpoſed in the quarrel, and detained him in his place.

Our young gentleman, upon inquiry, found that this animoſity had ſprung from a diſpute that happened upon the ramparts, touching the ſtrength of the fortification, which the doctor, according to cuſtom, undervalued, becauſe it was a modern work; ſaying, that, by the help of the military engines uſed among the ancients, and a few thouſands of pioneers, he would engage to take it in leſs than ten days after he ſhould ſit down before it. The North Briton, who was as great a pedant as the phyſician, having ſtudied fortification, and made himſelf maſter of Cæſar's Commentaries and Polybius, with the obſervations of Folard, affirmed, that all the methods of beſieging practiſed by the ancients would be utterly ineffectual againſt ſuch a plan as that of the citadel of Liſle; and began to compare the *vineæ*, *aggeres*, *arietes*, *ſcorpiones*, and *catapultæ*, of the Romans, with the trenches, mines, batteries, and mortars, uſed in the preſent art of war. The republican, finding himſelf attacked upon what he thought his ſtrong ſide, ſummoned all his learning to his aid; and, deſcribing the famous ſiege of Platæa, happened to miſquote a paſſage of Thucydides, in which he was corrected by the other, who, having been educated for the church, was alſo a connoiſſeur in the Greek language. The doctor, incenſed at being detected in ſuch a blunder,

in preſence of Pallet, who (he knew) would promulgate his ſhame, told the officer, with great arrogance, that his objection was frivolous, and that he muſt not pretend to diſpute on theſe matters with one who had conſidered them with the utmoſt accuracy and care. His antagoniſt, piqued at this ſupercilious inſinuation, replied with great heat, that, for aught he knew, the doctor might be a very expert apothecary, but that, in the art of war, and knowledge in the Greek tongue, he was no other than an ignorant pretender. This aſſeveration produced an anſwer full of virulence, including a national reflection upon the ſoldier's country; and the contention roſe to mutual abuſe, when it was ſuppreſſed by the admonitions of the other two, who begged they would not expoſe themſelves in a ſtrange place, but behave themſelves like fellow-ſubjects and friends. They accordingly ceaſed reviling each other, and the affair was ſeemingly forgot; but after they had reſumed their places in the coach, the painter unfortunately aſked the meaning of the word Tortoiſe, which he had heard them mention among the Roman implements of war. This queſtion was anſwered by the phyſician, who deſcribed the nature of this expedient ſo little to the ſatisfaction of the officer, that he contradicted him flatly, in the midſt of his explanation; a circumſtance which provoked the republican to ſuch a degree, that, in the temerity of his paſſion, he uttered the epithet *impertinent ſcoundrel*; which was no ſooner pronounced than the Caledonian made manual application to his noſe, and, leaping out of the coach, ſtood waiting for him on the plain; while he (the phyſician) made feeble efforts to join him, being eaſily retained by the other ſoldier; and Pallet, dreading the conſequence in which he himſelf might be involved, bellowed aloud for prevention.

Our hero endeavoured to quiet the commotion, by repreſenting to the Scot, that he had already taken ſatisfaction for the injury he had received, and telling the doctor that he had deſerved the chaſtiſement which was inflicted upon him: But the officer (encouraged perhaps by the confuſion of his antagoniſt) inſiſted upon his aſking pardon for what he had ſaid; and the doctor, believing himſelf under the protection of his friend Pickle, far from agreeing to ſuch conceſſion, breathed nothing but defi-

ance and revenge: So that the chevalier, in order to prevent miſchief, put the ſoldier under arreſt, and ſent him to his lodgings, under the care of the other French gentleman and his own companion; they being alſo accompanied by Mr. Jolter, who, having formerly ſeen all the curioſities of Liſle, willingly ſurrendered his place to the phyſician.

CHAPTER LI.

Pickle engages with a knight of Malta in a converſation upon the Engliſh ſtage, which is followed by a diſſertation on the theatres of the ancients, by the doctor.

THE reſt of the company proceeded to the arſenal, which having viewed, together with ſome remarkable churches, they, in their return, went to the comedy, and ſaw the Cid of Corneille tolerably well repreſented. In conſequence of this entertainment, the diſcourſe at ſupper turned upon dramatic performances; and all the objections of Monſ. de Scudery to the piece they had ſeen acted, together with the deciſion of the French academy, were canvaſſed and diſcuſſed. The knight was a man of letters and taſte, and particularly well acquainted with the ſtate of the Engliſh ſtage; ſo that, when the painter boldly pronounced ſentence againſt the French manner of acting, on the ſtrength of having frequented a Covent Garden club of critics, and been often admitted, by virtue of an order, into the pit; a compariſon immediately enſued, not between the authors, but the actors of both nations, to whom the chevalier and Peregrine were no ſtrangers. Our hero, like a good Engliſhman, made no ſcruple of giving the preference to the performers of his own country, who, he alleged, obeyed the genuine impulſes of nature, in exhibiting the paſſions of the human mind; and entered ſo warmly into the ſpirit of their ſeveral parts, that they often fancied themſelves the very heroes they repreſented; whereas, the action of the Pariſian players, even in their moſt intereſting characters, was generally ſuch an extravagance in voice and geſture, as is no where to be obſerved but on the ſtage. To illuſtrate this aſſer-

tion, he availed himſelf of his talent, and mimicked the manner and voice of all the principal performers, male and female, belonging to the French comedy, to the admiration of the chevalier, who, having complimented him upon this ſurpriſing modulation, begged leave to diſſent in ſome particulars from the opinion he had avowed. "That you have good actors in England (ſaid he), it would be unjuſt and abſurd in me to deny; your theatre is adorned by one woman, whoſe ſenſibility and ſweetneſs of voice is ſuch as I have never obſerved on any other ſtage; ſhe has, beſides, an elegance of perſon and expreſſion of features, that wonderfully adapt her for the moſt engaging characters of your beſt plays; and I muſt freely own that I have been as highly delighted and as deeply affected by a Monimia and Belvidera at London, as ever I was by a Cornelia and Cleopatra at Paris. Your favourite actor is a ſurpriſing genius. You can, moreover, boaſt of ſeveral comic actors, who are perfect maſters of buffoonery and grimace; though, to be free with you, I think, in theſe qualifications, you are excelled by the players of Amſterdam. Yet one of your gratioſos I cannot admire, in all the characters he aſſumes. His utterance is a continual ſing-ſong, like the chanting of veſpers, and his action reſembles that of heaving ballaſt into the hold of a ſhip. In his outward deportment, he ſeems to have confounded the ideas of dignity and inſolence of mien; acts the crafty, cool, deſigning Crookback, as a loud, ſhallow, bluſtering Hector; in the character of the mild patriot, Brutus, he loſes all temper and decorum; nay, ſo ridiculous is the behaviour of him and Caſſius at their interview, that, ſetting foot to foot, and grinning at each other, with the aſpect of two coblers enraged, they thruſt their left ſides together with repeated ſhocks, that the hilts of their ſwords may claſh for the entertainment of the audience, as if they were a couple of Merry Andrews, endeavouring to raiſe the laugh of the vulgar, on ſome ſcaffold at Bartholomew Fair. The deſpair of a great man, who falls a ſacrifice to the infernal practices of a ſubtle traitor, that enjoyed his confidence, this Engliſh Æſopus repreſents, by beating his own forehead, and bellowing like a bull; and indeed, in almoſt all his moſt intereſting ſcenes, performs ſuch ſtrange ſhakings

of the head, and other antic geſticulations, that, when I firſt ſaw him act, I imagined the poor man laboured under that paralytical diſorder, which is known by the name of St. Vitus's dance. In ſhort, he ſeems to be a ſtranger to the more refined ſenſations of the ſoul, conſequently his expreſſion is of the vulgar kind, and he muſt often ſink under the idea of the poet; ſo that he has recourſe to ſuch violence of affected agitation, as impoſes upon the undiſcerning ſpectator, but, to the eye of taſte, evinces him a mere player of that claſs whom your admired Shakſpeare juſtly compares to nature's journeyman tearing a paſſion to rags. Yet this man, in ſpite of all theſe abſurdities, is an admirable Falſtaff, exhibits the character of the Eighth Henry to the life, is reaſonably applauded in the Plain Dealer, excels in the part of Sir John Brute, and would be equal to many humourous ſituations in low comedy, which his pride will not allow him to undertake. I ſhould not have been ſo ſevere upon this actor, had I not ſeen him extolled by his partizans with the moſt ridiculous and fulſome manifeſtations of praiſe, even in thoſe very circumſtances wherein (as I have obſerved) he chiefly failed."

Pickle, not a little piqued to hear the qualifications of ſuch a celebrated actor in England treated with ſuch freedom and diſreſpect, anſwered with ſome aſperity, that the chevalier was a true critic, more induſtrious in obſerving the blemiſhes, than in acknowledging the excellence of thoſe who fell under his examination.

It was not to be ſuppoſed that one actor could ſhine equally in all characters; and though his obſervations were undoubtedly very judicious, he himſelf could not help wondering that ſome of them had always eſcaped his notice, though he had been an aſſiduous frequenter of the playhouſe. "The player in queſtion (ſaid he) has, in your own opinion, conſiderable ſhare of merit in the characters of comic life; and as to the manners of the great perſonages in tragedy, and the operation of the grand paſſions of the ſoul, I apprehend they may be variouſly repreſented, according to the various complexion and cultivation of different men. A Spaniard, for example, though impelled by the ſame paſſion, will expreſs it very differently from a Frenchman; and what is looked upon

as graceful vivacity and addreſs by the one, would be conſidered as impertinence and foppery by the other: Nay, ſo oppoſite is your common deportment from that of ſome other nations, that one of your own countrymen, in the relation of his travels, obſerves, that the Perſians, even of this age, when they ſee any man perform unneceſſary geſtures, ſay he is either a fool or a Frenchman. The ſtandard of demeanour being thus unſettled, a Turk, a Moor, an Indian, or inhabitant of any country, whoſe cuſtoms and dreſs are widely different from ours, may, in his ſentiments, poſſeſs all the dignity of the human heart, and be inſpired by the nobleſt paſſion that animates the ſoul, and yet excite the laughter rather than the reſpect of an European ſpectator.

"When I firſt beheld your famous Pariſian ſtage-heroine in one of her principal parts, her attitudes ſeemed ſo violent, and ſhe toſſed her arms around with ſuch extravagance, that ſhe put me in mind of a wind-mill under the agitation of a hard gale; while her voice and features exhibited the lively repreſentation of an Engliſh ſcold. The action of your favourite male performer was, in my opinion, equally unnatural; he appeared with the affected airs of a dancing-maſter; at the moſt pathetic junctures of his fate, he lifted up his hands above his head, like a tumbler going to vault, and ſpoke as if his throat had been obſtructed by an hair-bruſh; yet, when I compared their manners with thoſe of the people before whom they performed, and made allowance for that exaggeration which obtains on all theatres, I was inſenſibly reconciled to their method of performance, and I could diſtinguiſh abundance of merit beneath that oddity of appearance."

The chevalier, perceiving Peregrine a little irritated at what he had ſaid, aſked pardon for the liberty he had taken in cenſuring the Engliſh players, aſſuring him that he had an infinite veneration for the Britiſh learning, genius, and taſte, which were ſo juſtly diſtinguiſhed in the world of letters; and that, notwithſtanding the ſeverity of his criticiſm, he thought the theatre of London much better ſupplied with actors than that of Paris. The young gentleman thanked him for his polite condeſcenſion, at which Pallet exulted, ſaying, with a ſhake of the head, "I believe ſo too, Monſieur;" and the phyſician, impatient of

the diſpute in which he had bore no ſhare, obſerved, with a ſupercilious air, that the modern ſtage was altogether beneath the notice of one who had an idea of ancient magnificence and execution; that plays ought to be exhibited at the expence of the ſtate, as thoſe of Sophocles were by the Athenians; and that proper judges ſhould be appointed for receiving or rejecting all ſuch performances as are offered to the public.

He then deſcribed the theatre at Rome, which contained eighty thouſand ſpectators, gave them a learned diſquiſition into the nature of the *perſona*, or maſk, worn by the Roman actors, which (he ſaid) was a machine that covered the whole head, furniſhed on the inſide with a brazen concavity, that, by reverberating the ſound, as it iſſued from the mouth, raiſed the voice, ſo as to render it audible to ſuch an extended audience. He explained the difference between the *ſaltator* and *declamator*, one of whom acted, while the other rehearſed the part; and from thence took occaſion to mention the perfections of their pantomimes, who were ſo amazingly diſtinct in the exerciſe of their art, that a certain prince of Pontus, being at the court of Nero, and ſeeing one of them repreſent a ſtory, begged him of the emperor, in order to employ him as an interpreter among barbarous nations, whoſe language he did not underſtand. Nay, divers cynic philoſophers, who had condemned this entertainment unſeen, when they chanced to be eye witneſſes of their admirable dexterity, expreſſed their ſorrow for having ſo long debarred themſelves of ſuch rational enjoyment.

He diſſented, however, from the opinion of Peregrine, who, as a proof of their excellence, had advanced, that ſome of the Engliſh actors fancied themſelves the very thing they repreſented, and recounted a ſtory from Lucian, of a certain celebrated pantomime, who, in acting the part of Ajax in his phrenzy, was tranſported into a real fit of delirium, during which he tore to pieces the clothes of that actor who ſtalked before him, beating the ſtage with iron ſhoes, in order to increaſe the noiſe, ſnatched an inſtrument from one of the muſicians, and broke it over the head of him who repreſented Ulyſſes; and, running to the conſular bench, miſtook a couple of ſenators for the ſheep which were to be ſlain. The audience ap-

plauded him to the ſkies; but ſo conſcious was the mimic of his own extravagance, when he recovered the uſe of his reaſon, that he actually fell ſick with mortification; and, being afterwards deſired to re-act the piece, flatly refuſed to appear in any ſuch character, ſaying, that the ſhorteſt follies were the beſt, and that it was ſufficient for him to have been a madman once in his life.

CHAPTER LII.

An adventure happens to Pipes, in conſequence of which he is diſmiſſed from Peregrine's ſervice. The whole company ſet out for Ghent in the diligence. Our hero is captivated by a lady in that carriage; intereſts her ſpiritual director in his behalf.

THE doctor, being fairly engaged on the ſubject of the ancients, would have proceeded the Lord knows how far, without heſitation, had not he been interrupted by the arrival of Mr. Jolter, who, in great confuſion, told them, that Pipes, having affronted a ſoldier, was then ſurrounded in the ſtreet, and would certainly be put to death, if ſome perſon of authority did not immediately interpoſe in his behalf.

Peregrine no ſooner learned the danger of his truſty ſquire, than, ſnatching up his ſword, he ran down ſtairs, and was followed by the chevalier, entreating him to leave the affair to his management. Within ten yards of the door they found Tom with his back to a wall, defending himſelf manfully with a mopſtick againſt the aſſault of three or four ſoldiers, who, at ſight of the Malteſe croſs, deſiſted from the attack, and were taken into cuſtody by order of the knight. One of the aggreſſors, being an Iriſhman, begged to be heard with great importunity, before he ſhould be ſent to the guard; and, by the mediation of Pickle, was accordingly brought into the hotel, with his companions, all three bearing upon their heads and faces evident marks of their adverſary's proweſs and dexterity. The ſpokeſman being confronted with Pipes, informed the company, that, having by accident met with Mr. Pipes, whom he conſidered as his countryman, though fortune had diſpoſed of them in different ſervices, he in-

vited him to drink a glaſs of wine, and accordingly carried him to a cabaret, where he introduced him to his comrades; but, in the courſe of the converſation, which turned upon the power and greatneſs of the kings of France and England, Mr. Pipes had been pleaſed to treat his Moſt Chriſtian Majeſty with great diſreſpect; and when he (the entertainer) expoſtulated with him in a friendly manner about his impolite behaviour, obſerving, that he being in the French ſervice, would be under the neceſſity of reſenting his abuſe, if he did not put a ſtop to it before the other gentlemen of the cloth ſhould comprehend his meaning, he had ſet them all three at defiance, diſhonoured him in particular with the opprobrious epithet of *rebel to his native king and country*, and even drank (in broken French) to the perdition of Lewis and all his adherents! that, compelled by this outrageous conduct, he, as the perſon who had recommended him to their ſociety, had, in vindication of his own character, demanded ſatisfaction of the delinquent, who, on pretence of fetching a ſword, had gone to his lodging, from whence he all of a ſudden ſallied upon them with the mopſtick, which he employed in the annoyance of them all without diſtinction, ſo that they were obliged to draw in their own defence.

Pipes, being queſtioned by his maſter with regard to the truth of this account, owned that every circumſtance was juſtly repreſented; ſaying, he did not value their cheeſe-toaſters a pinch of oakum; and that, if the gentleman had not ſhot in betwixt them, he would have trimmed them to ſuch a tune, that they ſhould not have had a whole yard to ſquare. Peregrine reprimanded him ſharply for his unmannerly behaviour, and inſiſted upon his aſking pardon of thoſe he had injured upon the ſpot. But no conſideration was efficacious enough to produce ſuch conceſſion; to this command he was both deaf and dumb, and the repeated threats of his maſter had no more effect than if they had been addreſſed to a marble ſtatue. At length our hero, incenſed at his obſtinacy, ſtarted up, and would have chaſtiſed him with manual operation, had not he been prevented by the chevalier, who found means to moderate his indignation ſo far, that he contented himſelf with diſmiſſing the offender from his ſervice;

and after having obtained the diſcharge of the priſon rs, gave them a Louis to drink, by way of recompence for the diſgrace and damage they had ſuſtained.

The knight, perceiving our young gentleman very much ruffled at this accident, and reflecting upon the extraordinary deportment and appearance of his valet, whoſe hair had by this time adopted a grizzled hue, imagined he was ſome favourite domeſtic, who had grown gray in the ſervice of his maſter's family, and that of conſequence he was uneaſy at the ſacrifice he had made. Swayed by this conjecture, he earneſtly ſolicited in his behalf; but all he could obtain was a promiſe of re-admitting him into favour on the terms already propoſed, or at leaſt on condition that he ſhould make his acknowledgment to the chevalier, for his want of reverence and reſpect for the French monarch.

Upon this condeſcenſion, the culprit was called up ſtairs, and made acquainted with the mitigation of his fate; upon which he ſaid, he would down on his marrow-bones to his own maſter, but would be damn'd before he would aſk pardon of e'er a Frenchman in Chriſtendom. Pickle, exaſperated at this blunt declaration, ordered him out of his preſence, and charged him never to appear before his face again; while the officer in vain employed all his influence and addreſs to appeaſe his reſentment, and about midnight took his leave with marks of mortification at his want of ſucceſs.

Next day the company agreed to travel through Flanders in the diligence, by the advice of Peregrine, who was not without hope of meeting with ſome adventure or amuſement in that carriage; and Jolter took care to ſecure places for them all: It being reſolved that the valet de chambre and the doctor's man ſhould attend the vehicle on horſeback; and as for the forlorn Pipes, he was left to reap the fruits of his own ſtubborn diſpoſition, notwithſtanding the united efforts of the whole triumvirate, who endeavoured to procure his pardon.

Every previous meaſure being thus taken, they ſet out from Liſle about ſix in the morning, and found themſelves in the company of a female adventurer, a very handſome young lady, a Capuchin, and a Rotterdam Jew. Our young gentleman, being the firſt of this ſociety that en-

tered, ſurveyed the ſtrangers with an attentive eye, and ſeated himſelf immediately behind the beautiful unknown, who at once attracted his attention. Pallet ſeeing another lady unengaged, in imitation of his friend, took poſſeſſion of her neighbourhood; the phyſician paired with the prieſt, and Jolter ſat down by the Jew.

The machine had not proceeded many furlongs, when Pickle, accoſting the fair incognita, congratulated himſelf upon his happineſs in being the fellow-traveller of ſo charming a lady. She, without the leaſt reſerve or affectation, thanked him for his compliment, and replied with a ſprightly air, that now they were embarked in one common bottom, they muſt club their endeavours to make one another as happy as the nature of their ſituation would permit them to be. Encouraged by this frank intimation, and, captivated by her fine black eyes and eaſy behaviour, he attached himſelf to her from that moment; and, in a little time, the converſation became ſo particular, that the Capuchin thought proper to interfere in the diſcourſe, in ſuch a manner as gave the youth to underſtand that he was there on purpoſe to ſuperintend her conduct. He was doubly rejoiced at this diſcovery, in conſequence of which he hoped to profit in his addreſſes, not only by the young lady's reſtraint, that never fails to operate in behalf of the lover, but alſo by the corruptibility of her guardian, whom he did not doubt of rendering propitious to his cauſe. Fluſhed with theſe expectations, he behaved with uncommon complacency to the father, who was charmed with the affability of his carriage, and on the faith of his generoſity, abated of his vigilance ſo much, that our hero carried on his ſuit without further moleſtation; while the painter, in ſigns and loud burſts of laughter, converſed with his Dulcinia, who was perfectly well verſed in theſe ſimple expreſſions of ſatisfaction, and had already found means to make a dangerous invaſion upon his heart.

Nor were the governor and phyſician unemployed, while their friends intereſted themſelves in this agreeable manner. Jolter no ſooner perceived the Hollander was a Jew, than he entered into an inveſtigation of the Hebrew tongue, in which he was a connoiſſeur; and the doctor, at the ſame time attacked the mendicant on the ridiculous maxims of

his order, together with the impoſitions of prieſt-craft in general, which (he obſerved) prevail ſo much among thoſe who profeſs the Roman Catholic religion.

Thus coupled, each committee enjoyed their own converſation apart, without any danger of encroachment; and all were ſo intent upon their ſeveral topics, that they ſcarce allowed themſelves a ſmall interval in viewing the deſolation of Menin, as they paſſed through that ruined frontier. About twelve o'clock they arrived at Courtray, where the horſes are always changed, and the company halt an hour for refreſhment. Here Peregrine handed his charmer into an apartment, where ſhe was joined by the other lady; and, on pretence of ſeeing ſome of the churches in town, put himſelf under the direction of the Capuchin, from whom he learned that the young lady was wife to a French gentleman, to whom ſhe had been married about a year, and that ſhe was now on her journey to viſit her mother, who lived in Bruſſels, and who at that time laboured under a lingering diſtemper, which, in all probability, would ſoon put a period to her life. He then launched out in praiſe of her daughter's virtue and conjugal affection; and laſtly told him, that he was her father confeſſor, and pitched upon to be her conductor through Flanders, by her huſband, who, as well as his wife, placed the utmoſt confidence in his prudence and integrity.

Pickle eaſily comprehended the meaning of this inſinuation, and took the hint accordingly. He tickled the prieſt's vanity, with extraordinary encomiums upon the diſintereſted principles of his order, which were detached from all worldly purſuits, and altogether devoted to the eternal ſalvation of mankind. He applauded their patience, humility, and learning, and laviſhed a world of praiſe upon their talent in preaching, which (he ſaid) had more than once operated ſo powerfully upon him, that, had he not been reſtrained by certain conſiderations which he could not poſſibly wave, he ſhould have embraced their tenets, and begged admiſſion into their fraternity: But, as the circumſtances of his fate would not permit him to take ſuch a ſalutary meaſure for the preſent, he entreated the good father to accept a ſmall token of his love and reſpect, for the benefit of that convent

to which he belonged. So ſaying, he palled out a purſe of ten guineas, which the Capuchin obſerving, turned his head another way, and, lifting up his arm, diſplayed a pocket almoſt as high as his collar bone, in which he depoſited the money.

This proof of affection for the order produced a ſudden and ſurpriſing effect upon the friar. In the tranſport of his zeal he wrung this ſemi-convert's hand, ſhowered a thouſand benedictions upon his head, and exhorted him, with the tears flowing from his eyes, to perfect the great work which the finger of God had begun in his heart; and, as an inſtance of his concern for the welfare of his precious ſoul, the holy brother promiſed to recommend him ſtrenuouſly to the pious admonitions of the young woman under his care, who was a perfect ſaint upon earth, and endowed with the peculiar gift of mollifying the hearts of obdurate ſinners. "O father! (cried the hypocritical projector, who by this time perceived that his money was not thrown away) if I could be favoured but for one half hour with the private inſtruction of that inſpired devotee, my mind preſages, that I ſhould be a ſtrayed ſheep brought back into the fold, and that I ſhould find eaſy entrance at the gates of heaven! There is ſomething ſupernatural in her aſpect; I gaze upon her with the moſt pious fervour, and my whole ſoul is agitated with tumults of hope and deſpair!" Having pronounced this rhapſody with tranſport half natural and half affected, the prieſt aſſured him, that theſe were operations of the ſpirit, which muſt not be repreſſed; and comforted him with the hope of enjoying the bleſſed interview which he deſired, proteſting, that, as far as his influence extended, his wiſh ſhould be that very evening indulged. The gracious pupil thanked him for his benevolent concern, which he ſwore ſhould not be ſquandered upon an ungrateful object; and the reſt of the company interrupting the converſation, they returned in a body to the inn, where they dined all together, and the ladies were perſuaded to be our hero's gueſts.

As the ſubjects on which they had been engaged before dinner were not exhauſted, each brace reſumed their former theme when they were replaced in the diligence. The painter's miſtreſs finiſhed her conqueſt, by exertin g

her ſkill in the art of ogling, accompanied by frequent bewitching ſighs, and ſome tender French ſongs, that ſhe ſung with ſuch pathetic expreſſion, as quite melted the reſolution of Pallet, and utterly ſubdued his affection: And he, to convince her of the importance of her victory, gave a ſpecimen of his own talents, by entertaining her with that celebrated Engliſh dittay, the burden of which begins with, *The pigs they lie with their arſes bare.*

CHAPTER LIII.

He makes ſome progreſs in her affections; is interrupted by a diſpute between Jolter and the Jew; appeaſes the wrath of the Capuchin, who procures for him an interview with his fair enſlaver, in which he finds himſelf deceived.

PEREGRINE, meanwhile, employed all his inſinuation and addreſs in practiſing upon the heart of the Capuchin's fair charge. He had long ago declared his paſſion, not in the ſuperficial manner of a French gallant, but with all the ardour of an enthuſiaſt. He had languiſhed, vowed, flattered, kiſſed her hand by ſtealth, and had no reaſon to complain of his reception. Though, by a man of a leſs ſanguine diſpoſition, her particular complaiſance would have been deemed equivocal, and perhaps nothing more than the effect of French breeding and conſtitutional vivacity, he gave his own qualifications credit for the whole, and with theſe ſentiments carried on the attack with ſuch unabating vigour, that ſhe was actually prevailed upon to accept a ring, which he preſented as a token of his eſteem; and every thing proceeded in a moſt proſperous train, when they were diſturbed by the governor and Iſraelite, who in the heat of diſputation raiſed their voices, and poured forth ſuch effuſions of gutturals, as ſet our lover's teeth on edge. As they ſpoke in a language unknown to every one in the carriage but themſelves, and looked at each other with mutual animoſity and rancour, Peregrine deſired to know the cauſe of their contention. Upon which Jolter exclaimed in a furious tone, "This learned Levite, forſooth, has the impudence to tell me that I don't underſtand Hebrew; and affirms,

that the word *Benoni* ſignifies *child of joy*; whereas I can prove, and indeed have already ſaid enough to convince any reaſonable man, that in the Septuagint it is rightly tranſlated into *ſon of my ſorrow.*" Having thus explained himſelf to his pupil, he turned to the prieſt, with intention to appeal to his determination; but the Jew pulled him by the ſleeve with great eagerneſs, ſaying, "For the love of God be quiet, the Capuchin will diſcover who we are!" Jolter, offended at this conjunction, echoed "Who we are!" with great emphaſis; and repeating *nos poma natamus*, aſked ironically to which of the tribes the Jew thought he belonged? The Levite, affronted at his comparing him to a ball of horſe-dung, replied, with a moſt ſignificant grin, "To the tribe of Iſſachar." His antagoniſt, taking the advantage of his unwillingneſs to be known by the friar, and prompted by revenge for the freedom he had uſed, anſwered in the French language, that the judgment of God was ſtill manifeſt upon their whole race, not only in their being in the ſtate of exiles from their native land, but alſo in the ſpite of their hearts and pravity of their diſpoſitions, which demonſtrate them to be the genuine offſpring of thoſe who crucified the Saviour of the world.

His expectation was, however, defeated; the prieſt himſelf was too deeply engaged to attend to the debates of other people. The phyſician, in the pride and inſolence of his learning, had undertaken to diſplay the abſurdity of the Chriſtian faith; having already (as he thought) confuted the Capuchin, touching the points of belief in which the Roman Catholics differ from the reſt of the world. But not contented with the imagined victory he had gained, he began to ſtrike at the fundamentals of religion; and the father, with incredible forbearance, ſuffered him to make very free with the doctrine of the Trinity: But, when he levelled the ſhafts of his ridicule at the immaculate conception of the Bleſſed Virgin, the good man's patience forſook him, his eyes ſeemed to kindle with indignation, he trembled in every joint, and uttered with a loud voice, "You are an abominable—I will not call thee heretic, for thou art worſe (if poſſible) than a Jew; you deſerve to be encloſed in a furnace ſeven times heated, and I have a good mind to lodge an infor-

mation againſt you with the governor of Ghent, that you may be apprehended and puniſhed as an impious blaſphemer."

This menace operated like a charm upon all preſent. The doctor was confounded, the governor diſmayed, the Levite's teeth chattered, the painter was aſtoniſhed at the general confuſion, the cauſe of which he could not comprehend; and Pickle himſelf, not a little alarmed, was obliged to uſe all his intereſt and aſſiduity in appeaſing this ſon of the church, who at length, in conſideration of the friendſhip he profeſſed for the young gentleman, conſented to forgive what had paſſed, but abſolutely refuſed to ſit in contact with ſuch a profane wretch, whom he looked upon as a fiend of darkneſs ſent by the enemy of mankind to poiſon the minds of weak people; ſo that, after having croſſed himſelf, and muttered certain exorciſms, he inſiſted upon the doctor's changing places with the Jew, who approached the offended eccleſiaſtic in an agony of fear.

Matters being thus compromiſed, the converſation flowed in a more general channel; and without the intervention of any other accident, or bone of contention, the carriage arrived at the city of Ghent about ſeven in the evening. Supper being beſpoke for the whole company, our adventurer and his friends went out to take a ſuperficial view of the place, leaving his new miſtreſs to the pious exhortations of her confeſſor, whom (as we have already obſerved) he had ſecured in his intereſt. This zealous mediator ſpoke ſo warmly in his commendation, and intereſted her conſcience ſo much in the affair, that ſhe could not refuſe her helping hand to the great work of his converſion, and promiſed to grant the interview he deſired.

This agreeable piece of intelligence, which the Capuchin communicated to Peregrine at his return, elevated his ſpirits to ſuch a degree, that he ſhone at ſupper with uncommon brilliance, in a thouſand ſallies of wit and pleaſantry, to the admiration and delight of all preſent, eſpecially of his fair Fleming, who ſeemed quite captivated by his perſon and behaviour.

The evening being thus ſpent to the ſatisfaction of all parties, the company broke up, and retired to their ſeveral

apartments, when our lover, to his unſpeakable mortification, learned that the two ladies were obliged to lie in the ſame room, all the other chambers of the inn being preoccupied. When he imparted this difficulty to the prieſt, that charitable father, who was very fruitful in expedients, aſſured him, that his ſpiritual concerns ſhould not be obſtructed by ſuch a ſlender impediment; and accordingly availed himſelf of his prerogative, by going into his daughter's chamber when ſhe was almoſt undreſſed, and leading her into his own, on pretence of adminiſtering ſalutary food for her ſoul. Having brought the two votaries together, he prayed for ſucceſs to the operations of grace, and left them to their mutual meditations, after having conjured them in the moſt ſolemn manner to let no impure ſentiments, or temptations of the fleſh, interfere with the hallowed deſign of their meeting.

The reverend interceſſor being gone, and the door faſtened on the inſide, the pſeudo-convert, tranſported with his paſſion, threw himſelf at Amanda's feet; and begging ſhe would ſpare him the tedious form of addreſſes, which the nature of their interview would not permit him to obſerve, began with all the impetuoſity of love to make the moſt by the occaſion. But whether ſhe was diſpleaſed by the intrepidity and aſſurance of his behaviour, thinking herſelf entitled to more courtſhip and reſpect, or was really better fortified with chaſtity than he or his procurer had ſuppoſed her to be, certain it is, ſhe expreſſed reſentment and ſurpriſe at his boldneſs and preſumption, and upbraided him with having impoſed upon the charity of the friar. The young gentleman was really as much aſtoniſhed at this rebuff, as ſhe pretended to be at his declaration, and earneſtly entreated her to conſider how precious the moments were, and for once ſacrifice ſuperfluous ceremony to the happineſs of one who adored her with ſuch a flame, as could not fail to conſume his vitals, if ſhe would not deign to bleſs him with her favour. Notwithſtanding all his tears, vows, and ſupplications, his perſonal accompliſhments, and the tempting opportunity, all that he could obtain was an acknowledgment of his having made an impreſſion upon her heart, which ſhe hoped the dictates of her duty would enable her to eraſe. This confeſſion he conſidered as a delicate conſent; and,

obeying the impulſe of his love, ſnatched her up in his arms, with an intention of ſeizing that which ſhe declined to give; when this French Lucretia, unable to defend her virtue any other way, ſcreamed aloud; and the Capuchin, ſetting his ſhoulder to the door, forced it open, and entered in an affected ecſtaſy of amazement. He lifted up his hands and eyes, and pretended to be thunderſtruck at the diſcovery he had made; then, in broken exclamations, profeſſed his horror at the wicked intention of our hero, who had covered ſuch a damnable ſcheme with the maſk of religion.

In ſhort, he performed his cue with ſuch dexterity, that the lady, believing him in earneſt, begged he would forgive the ſtranger, on account of his youth and education, which had been tainted by the errors of hereſy: and he was on theſe conſiderations content to accept the ſubmiſſion of our hero, who, far from renouncing his expectations, notwithſtanding this mortifying repulſe, confided ſo much in his own talents, and the confeſſion which his miſtreſs had made, that he reſolved to make another effort, to which nothing could have prompted him but the utmoſt turbulence of unruly deſire.

CHAPTER LIV.

He makes another effort towards the accompliſhment of his wiſh, which is poſtponed by a ſtrange accident.

He directed his valet de chambre, who was a thorough-paced pimp, to kindle ſome ſtraw in the yard, and then paſs by the door of her apartment, crying (with a loud voice) that the houſe was on fire. This alarm brought both ladies out of their chamber in a moment; and Peregrine, taking the advantage of their running to the ſtreet door, entered the room, and concealed himſelf under a large table that ſtood in an unobſerved corner. The nymphs, as ſoon as they underſtood the cauſe of his Mercury's ſuppoſed affright, returned to their apartment, and, having ſaid their prayers, undreſſed themſelves, and went to bed. This ſcene, which fell under the obſervation of Pickle, did not at all contribute to the cooling of his con-

cupiſcence, but, on the contrary, inflamed him to ſuch a degree, that he could ſcarce reſtrain his impatience, until by her breathing deep, he concluded the fellow-lodger of his Amanda was aſleep. This welcome note no ſooner ſaluted his ears, than he crept to his charmer's bed-ſide, and, placing himſelf on his knees, gently laid hold on her white hand, and preſſed it to his lips. She had juſt begun to cloſe her eyes, and enjoy the agreeable oppreſſion of ſlumber, when ſhe was rouſed by this rape, at which ſhe ſtarted, pronouncing, in a tone of ſurpriſe and diſmay, "My God! who's that?" The lover, with the moſt inſinuating humility, beſought her to hear him; vowing, that his intention in approaching her thus, was not to violate the laws of decency, or that indelible eſteem which ſhe had engraven on his heart, but to manifeſt his ſorrow and contrition for the umbrage he had given, to pour forth the overflowings of his ſoul, and tell her that he neither could nor would ſurvive her diſpleaſure. Theſe, and many other pathetic proteſtations, accompanied with ſighs and tears, and other expreſſions of grief, which our hero had at command, could not fail to melt the tender heart of the amiable Fleming, already prepoſſeſſed in favour of his qualifications. She ſympathized ſo much with his affliction as to weep in her turn, when ſhe repreſented the impoſſibility of her rewarding his paſſion; and he, ſeizing the favourable moment, reinforced his ſolicitations with ſuch irreſiſtible tranſports, that her reſolution gave way, ſhe began to breathe quick, expreſſed her fear of being overheard by the other lady, and, with an ejaculation of "O Heavens! I'm undone;" ſuffered him (after a faint ſtruggle) to make a lodgment upon the covered way of her bed. Her honour, however, was ſecured for the preſent, by a ſtrange ſort of knocking upon the wainſcot, at the other end of the room, hard by the bed in which the female adventurer lay.

Surpriſed at this circumſtance, the lady begged him for heaven's ſake to retreat, or her reputation would be ruined for ever: But when he repreſented to her, that her character would run a much greater riſk if he ſhould be detected in withdrawing, ſhe conſented with great trepidation to his ſtay; and they liſtened in ſilence to the ſequel of the noiſe that alarmed them. This was no other

than an expedient of the painter, to awaken his Dulcinea, with whom he had made an aſſignation, or at leaſt interchanged ſuch ſignals as he thought amounted to a firm appointment. His nymph being diſturbed in her firſt ſleep, immediately underſtood the ſound, and, true to the agreement, roſe, and unbolting the door as ſoftly as poſſible, gave him admittance, leaving it open for his more commodious retreat.

While this happy gallant was employed in diſengaging himſelf from the diſhabille in which he had entered, the Capuchin, ſuſpecting that Peregrine would make another attempt upon his charge, had crept ſilently to the apartment, in order to reconnoitre, leſt the adventure ſhould be achieved without his knowledge; a circumſtance that would deprive him of the profits he might expect from his privity and concurrence. Finding the door unlatched, his ſuſpicion was confirmed, and he made no ſcruple of creeping into the chamber on all four; ſo that the painter, having ſtripped himſelf to the ſhirt, in groping about for his Dulcinea's bed, chanced to lay his hand upon the ſhaven crown of the father's head, which, by a circular motion, the prieſt began to turn round in his graſp, like a ball in a ſocket, to the ſurpriſe and conſternation of poor Pallet, who, having neither penetration to comprehend the caſe, nor reſolution to withdraw his fingers from this ſtrange object of his touch, ſtood ſweating in the dark, and venting ejaculations with great devotion. The friar, tired with this exerciſe, and the painful poſture in which he ſtooped, raiſed himſelf gradually upon his feet, heaving up at the ſame time the hand of the painter, whoſe terror and amazement increaſed to ſuch a degree at this unaccountable elevation, that his faculties began to fail; and his palm, in the confuſion of his fright, ſliding over the prieſt's forehead, one of his fingers happened to ſlip into his mouth, and was immediately ſecured between the Capuchin's teeth, with as firm a fixture as if it had been ſcrewed in a blackſmith's vice. The painter was ſo much diſordered by this ſudden ſnap, which tortured him to the bone, that, forgetting all other conſiderations, he roared aloud, "Murder! a fire! a trap, a trap! help, Chriſtians, for the love of God, help!" Our hero, confounded by theſe exclamations, which he

knew would ſoon fill the room with ſpectators, and incenſed at his own mortifying diſappointment, was obliged to quit the untaſted banquet, and approaching the cauſe of his misfortune, juſt as his tormenter had thought proper to releaſe his finger, diſcharged ſuch a hearty ſlap between his ſhoulders, as brought him to the ground with hideous bellowing; then retiring unperceived to his own chamber, was one of the firſt who returned with a light, on pretence of having been alarmed with his cries. The Capuchin had taken the ſame precaution, and followed Peregrine into the room, pronouncing *Benedicite*, and croſſing himſelf with many marks of aſtoniſhment. The phyſician and Jolter appearing at the ſame time, the unfortunate painter was found lying naked on the floor, in all the agony of horror and diſmay, blowing upon his left hand, that hung dangling from the elbow. The circumſtance of his being found in that apartment, and the attitude of his affliction, which was extremely ridiculous, provoked the doctor to a ſmile, and produced a ſmall relaxation in the ſeverity of the governor's countenance; while Pickle, teſtifying ſurpriſe and concern, lifted him from the ground, and inquired into the cauſe of his preſent ſituation. Having, after ſome recollection, and fruitleſs endeavours to ſpeak, recovered the uſe of his tongue, he told them that the houſe was certainly haunted by evil ſpirits, by which he had been conveyed (he knew not how) into that apartment, and afflicted with all the tortures of hell: That one of them had made itſelf ſenſible to his feeling, in the ſhape of a round ball of ſmooth fleſh, which turned round under his hand, like an aſtronomer's globe, and then riſing up to a ſurpriſing height, was converted into a machine that laid hold on his finger, by a ſnap, and having pinned him to the ſpot, he continued for ſome moments in unſpeakable agony. At laſt he ſaid the engine ſeemed to melt away from his finger, and he received a ſudden thwack upon his ſhoulders, as if diſcharged by the arm of a giant, which overthrew him in an inſtant upon the floor. The prieſt hearing this ſtrange account, pulled out of one of his pouches a piece of conſecrated candle, which he lighted immediately, and muttered certain myſterious conjurations. Jolter, imagining that Pallet was drunk, ſhook his head, ſaying, he

ieved the ſpirit was no where but in his own brain. e phyſician for once condeſcended to be a wag, and king towards one of the beds, obſerved, that in his nion, the painter had been miſled by the fleſh, and not the ſpirit. The fair Fleming lay in ſilent aſtoniſhment l affright; and her fellow-lodger, in order to acquit ſelf of all ſuſpicion, exclaimed with incredible volubi- againſt the author of this uproar, who (ſhe did not ıbt) had concealed himſelf in the apartment, with a w of perpetrating ſome wicked attempt upon her pre- us virtue, and was puniſhed and prevented by the im- diate interpoſition of Heaven. At her deſire, there- e, and at the earneſt ſolicitation of the other lady, he s conducted to his own bed, and the chamber being cuated, they locked their door, fully reſolved to admit more viſitants for that night: While Peregrine, mad h ſeeing the delicious morſel ſnatched (as it were) from very lip, ſtalked through the paſſage like a ghoſt, in pe of finding ſome opportunity of re-entering, till the beginning to break, he was obliged to retire, curſing idiotical conduct of the painter, which had ſo un- ily interfered with his delight.

CHAPTER LV.

ey depart from Ghent. Our hero engages in a political diſpute with his miſtreſs, whom he offends, and pacifies with ſubmiſſion. He practiſes an expedient to detain the carriage at Aloſt, and confirms the prieſt in his intereſt.

NEXT day, about one o'clock, after having ſeen every ing remarkable in town, and been preſent at the exe- ıtion of two youths, who were hanged for raviſhing a hore, they took their departure from Ghent, in the ſame ırriage which had brought them thither; and the con- erſation turning upon the puniſhment they had ſeen in- icted, the Flemiſh beauty expreſſed great ſympathy and ompaſſion for the unhappy ſufferers, who (as ſhe had een informed) had fallen victims to the malice of the ccuſer. Her ſentiments were eſpouſed by all the com-

pany, except the French lady of pleaſure, who, thinking the credit of the ſiſterhood concerned in the affair, bitterly inveighed againſt the profligacy of the age, and particularly the baſe and villanous attempts of man upon the chaſtity of the weaker ſex; ſaying, with a look of indignation, directed to the painter, that, for her own part, ſhe ſhould never be able to manifeſt the acknowledgment ſhe owed to Providence, for having protected her laſt night from the wicked aims of unbridled luſt. This obſervation introduced a ſeries of jokes, at the expence of Pallet, who hung his ears, and ſat with a ſilent air of dejection, fearing that, through the malevolence of the phyſician, his adventure might reach the ears of his wife. Indeed, though we have made ſhift to explain the whole tranſaction to the reader, it was an inextricable myſtery to every individual in the diligence: Becauſe the part which was acted by the Capuchin, was known to himſelf alone; and even he was utterly ignorant of Pickle's being concerned in the affair; ſo that the greateſt ſhare of the painter's ſufferings were ſuppoſed to be the exaggerations of his own extravagant imagination.

In the midſt of their diſcourſe on this extraordinary ſubject, the driver told them, that they were now on the very ſpot where a detachment of the allied army had been intercepted and cut off by the French; and, ſtopping the vehicle, entertained them with a local deſcription of the battle of Melle. Upon this occaſion, the Flemiſh lady, who, ſince her marriage, had become a keen partizan for the French, gave a minute detail of all the circumſtances, as they had been repreſented to her by her huſband's brother, who was in the action. This account, which ſunk the number of the French to ſixteen, and raiſed that of the allies to twenty thouſand men, was ſo diſagreeable to truth, as well as to the laudable partiality of Peregrine, that he ventured to contradict her aſſertions, and a fierce diſpute commenced, that not only regarded the preſent queſtion, but alſo comprehended all the battles in which the Duke of Marlborough had commanded againſt Louis the Fourteenth. In the courſe of theſe debates, ſhe diveſted the great general of all the glory he had acquired, by affirming, that every victory he gained was purpoſely loſt by the French generals, in order to bring the ſchemes

of Madame de Maintenon into diſcredit; and, as a particular inſtance, alleged, that while the citadel of Liſle was beſieged, Louis ſaid, in preſence of the Dauphin, that, if the allies ſhould be obliged to raiſe the ſiege, he would immediately declare his marriage with that lady; upon which the ſon ſent private orders to Marſhal Boufflers to ſurrender the place. This ſtrange allegation was ſupported by the aſſeverations of the prieſt and the courtezan, and admitted as truth by the governor, who pretended to have heard it from good authority; while the doctor ſat neutral, as one who thought it ſcandalous to know the hiſtory of ſuch modern events. The Iſraelite, being a true Dutchman, liſted himſelf under the banners of our hero, who, in attempting to demonſtrate the abſurdity and improbability of what they had advanced, raiſed ſuch a hue and cry againſt himſelf, and being inſenſibly heated in the altercation, irritated his Amanda to ſuch a degree, that her charming eyes kindled with fury, and he ſaw great reaſon to think, that, if he did not fall upon ſome method to deprecate her wrath, ſhe would in a twinkling ſacrifice all her eſteem for him to her own zeal for the glory of the French nation. Moved by this apprehenſion, his ardour cooled by degrees, and he inſenſibly detached himſelf from the argument, leaving the whole care of ſupporting it on the Jew, who, finding himſelf deſerted, was fain to yield at diſcretion; ſo that the French remained maſters of the field, and their young heroine reſumed her good humour.

Our hero having prudently ſubmitted to the ſuperior intelligence of his fair enſlaver, began to be haraſſed with the fears of loſing her for ever, and ſet his invention at work, to contrive ſome means of indemnifying himſelf for his aſſiduities, preſents, and the diſappointment he had already undergone. On pretence of enjoying a free air, he mounted the box, and employed his elocution and generoſity with ſuch ſucceſs, that the driver undertook to diſable the diligence from proceeding beyond the town of Aloſt for that day; and, in conſequence of his promiſe, gently overturned it when they were but a mile ſhort of that baiting place. He had taken his meaſures ſo diſcreetly, that this accident was attended with no other inconvenience than a fit of fear that took poſſeſſion of the

ladies, and the neceſſity to which they were reduced by the declaration of the coachman, who, upon examining the carriage, aſſured the company that the axle-tree had given way, and adviſed them to walk forward to the inn, while he would jog after them at a ſlow pace, and do his endeavour the damage ſhould be immediately repaired. Peregrine pretended to be very much concerned at what had happened, and even curſed the driver for his inadvertency, expreſſing infinite impatience to be at Bruſſels, and wiſhing that this misfortune might not detain them another night upon the road; but when his underſtrapper, according to his inſtructions, came afterwards to the inn, and gave them to underſtand, that the workman he had employed could not poſſibly refit the machine in leſs than ſix hours, the crafty youth affected to loſe all temper, ſtormed at his emiſſary, whom he reviled in the moſt opprobrious terms, and threatened to cane for his miſconduct. The fellow proteſted, with great humility, that their being overturned, was owing to the failure of the axle-tree, and not to his want of care or dexterity in driving; though rather than be thought the cauſe of incommoding him, he would inquire for a poſt-chaiſe, in which he might depart for Bruſſels immediately. This expedient Pickle rejected, unleſs the whole company could be accommodated in the ſame manner; and he had been previouſly informed by the driver, that the town could not furniſh more than one vehicle of that ſort. His governor, who was quite ignorant of his ſcheme, repreſented that one night would ſoon be paſſed, and exhorted him to bear this ſmall diſappointment with a good grace, eſpecially as the houſe ſeemed to be well provided for their entertainment, and the company ſo much diſpoſed to be ſociable. The Capuchin, who had found his account in cultivating the acquaintance of the young ſtranger, was not ill-pleaſed at this event, which might, by protracting the term of their intercourſe, yield him ſome opportunity of profiting ſtill further by his liberality: He therefore joined Mr. Jolter in his admonitions, congratulating himſelf upon the proſpect of enjoying his converſation a little longer than he had expected. Our young gentleman received a compliment to the ſame purpoſe from the Hebrew, who had that day exerciſed his

gallantry upon the French coquette, and was not without hope of reaping the fruits of his attention, his rival, the painter, being quite diſgraced and dejected by the adventure of laſt night. As for the doctor, he was too much engroſſed in the contemplation of his own importance, to intereſt himſelf in the affair, or its conſequences, further than by obſerving that the European powers ought to eſtabliſh public games, like thoſe that were celebrated of old in Greece; in which caſe, every ſtate would be ſupplied with ſuch dexterous charioteers, as would drive a machine at full ſpeed, within a hair's breadth of a precipice, without any danger of its being overthrown. Peregrine could not help yielding to their remonſtrances, and united complaiſance, for which he thanked them in very polite terms, and his paſſion ſeeming to ſubſide, propoſed that they ſhould amuſe themſelves in walking round the ramparts. He hoped to enjoy ſome private converſation with his admired Fleming, who had this whole day behaved with remarkable reſerve. The propoſal being embraced, he (as uſual) handed her into the ſtreet, and took all opportunities of promoting his ſuit; but they were attended ſo cloſely by her father confeſſor, that he foreſaw it would be impracticable to accompliſh his aim, without the connivance of that eccleſiaſtic. This he was obliged to purchaſe with another purſe, which he offered, and was accepted as a charitable atonement for his criminal behaviour during the interview which the friar had procured for the good of his ſoul. The benefaction was no ſooner made, than the pious mendicant edged off by little and little, till he joined the reſt of the company, leaving his generous patron at full liberty to proſecute his purpoſe. It is not to be doubted that our adventurer made a good uſe of this occaſion: He practiſed a thouſand flowers of rhetoric, and actually exhauſted his whole addreſs, in perſuading her to have compaſſion upon his miſery, and indulge him with another private audience, without which he ſhould run diſtracted, and be guilty of extravagancies which, in the humanity of her diſpoſition, ſhe would weep to ſee. But, inſtead of complying with his requeſt, ſhe chid him ſeverely for his preſumption, in perſecuting her with his vicious addreſſes. She aſſured him, that although ſhe had ſecured a chamber for herſelf

in this place, becauſe ſhe had no ambition to be better acquainted with the other lady, he would be in the wrong to diſturb her with another nocturnal viſit; for ſhe was determined to deny him admittance. The lover was comforted by this hint, which he underſtood in the true acceptation, and his paſſion being inflamed by the obſtacles he had met with, his heart beat high with the proſpect of poſſeſſion. Theſe raptures of expectation produced an inquietude, which diſabled him from bearing that ſhare of the converſation for which he uſed to be diſtinguiſhed. His behaviour at ſupper was a viciſſitude of ſtartings and reveries. The Capuchin, imputing this diſorder to a ſecond repulſe from his charge, began to be invaded with the apprehenſion of being obliged to refund, and, in a whiſper, forbade our hero to deſpair.

CHAPTER LVI.

The French coquette entraps the heart of the Jew, againſt whom Pallet enters into a conſpiracy; by which Peregrine is again diſappointed, and the Hebrew's incontinence expoſed.

MEANWHILE the French ſyren, baulked in her deſign upon her Engliſh cully, who was ſo eaſily diſheartened, and hung his ears in manifeſt deſpondence, rather than run the riſk of making a voyage that ſhould be altogether unprofitable, reſolved to practiſe her charms upon the Dutch merchant. She had already made ſuch innovations upon his heart, that he cultivated her with peculiar complacency, gazed upon her with a moſt libidinous ſtare, and unbended his aſpect into a grin that was truly Iſraelitiſh. The painter ſaw, and was offended at this correſpondence, which he conſidered as an inſult upon his misfortune, as well as an evident preference of his rival; and, conſcious of his own timidity, ſwallowed an extraordinary glaſs, that his invention might be ſtimulated, and his reſolution raiſed to the contrivance and execution of ſome ſcheme of revenge. The wine, however, failed in the expected effect, and, without inſpiring him with the plan, ſerved only to quicken his deſire of vengeance;

ſo that he communicated his purpoſe to his friend Peregrine, and begged his aſſiſtance: but our young gentleman was too intent upon his own affair, to mind the concerns of any other perſon; and he declining to be engaged in the project, Pallet had recourſe to the genius of Pickle's valet de chambre, who readily embarked in the undertaking, and invented a plan, which was executed accordingly.

The evening being pretty far advanced, and the company ſeparated into their reſpective apartments, Pickle repaired, in all the impatience of youth and deſire, to the chamber of his charmer, and finding the door unbolted, entered in a tranſport of joy. By the light of the moon, which ſhone through the window, he was conducted to her bed, which he approached in the utmoſt agitation, and perceiving her to all appearance aſleep, eſſayed to wake her with a gentle kiſs; but this method proved ineffectual, becauſe ſhe was determined to ſave herſelf the confuſion of being an accomplice in his guilt. He repeated the application, murmured a moſt paſſionate ſalutation in her ear, and took ſuch other gentle methods of ſignifying his preſence, as perſuaded him that ſhe was reſolved to ſleep, in ſpite of all his endeavours: Fluſhed with this agreeable ſuppoſition, he locked the door, in order to prevent interruption, and ſtealing himſelf under the clothes, ſet fortune at defiance, while he held the fair creature circled in his arms.

Nevertheleſs, near as he ſeemed to be to the happy accompliſhment of his deſire, his hope was again fruſtrated with a frightful noiſe, which in a moment awaked his Amanda in a fright, and, for the preſent, engaged all his attention. His valet de chambre, whom Pallet had conſulted as a confederate in his revenge againſt the lady of pleaſure and her Jewiſh gallant, had hired of certain Bohemians, who chanced to lodge at the inn, a jack-aſs, adorned with bells, which, when every body was retired to reſt, and the Hebrew ſuppoſed to be bedded with his miſtreſs, they led up ſtairs into a long thoroughfare, from which the chambers were detached on each ſide. The painter, perceiving the lady's door a-jar, according to his expectation, mounted this animal, with intention to ride into the room, and diſturb the lovers in the midſt of their mutual endearments; but the aſs, true to its kind, find-

ing himſelf beſtrid by an unknown rider, inſtead of advancing in obedience to his conductor, retreated backwards to the other end of the paſſage, in ſpite of all the efforts of the painter, who ſpurred, and kicked, and pummelled to no purpoſe. It was the noiſe of this contention between Pallet and the aſs which invaded the ears of Peregrine and his miſtreſs, neither of whom could form the leaſt rational conjecture about the cauſe of ſuch ſtrange diſturbance, which increaſed as the animals approached the apartment. At length, the Bourrique's retrograde motion was obſtructed by the door, which it forced open in a twinkling, with one kick, and entered with ſuch complication of ſound, as terrified the lady almoſt into a fit, and threw her lover into the utmoſt perplexity and confuſion. The painter, finding himſelf thus violently intruded into the bed-chamber of he knew not whom, and dreading the reſentment of the poſſeſſor, who might diſcharge a piſtol at him, as a robber who had broke into his apartment, was overwhelmed with conſternation, and redoubled his exertion, to accompliſh a ſpeedy retreat, ſweating all the time with fear, and putting up petitions to Heaven for his ſafety; but his obſtinate companion, regardleſs of his ſituation, inſtead of ſubmitting to his conduct, began to turn round like a mill ſtone, the united ſound of his feet and bells producing a moſt ſurpriſing concert. The unfortunate rider, whirling about in this manner, would have quitted his ſeat, and left the beaſt to his own amuſement, but the rotation was ſo rapid, that the terror of a ſevere fall hindered him from attempting to diſmount, and, in the deſperation of his heart, he ſeized one of its ears, which he pinched ſo unmercifully, that the creature ſet up his throat, and brayed aloud. This hideous exclamation was no ſooner heard by the fair Fleming, already chilled by panic, and prepared with ſuperſtition, than, believing herſelf viſited by the devil, who was permitted to puniſh her for her infidelity to the marriage bed, ſhe uttered a ſcream, and began to repeat her pater-noſter with a loud voice. Her lover, finding himſelf under the neceſſity of retiring, ſtarted up, and, ſtung with the moſt violent pangs of rage and diſappointment, ran directly to the ſpot whence this diabolical noiſe ſeemed to proceed. There encountering the aſs, he diſ-

charged ſuch a volley of blows at him and his rider, that the creature carried him off at a round trot, and they roared in uniſon all the way. Having thus cleared the room of ſuch diſagreeable company, he went back to his miſtreſs, and aſſuring her, that this was only ſome fooliſh prank of Pallet, took his leave, with a promiſe of returning after the quiet of the inn ſhould be re-eſtabliſhed.

In the mean time the noiſe of the Bourrique, the cries of the painter, and the lady's ſcream, had alarmed the whole houſe; and the aſs, in the precipitation of his retreat, ſeeing people with lights before him, took ſhelter in the apartment for which he was at firſt deſigned, juſt as the Levite, arouſed at the uproar, had quitted his Dulcinea, and was attempting to recover his own chamber, unperceived. Seeing himſelf oppoſed by ſuch an animal, mounted by a tall, meagre, lanthorn-jaw'd figure, half naked, with a white night-cap upon his head, which added to the natural paleneſs of his complexion, the Jew was ſorely troubled in mind, and believing it to be an apparition of Balaam and his aſs, fled backward with a nimble pace, and crept under the bed, where he lay concealed. Mr. Jolter and the prieſt, who were the foremoſt of thoſe who had been arouſed by the noiſe, were not unmoved when they ſaw ſuch a ſpectacle ruſhing into the chamber, from whence the lady of pleaſure began to ſhriek. The governor made a full halt, and the Capuchin diſcovered no inclination to proceed. They were, however, by the preſſure of the crowd that followed them, thruſt forward to the door, through which the viſion entered; and there Jolter, with great ceremony, complimented his reverence with the pas, beſeeching him to walk in. The medicant was too courteous and humble to accept this pre-eminence, and a very earneſt diſpute enſued; during which the aſs, in the courſe of his circuit, ſhowed himſelf and rider, and in a trice decided the conteſt; for, ſtruck with this ſecond glimpſe, both at one inſtant ſprung backward with ſuch force, as overturned the next men, who communicated the impulſe to thoſe that ſtood behind them, and theſe again to others; ſo that the whole paſſage was ſtrowed with a long file of people, that lay in a line, like the ſequel and dependence of a pack of cards. In the midſt of this havock, our hero returned

from his own room with an air of aſtoniſhment, aſking the cauſe of this uproar. Receiving ſuch hints of intelligence as Jolter's conſternation would permit him to give, he ſnatched the candle out of his hand, and advanced into the haunted chamber without heſitation, being followed by all preſent, who broke forth into a long and loud peal of laughter, when they perceived the ludicrous ſource of their diſquiet. The painter himſelf made an effort to join their mirth; but he had been ſo harrowed by fear, and ſmarted ſo much with the pain of the diſcipline he had received from Pickle, that he could not, with all his endeavour, vanquiſh the ruefulneſs of his countenance. His attempt ſerved only to increaſe the awkwardneſs of his ſituation, which was not at all mended by the behaviour of the coquette, who, furious with her diſappointment, ſlipped on a petticoat and bed-gown, and ſpringing upon him, like another Hecuba, with her nails deprived all one ſide of his noſe of the ſkin, and would not have left him an eye to ſee through, if ſome of the company had not reſcued him from her unmerciful talons. Provoked at this outrage, as well as by her behaviour to him in the diligence, he publicly explained his intention in entering her chamber in this equipage; and, miſſing the Hebrew among the ſpectators, aſſured them that he muſt have abſconded ſomewhere in the apartment. In purſuance of this intimation, the room was immediately ſearched, and the mortified Levite pulled by the heels from his lurking-place; ſo that Pallet had the good fortune, at laſt, to transfer the laugh from himſelf to his rival and the French inamorata, who accordingly underwent the ridicule of the whole audience.

CHAPTER LVII.

Pallet, endeavouring to unravel the myſtery of the treatment he had received, falls out of the frying-pan into the fire.

NEVERTHELESS, Pallet was ſtill confounded and chagrined by one conſideration, which was no other than that of his having been ſo roughly handled in the chamber belonging (as he found upon inquiry) to the handſome

young lady who w's under the Capuchin's direction. He recollected, that the door was faſt locked when his beaſt burſt it open; and he had no reaſon to believe that any perſon followed him in his irruption: On the other hand, he could not imagine, that ſuch a gentle creature would either attempt to commit or be able to execute ſuch a deſperate aſſault as that which his body had ſuſtained; and her demeanour was ſo modeſt and circumſpect, that he durſt not harbour the leaſt ſuſpicion of her virtue.

Theſe reflections bewildered him in the labyrinth of thought; he rummaged his whole imagination, endeavouring to account for what had happened. At length he concluded, that either Peregrine, or the devil, or both, muſt have been at the bottom of the whole affair, and determined, for the ſatisfaction of his curioſity, to watch our heroe's motions, during the remaining part of the night, ſo narrowly, that his conduct, myſterious as it was, ſhould not be able to elude his penetration.

With theſe ſentiments he retired to his own room, after the aſs had been reſtored to the right owners, and the prieſt had viſited and confirmed his fair ward, who had been almoſt diſtracted with fear. Silence no ſooner prevailed again, than he crawled darkling towards her door, and huddled himſelf up in an obſcure corner, from whence he might obſerve the ingreſs or egreſs of any human creature. He had not long remained in this poſture, when, fatigued with this adventure, and that of the preceding night, his faculties were gradually overpowered with ſlumber; and, falling faſt aſleep, he began to ſnore like a whole congregation of Prebyterians. The Flemiſh beauty, hearing this diſcordant noiſe in the paſſage, began to be afraid of ſome new alarm, and very prudently bolted her door; ſo that, when her lover wanted to repeat his viſit, he was not only ſurpriſed and incenſed at this diſagreeable ſerenade, the author of which he did not know, but when compelled by his paſſion, which was by this time wound to the higheſt pitch, he ventured to approach the entrance, he had the extreme mortification to find himſelf ſhut out. He durſt not knock to ſignify his preſence in any other manner, on account of the lady's reputation, which would have greatly ſuffered, had the

ſnorer been waked by his endeavours. Had he known that the perſon who thus thwarted his views was the painter, he would have taken ſome effectual ſtep to remove him; but he could not conceive what ſhould induce Pallet to take up his reſidence in that corner; nor could he uſe the aſſiſtance of a light to diſtinguiſh him, becauſe there was not a candle burning in the houſe.

It is impoſſible to deſcribe the rage and vexation of our hero, while he continued thus tantalized upon the brink of bliſs, after his deſire had been exaſperated by the circumſtances of his two former diſappointments. He ejaculated a thouſand execrations againſt his own fortune, curſed his fellow-travellers without exception, vowed revenge againſt the painter, who had twice confounded his moſt intereſting ſcheme, and was tempted to execute immediate vengeance upon the unknown cauſe of his preſent miſcarriage. In this agony of diſtraction did he ſweat two whole hours in the paſſage, though not without ſome faint hopes of being delivered from his tormentor, who, he imagined, upon waking, would undoubtedly ſhift his quarters, and leave the field free to his deſigns; but when he heard the cock repeat his ſalutation to the morn, which began to open on the rear of night, he could no longer reſtrain his indignation. Going to his own chamber, he filled a baſon with cold water, and, ſtanding at ſome diſtance, diſcharged it full in the face of the gaping ſnorer, who, over and above the ſurpriſe occaſioned by the application, was almoſt ſuffocated by the liquor that entered his mouth, and ran down into his wind-pipe. While he gaſped like a perſon half drowned, without knowing the nature of his diſaſter, or remembering the ſituation in which he fell aſleep, Peregrine retired to his own door, and to his no ſmall aſtoniſhment, from a long howl that invaded his ears, learned that the patient was no other than Pallet, who had now for the third time baulked his good fortune.

Enraged at the complicated treſpaſſes of this unfortunate offender, he ruſhed from his apartment with a horſe-whip, and encountering the painter in his flight, overturned him in the paſſage. There he exerciſed the inſtrument of his wrath with great ſeverity, on pretence of miſtaking him for ſome preſumptuous cur, which had

diſturbed the repoſe of the inn; nay, when he called alound for mercy in a ſupplicating tone, and his chaſtiſer could no longer pretend to treat him as a quadruped, ſuch was the virulence of the young gentleman's indignation, that he could not help declaring his ſatisfaction, by telling Pallet he had richly deſerved the puniſhment he had undergone, for his madneſs, folly, and impertinence, in contriving and executing ſuch idle ſchemes, as had no other tendency than that of plaguing his neighbours.

Pallet proteſted, with great vehemence, that he was innocent, as the child unborn, of an intention to give umbrage to any perſon whatever, except the Iſraelite and his doxy, who he knew had incurred his diſpleaſure. "But, as God is my Saviour (ſaid he), I believe I am perſecuted with witchcraft, and begin to think that damned prieſt is an agent for the devil; for he has been but two nights in our company, during which I have not cloſed an eye, but, on the contrary, have been tormented by all the fiends of hell." Pickle peeviſhly replied, that his torments had been occaſioned by his own fooliſh imagination; and aſked him how he came to howl in that corner. The painter, who did not think proper to own the truth, ſaid, that he had been tranſported thither by ſome preternatural conveyance, and touſed in water by an inviſible hand. The youth, in hope of profiting by his abſence, adviſed him to retire immediately to his bed, and by ſleep ſtrive to comfort his brain, which ſeemed to be not a little diſordered by the want of that refreſhment. Pallet himſelf began to be very much of the ſame way of thinking; and, in compliance with ſuch wholeſome counſel, betook himſelf to reſt, muttering prayers all the way for the recovery of his own underſtanding.

Pickle attended him to his chamber, and, locking him up, put the key in his own pocket, that he might not have it in his power to interrupt him again. But, in his return he was met by Mr. Jolter and the doctor, who had been a ſecond time alarmed by the painter's cries, and come to inquire about this new adventure. Half frantic with ſuch a ſeries of diſappointments, he curſed them in his heart for their unſeaſonable appearance. When they queſtioned him about Pallet, he told them he had found

him ſtark ſtaring mad, howling in a corner, and wet to the ſkin, and conducted him to his room, where he was now abed. The phyſician, hearing this circumſtance, made a merit of his vanity; and, under pretence of concern for the patient's welfare, deſired he might have an opportunity of examining the ſymptoms of his diſorder, without loſs of time; alleging that many diſeaſes might have been ſtifled in the birth, which afterwards baffled all the endeavours of the medical art. The young gentleman accordingly delivered the key, and once more withdrew into his own chamber, with a view of ſeizing the firſt occaſion that ſhould preſent itſelf of renewing his application to his Amanda's door; while the doctor, in his way to Pallet's apartment, hinted to the governor his ſuſpicion, that the patient laboured under that dreadful ſymptom called the *hydrophobia*, which, he obſerved, had ſometimes appeared in perſons who were not previouſly bit by a mad dog. This conjecture he founded upon the howl he uttered when he was ſouſed with water, and began to recollect certain circumſtances of the painter's behaviour for ſome days paſt, which now he could plainly perceive had prognoſticated ſome ſuch calamity. He then aſcribed the diſtemper to the violent frights he had lately undergone; affirmed that the affair of the Baſtile had made ſuch a violent encroachment upon his underſtanding, that his manner of thinking and ſpeaking was entirely altered. By a theory of his own invention, he explained the effect of fear upon a looſe ſyſtem of nerves, and demonſtrated the modus in which the animal ſpirits operate upon the ideas and power of imagination.

This diſquiſition, which was communicated at the painter's door, might have laſted till breakfaſt, had not Jolter reminded him of his own maxim, *Venienti occurrite morbo;* upon which he put the key to immediate uſe, and they walked ſoftly towards the bed, where the patient lay extended at full length in the arms of ſleep. The phyſician took notice of his breathing hard, and his mouth being open; and from theſe diagnoſtics declared, that the *liquidum nervoſum* was intimately affected, and the *ſaliva* impregnated with the ſpiculated particles of the *virus*, howſoever contracted. This ſentence was ſtill farther confirmed by the ſtate of his pulſe, which, being full and

low, indicated an oppreſſed circulation, from a loſs of elaſticity in the propelling arteries. He propoſed that he ſhould immediately ſuffer a ſecond aſperſion of water, which would not only contribute to the cure, but alſo certify them beyond all poſſibility of doubt, with regard to the ſtate of the diſeaſe; for it would evidently appear, from the manner in which he would bear the application, whether or not his horror of water amounted to a confirmed hydrophobia. Mr. Jolter, in compliance with this propoſal, began to empty a bottle of water, which he found in the room, in a baſon; when he was interrupted by the preſcriber, who adviſed him to uſe the contents of the chamber-pot, which, being impregnated with ſalt, would operate more effectually than pure element. Thus directed, the governor lifted up the veſſel, which was replete with medicine, and with one turn of his hand diſcharged the whole healing inundation upon the ill-omen'd patient, who, waking in the utmoſt diſtraction of horror, yelled moſt hideouſly, juſt at the time when Peregrine had brought his miſtreſs to a parley, and entertained hopes of being admitted into her chamber.

Terrified at this exclamation, ſhe inſtantly broke off the treaty, beſeeching him to retire from the door, that her honour might receive no injury from his being found in that place: And he had juſt enough of recollection left to ſee the neceſſity of obeying the order; in conformity to which he retreated, well nigh deprived of his ſenſes, and almoſt perſuaded that ſo many unaccountable diſappointments muſt have proceeded from ſome ſupernatural cauſe, of which the idiot Pallet was no more than the involuntary inſtrument.

Meanwhile, the doctor having aſcertained the malady of the patient, whoſe cries, interrupted by frequent ſobs and ſighs, he interpreted into the barking of a dog, and having no more ſalt water at hand, reſolved to renew the bath with ſuch materials as chance would afford. He actually laid hold of the bottle and baſon; but by this time the painter had recovered the uſe of his ſenſes ſo well, as to perceive his drift; and, ſtarting up, like a frantic bedlamite, ran directly to his ſword, ſwearing with many horrid imprecations, that he would murder them both immediately, if he ſhould be hanged before dinner.

They did not chooſe to wait the iſſue of his threat, but retired with ſuch precipitation, that the phyſician had almoſt diſlocated his ſhoulder, by running againſt one ſide of the entry. Jolter, having pulled the door after him, and turned the key, betook himſelf to flight, roaring aloud for aſſiſtance. His colleague, ſeeing the door ſecured, valued himſelf upon his reſolution, and exhorted him to return; declaring, that, for his own part, he was more afraid of the madman's teeth than of his weapon, and admoniſhing the governor to re-enter, and execute what they had left undone. "Go in (ſaid he) without fear or apprehenſion, and if any accident ſhall happen to you, either from his ſlaver or his ſword, I will aſſiſt you with my advice, which from this ſtation I can more coolly and diſtinctly adminiſter, than I ſhould be able to ſupply, if my ideas were diſturbed, or my attention engaged in any perſonal concern."

Jolter, who could make no objection to the juſtneſs of the concluſion, frankly owned, that he had no inclination to try the experiment; obſerving, that ſelf-preſervation was the firſt law of nature; that his connections with the unhappy lunatic were but ſlight; and that it could not be reaſonably expected that he would run ſuch riſks for his ſervice, as were declined by one who had ſet out with him from England on the footing of a companion. This inſinuation introduced a diſpute upon the nature of benevolence, and the moral ſenſe, which (the republican argued) exiſted independent of any private conſideration, and could never be affected by any contingent circumſtance of time and fortune; while the other, who abhorred his principles, aſſerted the duties and excellence of private friendſhip, with infinite rancour of altercation.

During the hotteſt of the argument, they were joined by the Capuchin, who, being aſtoniſhed to ſee them thus virulently engaged at the door, and to hear the painter bellowing within the chamber, conjured them, in the name of God, to tell him the cauſe of that confuſion, which had kept the whole houſe in continual alarm during the beſt part of the night, and ſeemed to be the immediate work of the devil and his angels. When the governor gave him to underſtand, that Pallet was viſited with an evil ſpirit, he muttered a prayer of St. Antonio

de Padua, and undertook to cure the painter, provided he could be ſecured ſo as that he might, without danger to himſelf, burn part of a certain relic under his noſe, which he aſſured them was equal to the miraculous power of Eleazar's ring. They expreſſed great curioſity to know what this treaſure was; and the prieſt was prevailed upon to tell them in confidence, that it was a collection of the parings of the nails belonging to thoſe two madmen, whom Jeſus purged of the legion of devils that afterwards entered the ſwine. So ſaying, he pulled from one of his pockets a ſmall box, containing about an ounce of the parings of an horſe's hoof; at ſight of which, the governor could not help ſmiling, on account of the groſſneſs of the impoſition. The doctor aſked, with a ſupercilious ſmile, whether thoſe maniacs, whom Jeſus cured, were of the ſorrel complexion, or dapple gray; for, from the texture of theſe parings, he could prove, that the original owners were of the quadruped order, and even diſtinguiſh, that their feet had been fortified with ſhoes of iron.

The mendicant, who bore an inveterate grudge againſt this ſon of Æſculapius, ever ſince he had made ſo free with the Catholic religion, replied, with great bitterneſs, that he was a wretch, with whom no Chriſtian ought to communicate; that the vengeance of Heaven would one day overtake him, on account of his profanity; and that his heart was ſhod with a metal much harder than iron, which nothing but hell-fire would be able to melt.

It was now broad day, and all the ſervants of the inn were a-foot. Peregrine, ſeeing it would be impoſſible to obtain any ſort of indemnification for the time he had loſt, and the perturbation of his ſpirits hindering him from enjoying repoſe, which was, moreover, obſtructed by the noiſe of Pallet and his attendants, put on his clothes at once, and, in exceeding ill humour, arrived at the ſpot where this triumvirate ſtood debating about the means of overpowering the furious painter, who ſtill continued his ſong of oaths and execrations, and made ſundry efforts to break open the door. Chagrined as our hero was, he could not help laughing when he heard how the patient had been treated; and his indignation changing into compaſſion, he called to him through the

key-hole, deſiring to know the reaſon of his diſtracted behaviour. Pallet no ſooner recognized his voice, than lowering his own to a whimpering tone, "My dear friend (ſaid he), I have at laſt detected the ruffians who have perſecuted me ſo much. I caught them in the fact of ſuffocating me with cold water; and by the Lord I will be revenged, or may I never live to finiſh my Cleopatra. For the love of God! open the door, and I will make that conceited Pagan, that pretender to taſte, that falſe devotee of the ancients, who poiſons people with ſillykickabies and devil's dung; I ſay, I will make him a monument of my wrath, and an example to all the cheats and impoſtors of the faculty; and as for that thick-headed inſolent pedant, his confederate, who emptied my own jordan upon me while I ſlept, he had better been in his beloved Paris, botching ſchemes for his friend the Pretender, than incur the effects of my reſentment. Gadſbodikins! I won't leave him a wind-pipe for the hangman to ſtop, at the end of another rebellion."

Pickle told him his conduct had been ſo extravagant, as to confirm the whole company in the belief that he was actually deprived of his ſenſes; on which ſuppoſition, Mr. Jolter and the doctor had acted the part of friends, in doing that which they thought moſt conducive to his recovery; ſo that their concern merited his thankful acknowledgment, inſtead of his frantic menaces: That, for his own part, he would be the firſt to condemn him, as one utterly bereft of his wits, and give orders for his being ſecured as a madman, unleſs he would immediately give a proof of his ſanity, by laying aſide his ſword, compoſing his ſpirits, and thanking his injured friends for their care of his perſon.

This alternative quieted his tranſports in a moment; he was terrified at the apprehenſion of being treated like a bedlamite, being dubious of the ſtate of his own brain; and, on the other hand, had conceived ſuch a horror and antipathy for his tormentors, that, far from believing himſelf obliged by what they had done, he could not even think of them without the utmoſt rage and deteſtation. He, therefore, in the moſt tranquil voice he could aſſume, proteſted, that he never was leſs out of his ſenſes than at preſent, though he did not know how long he

might retain them, if he ſhould be conſidered in the light of a lunatic: That, in order to prove his being *compos mentis*, he was willing to ſacrifice the reſentment he ſo juſtly harboured againſt thoſe, who, by their malice, had brought him to this paſs: But, as he apprehended, it would be the greateſt ſign of madneſs he could exhibit, to thank them for the miſchiefs they had brought upon him, he deſired to be excuſed from making any ſuch conceſſion; and ſwore he would endure every thing, rather than be guilty of ſuch mean abſurdity.

Peregrine held a conſultation upon this reply, when the governor and phyſician ſtrenuouſly argued againſt any capitulation with a maniac, and propoſed that ſome method might be taken to ſeize, fetter, and convey him into a dark room, where he might be treated according to the rules of art. But the Capuchin, underſtanding the circumſtances of the caſe, undertook to reſtore him to his former ſtate, without having any recourſe to ſuch violent meaſures. Pickle, who was a better judge of the affair than any perſon preſent, opened the door without further heſitation, and diſplayed the poor painter ſtanding with a woeful countenance, ſhivering in his ſhirt, which was as wet as if he had been dragged through the Dender: A ſpectacle which gave ſuch offence to the chaſte eyes of the Hebrew's miſtreſs, who was by this time one of the ſpectators, that ſhe turned her head another way, and withdrew to her own room, exclaiming againſt the indecent practices of men.

Pallet, ſeeing the young gentleman enter, ran to him, and, ſhaking him by the hand, called him his beſt friend, and ſaid he had reſcued him from thoſe who had a deſign againſt his life. The prieſt would have produced his parings, and applied them to his noſe; but was hindered by Pickle, who adviſed the patient to ſhift himſelf, and put on his clothes. This being done with great order and deliberation, Mr. Jolter, who, with the doctor, had kept a wary diſtance, in expectation of ſeeing ſome ſtrange effects of his diſtraction, began to believe that he had been guilty of a miſtake, and accuſed the phyſician of having miſled him by his falſe diagnoſtic. The doctor ſtill inſiſted upon his former declaration; aſſuring him, that although Pallet enjoyed a ſhort interval for the preſent, the

delirium would ſoon recur, unleſs they would profit by this momentary calm, and ordered him to be blooded, bliſtered, and purged, with all imaginable diſpatch.

The governor, however, notwithſtanding this caution, advanced to the injured party, and begged pardon for the ſhare he had in giving him ſuch diſturbance. He declared, in the moſt ſolemn manner, that he had no other intention than that of contributing towards his welfare, and that his behaviour was the reſult of the phyſician's preſcription, which he affirmed was abſolutely neceſſary for the recovery of his health.

The painter, who had very little gall in his diſpoſition, was ſatisfied with this apology; but his reſentment, which was before divided, now glowed with double fire againſt his firſt fellow-traveller, whom he looked upon as the author of all the miſchances he had undergone, and marked out for his vengeance accordingly. Yet the doors of reconciliation were not ſhut againſt the doctor, who, with great juſtice, might have transferred this load of offence from himſelf to Peregrine; who was, without doubt, the ſource of the painter's misfortune: But, in that caſe, he muſt have owned himſelf miſtaken in his medical capacity; and he did not think the friendſhip of Pallet important enough to be retrieved by ſuch condeſcenſion; ſo that he reſolved to neglect him entirely, and gradually forget the former correſpondence he had maintained with a perſon whom he deemed ſo unworthy of his notice.

CHAPTER LVIII.

Peregrine, almoſt diſtracted with his diſappointments, conjures the fair Fleming to permit his viſits at Bruſſels. She withdraws from his purſuit.

THINGS being thus adjuſted, and all the company dreſſed, they went to breakfaſt about five in the morning; and in leſs than an hour after were ſeated in the diligence, where a profound ſilence prevailed. Peregrine, who uſed to be the life of the ſociety, was extremely penſive and melancholy on account of his miſhap, the Iſraelite and his Dulcinea dejected in conſequence of their diſ-

grace, the poet abſorpt in lofty meditation, the painter in ſchemes of revenge, while Jolter, rocked by the motion of the carriage, made himſelf amends for the want of reſt he had ſuſtained, and the mendicant, with his fair charge, were infected by the cloudy aſpect of our youth, in whoſe diſappointment each of them, for different reaſons, bore no inconſiderable ſhare. This general languor and receſs from all bodily exerciſe, diſpoſed them all to receive the gentle yoke of ſlumber; and, in half an hour after they had embarked, there was not one of them awake, except our hero and his miſtreſs, unleſs the Capuchin was pleaſed to counterfeit ſleep, in order to indulge our young gentleman with an opportunity of enjoying ſome private converſation with his beauteous ward.

Peregrine did not neglect the occaſion; but, on the contrary, ſeized the firſt minute, and, in gentle murmurs, lamented his hard hap in being thus the ſport of fortune. He aſſured her (and that with great ſincerity), that all the croſs accidents of his life had not coſt him one half of the vexation and keenneſs of chagrin which he had ſuffered laſt night; and that, now he was on the brink of parting from her, he ſhould be overwhelmed with the blackeſt deſpair, if ſhe would not extend her compaſſion ſo far as to give him an opportunity of ſighing at her feet in Bruſſels, during the few days his affairs would permit him to ſpend in that city.

This young lady, with an air of mortification, expreſſed her ſorrow for being the innocent cauſe of his anxiety; ſaid, ſhe hoped laſt night's adventure would be a ſalutary warning to both their ſouls; for ſhe was perſuaded that her virtue was protected by the intervention of Heaven; that, whatever impreſſion it might have made upon him, ſhe was enabled by it to adhere to that duty from which her paſſion had begun to ſwerve; and, beſeeching him to forget her for his own peace, gave him to underſtand, that neither the plan ſhe had laid down for her own conduct, nor the dictates of her honour, would allow her to receive his viſits, or carry on any other correſpondence with him, while ſhe was reſtricted by the articles of her marriage vow.

This explanation produced ſuch a violent effect upon her admirer, that he was for ſome minutes deprived of

the faculty of ſpeech; which he no ſooner recovered, than he gave vent to the moſt unbridled tranſports of paſſion. He taxed her with barbarity and indifference; told her, that ſhe had robbed him of his reaſon and internal peace; that he would follow her to the ends of the earth, and ceaſe to live ſooner than ceaſe to love her; that he would ſacrifice the innocent fool who had been the occaſion of all this diſquiet, and murder every man whom he conſidered as an obſtruction to his views. In a word, his paſſions, which had continued ſo long in a ſtate of the higheſt fermentation, together with the want of that repoſe which calms and quiets the perturbation of the ſpirits, had wrought him up to a pitch of real diſtraction. While he uttered theſe delirious expreſſions, the tears ran down his cheeks; and he underwent ſuch agitation, that the tender heart of the fair Fleming was affected with his condition; and, while her own face was bedewed with the ſtreams of ſympathy, ſhe begged him, for Heaven's ſake, to be compoſed; and promiſed, for his ſatisfaction, to abate ſomewhat of the rigour of her purpoſe. Conſoled by this kind declaration, he recollected himſelf; and, taking out his pencil, gave her his addreſs, when ſhe had aſſured him that he ſhould hear from her in four and twenty hours at fartheſt after their ſeparation.

Thus ſoothed, he regained the empire of himſelf, and, by degrees, recovered his ſerenity. But this was not the caſe with his Amanda, who, from this ſample of his diſpoſition, dreaded the impetuoſity of his youth, and was effectually deterred from entering into any engagements that might ſubject her peace and reputation to the raſh effects of ſuch a violent ſpirit. Though ſhe was captivated by his perſon and accompliſhments, ſhe had reflection enough to foreſee, that the longer ſhe countenanced his paſſion, her own heart would be more and more irretrievably engaged, and the quiet of her life the more expoſed to continual interruption. She therefore profited by theſe conſiderations, and a ſenſe of religious honour, which helped her to withſtand the ſuggeſtions of inclination, and reſolved to amuſe her lover with falſe hopes, until ſhe ſhould have it in her power to relinquiſh his converſation, without running any riſk of ſuffering by the inconſiderate ſallies of his love. It was with this view

that ſhe deſired he would not inſiſt upon attending her to her mother's houſe, when the diligence arrived at Bruſſels; and he, cajoled by her artifice, took a formal leave of her, together with the other ſtrangers, fixing his habitation at the inn to which he and his fellow-travellers had been directed, in the impatient expectation of receiving a kind ſummons from her within the limited time.

Meanwhile, in order to divert his imagination, he went to ſee the ſtadthouſe, park, and arſenal, took a ſuperficial view of the bookſeller's cabinet of curioſities, and ſpent the evening at the Italian opera, which was at that time exhibited for the entertainment of Prince Charles of Lorrain, then Governor of the Low Countries. In ſhort, the ſtated period was almoſt elapſed, when Peregrine received a letter to this purpoſe:—

"SIR,

"IF you knew what violence I do my own heart, in declaring that I have withdrawn myſelf for ever from your addreſſes, you would ſurely applaud the ſacrifice I make to virtue, and ſtrive to imitate this example of ſelf-denial. Yes, Sir, Heaven hath lent me grace to ſtruggle with my guilty paſſion, and henceforth to avoid the dangerous ſight of him who inſpired it. I therefore conjure you, by the regard you ought to have for the eternal welfare of us both, as well as by the eſteem and affection you profeſs, to war with your unruly inclination, and deſiſt from all attempts of fruſtrating the laudable reſolution I have made. Seek not to invade the peace of one who loves you, to diſturb the quiet of a family that never did you wrong, and to alienate the thoughts of a weak woman from a deſerving man, who, by the moſt ſacred claim, ought to have the full poſſeſſion of her heart."

This billet, without either date or ſubſcription, baniſhed all remains of diſcretion from the mind of our hero, who ran inſtantly to the landlord, in all the ecſtaſy of madneſs, and demanded to ſee the meſſenger who brought the letter, on pain of putting his whole family to the ſword. The innkeeper, terrified by his looks and menaces, fell upon his knees, proteſting, in the face of Heaven, that he was utterly ignorant and innocent of any

thing that could give him offence, and that the billet was brought by a perſon whom he did not know, and who retired immediately, ſaying it required no anſwer. He then gave utterance to his fury in a thouſand imprecations and invectives againſt the writer, whom he diſhonoured with the appellations of a coquette, a jilt, an adventurer, who, by means of a pimping prieſt, had defrauded him of his money. He denounced vengeance againſt the mendicant, whom he ſwore he would deſtroy, if ever he ſet eyes on him again. The painter unluckily appearing during this paroxyſm of rage, he ſeized him by the throat, ſaying, he was ruined by his accurſed folly; and, in all likelihood, poor Pallet would have been ſtrangled, had not Jolter interpoſed in his behalf, beſeeching his pupil to have mercy upon the ſufferer, and, with infinite anxiety, deſiring to know the cauſe of this violent aſſault. He received no anſwer but a ſtring of incoherent curſes. When the painter, with unſpeakable aſtoniſhment, took God to witneſs that he had done nothing to diſoblige him, the governor began to think, in ſad earneſt, that Peregrine's vivacity had at length riſen to the tranſports of actual madneſs, and was himſelf almoſt diſtracted with this ſuppoſition. That he might the better judge what remedy ought to be applied, he uſed his whole influence, and practiſed all his eloquence upon the youth, in order to learn the immediate cauſe of his delirium. He employed the moſt pathetic entreaties, and even ſhed tears in the courſe of his ſupplication; ſo that Pickle (the firſt violence of the hurricane being blown over) was aſhamed of his own imprudence, and retired to his chamber, in order to recollect his diſſipated thoughts. There he ſhut himſelf up, and, for the ſecond time, peruſing the fatal epiſtle, began to waver in his opinion of the author's character and intention. He ſometimes conſidered her as one of thoſe nymphs who, under the maſk of innocence and ſimplicity, practiſe upon the hearts and purſes of unwary and unexperienced youths. This was the ſuggeſtion of his wrath, inflamed by diſappointment; but, when he reflected upon the circumſtances of her behaviour, and recalled her particular charms to his imagination, the ſeverity of his cenſure gave way, and his heart declared in favour of her ſincerity. Yet even this conſideration ag-

gravated the ſenſe of his loſs, and he was in danger of relapſing into his former diſtraction, when his paſſion was a little becalmed by the hope of ſeeing her again, either by accident, or in the courſe of a diligent and minute inquiry, which he forthwith reſolved to ſet on foot. He had reaſon to believe, that her own heart would eſpouſe his cauſe, in ſpite of her virtue's determination, and did not deſpair of meeting with the Capuchin, whoſe good offices he knew he could at any time command. Comforted with theſe reflections, the tempeſt of his ſoul ſubſided. In leſs than two hours he joined his company, with an air of compoſure, and aſked the painter's forgiveneſs for the freedom he had taken—the cauſe of which he promiſed hereafter to explain. Pallet was glad of being reconciled on any terms to one whoſe countenance ſupported him in equilibrio with his antagoniſt the doctor; and Mr. Jolter was rejoiced beyond meaſure at his pupil's recovery.

CHAPTER LIX.

Peregrine meets with Mrs. Hornbeck, and is conſoled for his loſs. His valet de chambre is embroiled with her duenna, whom, however, he finds means to appeaſe.

EVERY thing having thus reſumed its natural channel, they dined together in great tranquillity. In the afternoon, Peregrine, on pretence of ſtaying at home to write letters, while his companions were at the coffee-houſe, ordered a coach to be called, and, with his valet de chambre, who was the only perſon acquainted with the preſent ſtate of his thoughts, ſet out for the Promenade, to which all the ladies of faſhion reſort in the evening, during the ſummer ſeaſon, in hopes of ſeeing his fugitive among the reſt.

Having made a circuit round the walk, and narrowly obſerved every female in the place, he perceived at ſome diſtance the livery of Hornbeck upon a lacquey that ſtood at the back of a coach: upon which he ordered his man to reconnoitre the ſaid carriage, while he pulled up his glaſſes, that he might not be diſcovered, before he ſhould

have received ſome intelligence, by which he might conduct himſelf on this unexpected occaſion, that already began to interfere with the purpoſe of his coming thither, though it could not diſpute his attention with the idea of his charming unknown.

His Mercury having made his obſervations, reported, that there was no body in the coach but Mrs. Hornbeck and an elderly woman, who had all the air of a duenna, and that the ſervant was not the ſame footman who had attended them in France. Encouraged by this information, our hero ordered himſelf to be driven cloſe up to that ſide of their convenience on which his old miſtreſs ſat; and accoſted her with the uſual ſalutation. This lady no ſooner beheld her gallant, than her cheeks reddened with a double glow; and ſhe exclaimed, "Dear brother, I am overjoyed to ſee you! Pray come into our coach." He took the hint immediately, and, complying with her requeſt, embraced this new ſiſter with great affection.

Perceiving that her attendant was very much ſurpriſed and alarmed at this unexpected meeting, ſhe, in order to baniſh her ſuſpicion, and at the ſame time, give her lover his cue, told him, that his brother (meaning her huſband) was gone to the Spa for a few weeks, by the advice of phyſicians, on account of his ill ſtate of health; and that, from his laſt letter, ſhe had the pleaſure to tell him, he was in a fair way of doing well. The young gentleman expreſſed his ſatisfaction at this piece of news; obſerving, with an air of fraternal concern, that if his brother had not made too free with his conſtitution, his friends in England would have had no occaſion to repine at his abſence and want of health, by which he was baniſhed from his own country and connections. He then aſked (with an affectation of ſurpriſe) why ſhe had not accompanied her ſpouſe; and was given to underſtand, that his tenderneſs of affection would not ſuffer him to expoſe her to the fatigues of the journey, which lay among rocks that were almoſt inacceſſible.

The duenna's doubts being eaſed by this preamble of converſation, he changed the ſubject to the pleaſures of the place; and among other ſuch queſtions, inquired if ſhe had as yet viſited Verſailles? This is a public-houſe,

ſituated upon the canal, at the diſtance of about two miles from town, and accommodated with tolerable gardens for the entertainment of company. When ſhe replied in the negative, he propoſed to accompany her thither immediately; but the governante, who had hitherto ſat ſilent, objected to this propoſal; telling them, in broken Engliſh, that, as the lady was under her care, ſhe could not anſwer to Mr. Hornbeck for allowing her to viſit ſuch a ſuſpicious place. "As for that matter, Madam (ſaid the confident gallant), give yourſelf no trouble; the conſequences ſhall be at my peril, and I will undertake to enſure you againſt my brother's reſentment." So ſaying, he directed the coachman to the place, and ordered his own to follow, under the auſpices of his valet de chambre, while the old gentlewoman, over-ruled by his aſſurance, quietly ſubmitted to his authority.

Being arrived at the place, he handed the ladies from the coach, and then for the firſt time, obſerved that the duenna was lame, a circumſtance of which he did not ſcruple to take the advantage; for they had ſcarce alighted, and drank a glaſs of wine, when he adviſed his ſiſter to enjoy a walk in the garden: And although the attendant made ſhift to keep them almoſt always in view, they enjoyed a detached converſation, in which Peregrine learned, that the true cauſe of her being left behind at Bruſſels, whilſt her huſband proceeded to Spa, was his dread of the company and familiarities of that place, to which his jealouſy durſt not expoſe her; and that ſhe had lived three weeks in a convent at Liſle, from which ſhe was delivered by his own free motion, becauſe indeed he could no longer exiſt without her company; and laſtly, our lover underſtood, that her governante was a mere dragon, who had been recommended to him by a Spaniſh merchant whoſe wife ſhe attended to her dying-day: But ſhe very much queſtioned whether or not her fidelity was proof enough againſt money and ſtrong waters. Peregrine aſſured her the experiment ſhould be tried before parting; and they agreed to paſs the night at Verſailles, provided his endeavours ſhould ſucceed.

Having exerciſed themſelves in this manner, until the duenna's ſpirits were pretty much exhauſted, that ſhe might be the better diſpoſed to recruit them with a glaſs

of liquor, they returned to their apartment, and the cordial was recommended and received in a bumper: But as it did not produce ſuch a viſible alteration as the ſanguine hopes of Pickle had made him expect, and the old gentlewoman obſerved that it began to be late, and that the gates would be ſhut in a little time, he filled up a parting glaſs, and pledged her in equal quantity. Her blood was too much chilled to be warmed even by this extraordinary doſe, which made immediate innovation in the brain of our youth, who, in the gaiety of his imagination, overwhelmed this ſhe Argus with ſuch profuſion of gallantry, that ſhe was more intoxicated with his expreſſions than with the ſpirits ſhe had drank. When, in the courſe of toying, he dropped a purſe into her boſom, ſhe ſeemed to forget how the night wore, and, with the approbation of her charge, aſſented to his propoſal of having ſomething for ſupper.

This was a great point which our adventurer had gained; and yet he plainly perceived that the governante miſtook his meaning, by giving herſelf credit for all the paſſion he had profeſſed. As this error could be rectified by no other means than thoſe of plying her with the bottle, until her diſtinguiſhing faculties ſhould be overpowered, he promoted a quick circulation. She did him juſtice, without any manifeſt ſigns of inebriation ſo long, that his own eyes began to reel in the ſockets; and he found, that, before his ſcheme could be accompliſhed, he ſhould be effectually unfitted for all the purpoſes of love. He therefore had recourſe to his valet de chambre, who underſtood the hint as ſoon as it was given, and readily undertook to perform the part, of which his maſter had played the prelude. This affair being ſettled to his ſatisfaction, and the night at odds with morning, he took an opportunity of imparting to the ear of this aged Dulcinea a kind whiſper, importing a promiſe of viſiting her, when his ſiſter ſhould be retired to her own chamber, and an earneſt deſire of leaving her door unlocked.

This agreeable intimation being communicated, he conveyed a caution of the ſame nature to Mrs. Hornbeck, as he led her to her apartment; and darkneſs and ſilence no ſooner prevailed in the houſe, than he and his truſty ſquire ſet out on their different voyages. Every thing

would have ſucceeded according to their wiſh, had not the valet de chambre ſuffered himſelf to fall aſleep at the ſide of his inamorata, and, in the agitation of a violent dream, exclaimed in a voice ſo unlike that of her ſuppoſed adorer, that ſhe diſtinguiſhed the difference at once. Waking him with a pinch and a loud ſhriek, ſhe threatened to proſecute him for a rape, and reviled him with all the epithets her rage and diſappointment could ſuggeſt.

The Frenchman, finding himſelf detected, behaved with great temper and addreſs: He begged ſhe would compoſe herſelf, on account of her own reputation, which was extremely dear to him; proteſting, that he had a moſt inviolable eſteem for her perſon. His repreſentations had weight with the duenna, who, upon recollection, comprehended the whole affair, and thought it would be her intereſt to bring matters to an accommodation. She therefore admitted the apologies of her bed-fellow, provided he would promiſe to atone by marriage for the injury ſhe had ſuſtained; and in this particular, he ſet her heart at eaſe by repeated vows, which he uttered with ſurpriſing volubility, though without any intention to perform the leaſt tittle of their contents.

Peregrine, who had been alarmed by her exclamation, and run to the door with a view of interpoſing, according to the emergency of the caſe, overhearing the affair thus compromiſed, returned to his miſtreſs, who was highly entertained with an account of what had paſſed, foreſeeing, that, for the future, ſhe ſhould be under no difficulty or reſtriction from the ſeverity of her guard.

CHAPTER LX.

Hornbeck is informed of his wife's adventure with Peregrine, for whom he prepares a ſtratagem, which is rendered ineffectual by the information of Pipes. The huſband is ducked for his intention, and our hero apprehended by the patrol.

THERE was another perſon, however, ſtill ungained; and that was no other than her footman, whoſe ſecrecy our hero attempted to ſecure in the morning by a hand-

ſome preſent, which he received with many profeſſions of gratitude and devotion to his ſervice; yet this complaiſance was nothing but a cloak uſed to diſguiſe the deſign he harboured of making his maſter acquainted with the whole tranſaction. Indeed this lacquey had been hired, not only as a ſpy upon his miſtreſs, but alſo as a check on the conduct of the governante, with promiſe of ample reward, if ever he ſhould diſcover any ſiniſter or ſuſpicious practices in the courſe of her behaviour. As for the footman whom they had brought from England, he was retained in attendance upon the perſon of his maſter, whoſe confidence he had loſt, by adviſing him to gentle methods of reclaiming his lady, when her irregularities had ſubjected her to his wrath.

The Flemiſh valet, in conſequence of the office he had undertaken, wrote to Hornbeck by the firſt poſt, giving an exact detail of the adventure at Verſailles, with ſuch a deſcription of the pretended brother, as left the huſband no room to think he could be any other perſon than his firſt diſhonourer; and exaſperated him to ſuch a degree, that he reſolved to lay an ambuſh for this invader, and at once diſqualify him from diſturbing his repoſe, by maintaining further correſpondence with his wife.

Meanwhile the lovers enjoyed themſelves without reſtraint, and Peregrine's plan of inquiry after his dear unknown was for the preſent poſtponed. His fellow-travellers were confounded at his myſterious motions, which filled the heart of Jolter with anxiety and terror. This careful conductor was fraught with ſuch experience of his pupil's diſpoſition, that he trembled with the apprehenſion of ſome ſudden accident, and lived in continual alarm, like a man that walks under the wall of a nodding tower. Nor did he enjoy any alleviations of his fears, when, upon telling the young gentleman, that the reſt of the company were deſirous of departing for Antwerp, he anſwered, that they were at liberty to conſult their own inclinations; but, for his own part, he was reſolved to ſtay in Bruſſels a few days longer. By this declaration the governor was confirmed in the opinion of his having ſome intrigue upon the anvil. In the bitterneſs of his vexation, he took the liberty of ſignifying his ſuſpicion,

and reminding him of the dangerous dilemmas to which he had been reduced by his former precipitation.

Peregrine took his caution in good part, and promiſed to behave with ſuch circumſpection as would ſcreen him from any troubleſome conſequences for the future; but, nevertheleſs, behaved that ſame evening in ſuch a manner, as plainly ſhowed, that his prudence was nothing elſe than vain ſpeculation. He had made an appointment to ſpend the night, as uſual, with Mrs. Hornbeck; and, about nine o'clock, haſtened to her lodgings, when he was accoſted in the ſtreet by his old diſcarded friend Thomas Pipes, who without any other preamble, told him, that, for all he had turned him adrift, he did not chooſe to ſee him run full ſail into his enemy's harbour, without giving him timely notice of the danger. "I'll tell you what (ſaid he), mayhap you think I want to curry favour, that I may be taken in tow again; if you do, you have made a miſtake in your reckoning. I am old enough to be laid up, and have wherewithal to keep my planks from the weather. But this here is the affair; I have known you ſince you were no higher than a marlinſpike, and ſhouldn't care to ſee you deprived of your rigging at theſe years: Whereby, I am informed by Hornbeck's man, whom I this afternoon fell in with by chance, as how his maſter has got intelligence of your boarding his wife, and has ſteered privately into this port, with a large complement of hands, in order, d'ye ſee, to ſecure you while you are under the hatches. Now, if ſo be as how you have a mind to give him a ſalt eel for his ſupper, here am I, without hope of fee or reward, ready to ſtand by you as long as my timbers will ſtick together; and if I expect any recompence, may I be bound to eat oakum and drink bilgewater for life."

Startled at this information, Peregrine examined him upon the particulars of his diſcourſe with the lacquey; and when he underſtood that Hornbeck's intelligence flowed trom the canal of his Flemiſh footman, he believed every circumſtance of Tom's report, thanked him for this warning, and, after having reprimanded him for his miſbehaviour at Liſle, aſſured him that it ſhould be his own fault if ever they ſhould part again. He then deliberated with himſelf whether or not he ſhould retort the

purpoſe upon his adverſary; but when he conſidered that Hornbeck was not the aggreſſor, and made that unhappy huſband's caſe his own, he could not help acquitting his intention of revenge, though, in his opinion, it ought to have been executed in a more honourable manner; and therefore he determined to chaſtiſe him for his want of ſpirit. Nothing ſurely can be more inſolent and unjuſt than this determination, which induced him to puniſh a perſon for his want of courage to redreſs the injury which he himſelf had done to his reputation and peace; and yet this barbarity of deciſion is authoriſed by the opinion and practice of mankind.

With theſe ſentiments he returned to the inn, and, putting a pair of piſtols in his pocket, ordered his valet de chambre and Pipes to follow him at a ſmall diſtance, ſo as that they ſhould be within call in caſe of neceſſity, and then poſted himſelf within thirty yards of his Dulcinea's door. There he had not been above half an hour, when he perceived four men take their ſtation on the other ſide, with a view, as he gueſſed, to watch for his going in, that he might be taken unaware. But when they had tarried a conſiderable time in that corner, without reaping the fruits of their expectation, their leader, perſuaded that the gallant had gained admittance by ſome ſecret means, approached the door with his followers, who, according to the inſtructions they had received, no ſooner ſaw it opened than they ruſhed in, leaving their employer in the ſtreet, where he thought his perſon would be leaſt endangered. Our adventurer, ſeeing him all alone, advanced with ſpeed, and clapping a piſtol to his breaſt, commanded him to follow his footſteps, without noiſe, on pain of immediate death.

Terrified at this ſudden apparition, Hornbeck obeyed in ſilence; and, in a few minutes, they arrived at the quay, where Pickle halting, gave him to underſtand that he was no ſtranger to his villanous deſign—told him, that if he conceived himſelf injured by any circumſtance of his conduct, he would now give him an opportunity of reſenting the wrong, in a manner becoming a man of honour. "You have a ſword about you (ſaid he), or, if you don't chooſe to put the affair on that iſſue, here is a brace of piſtols, take which you pleaſe." Such an ad-

dreſs could not fail to diſconcert a man of his character. After ſome heſitation, he, in a faultering accent, denied that his deſign was to mutilate Mr. Pickle, but that he thought himſelf entitled to the benefit of the law, by which he would have obtained a divorce, if he could have procured evidence of his wife's infidelity; and, with that view, he had employed people to take advantage of the information he had received. With regard to this alternative, he declined it entirely, becauſe he could not ſee what ſatisfaction he ſhould enjoy, in being ſhot through the head, or run through the lungs, by a perſon who had already wronged him in an irreparable manner. Laſtly, his fear made him propoſe, that the affair ſhould be left to the arbitration of two creditable men, altogether unconcerned in the diſpute.

To theſe remonſtrances, Peregrine replied, in the ſtyle of a hot-headed young man, conſcious of his own unjuſtifiable behaviour, that every gentleman ought to be a judge of his own honour, and therefore he would ſubmit to the deciſion of no umpire whatſoever; that he would forgive his want of courage, which might be a natural infirmity, but his mean diſſimulation he could not pardon: That, as he was certified of the raſcally intent of his ambuſcade, by undoubted intelligence, he would treat him, not with a retaliation of his own treachery, but with ſuch indignity as a ſcoundrel deſerves to ſuffer, unleſs he would make one effort to maintain the character he aſſumed in life. So ſaying, he again preſented his piſtols, which being rejected as before, he called his two miniſters, and ordered them to duck him in the canal.

This command was pronounced and executed almoſt in the ſame breath, to the unſpeakable terror and diſorder of the poor ſhivering patient, who, having undergone the immerſion, ran about like a drowned rat, ſqueaking for aſſiſtance and revenge. His cries were overheard by the patrole, who, chancing to paſs that way, took him under their protection, and, in conſequence of his complaint and information, went in purſuit of our adventurer and his attendants, who were ſoon overtaken and ſurrounded. Raſh and inconſiderate as the young gentleman was, he did not pretend to ſtand upon the defenſive againſt a file of muſketeers, although Pipes had drawn his cutlaſs at

their approach, but ſurrendered himſelf without oppoſition, and was conveyed to the main guard, where the commanding officer, engaged by his appearance and addreſs, treated him with all imaginable reſpect. Hearing the particulars of his adventure, he aſſured him that the prince would conſider the whole as a *tour de jeuneſſe*, and order him to be releaſed without delay.

Next morning, when this gentleman gave in his report, he made ſuch a favourable repreſentation of the priſoner, that our hero was on the point of being diſcharged, when Hornbeck preferred a complaint, accuſing him of a purpoſed aſſaſſination, and praying that ſuch puniſhment ſhould be inflicted upon him as his highneſs ſhould think adequate to the nature of the crime. The prince, perplexed with this petition, in conſequence of which he foreſaw that he muſt diſoblige a Britiſh ſubject, ſent for the plaintiff, of whom he had ſome knowledge, and in perſon exhorted him to drop the proſecution, which would only ſerve to propagate his own ſhame. But Hornbeck was too much incenſed to liſten to any propoſal of that kind, and peremptorily demanded juſtice againſt the priſoner, whom he repreſented as an obſcure adventurer, who had made repeated attempts upon his honour and his life. Prince Charles told him, that what he had adviſed was in the capacity of a friend; but, ſince he inſiſted upon his acting as a magiſtrate, the affair ſhould be examined, and determined according to the dictates of juſtice and truth.

The petitioner being diſmiſſed with this promiſe, the defendant was, in his turn, brought before the judge, whoſe prepoſſeſſion in his favour was in a great meaſure weakened by what his antagoniſt had ſaid to the prejudice of his birth and reputation.

CHAPTER LXI.

Peregrine is releaſed. Jolter confounded at his myſterious conduct. A conteſt happens between the poet and painter, who are reconciled by the mediation of their fellow-travellers.

OUR hero, underſtanding from ſome expreſſions which eſcaped the prince, that he was conſidered in the light of

a ſharper and aſſaſſin, begged that he might have the liberty of ſending for ſome vouchers, that would probably vindicate his character from the malicious aſperſions of his adverſary. This permiſſion being granted, he wrote a letter to his governor, deſiring that he would bring to him the letters of recommendation which he had received from the Britiſh ambaſſador at Paris, and ſuch other papers as he thought conducive to evince the importance of his ſituation.

The billet was given in charge to one of the ſubaltern officers on duty, who carried it to the inn, and demanded to ſpeak with Mr. Jolter. Pallet, who happened to be at the door when this meſſenger arrived, and heard him inquire for the tutor, ran directly to that gentleman's apartment, and in manifeſt diſorder told him that a huge fellow of a ſoldier, with a monſtrous pair of whiſkers, and a fur cap as big as a buſhel, was aſking for him at the door. The poor governor began to ſhake at this intimation, though he was not conſcious of having committed any thing that could attract the attention of the ſtate. When the officer appeared at his chamber door, his confuſion increaſed to ſuch a degree, that his perception ſeemed to vaniſh, and the ſubaltern repeated the purport of his errand three times, before he could comprehend his meaning, or venture to receive the letter which he preſented. At length he ſummoned all his fortitude, and having peruſed the epiſtle, his terror ſunk into anxiety. His ingenious fear immediately ſuggeſted, that Peregrine was confined in a dungeon, for ſome outrage he had committed. He ran with great agitation to a trunk, and, taking out a bundle of papers, followed his conductor, being attended by the painter, to whom he had hinted his apprehenſion. When they paſſed through the guard, which was under arms, the hearts of both died within them; and when they came into the preſence, there was ſuch an expreſſion of awful horror on the countenance of Jolter, that the prince, obſerving his diſmay, was pleaſed to encourage him with an aſſurance that he had nothing to fear. Thus comforted, he recollected himſelf ſo well as to underſtand his pupil, when he deſired him to produce the ambaſſador's letters; ſome of which being open, were immediately read by his highneſs, who was perſon-

ally acquainted with the writer, and knew ſeveral of the noblemen to whom they were addreſſed. Theſe recommendations were ſo warm, and repreſented the young gentleman in ſuch an advantageous light, that the prince, convinced of the injuſtice his character had ſuffered by the miſrepreſentation of Hornbeck, took our hero by the hand, aſked pardon for the doubts he had entertained of his honour, declared him from that moment at liberty, ordered his domeſtics to be enlarged, and offered him his countenance and protection as long as he ſhould remain in the Auſtrian Netherlands. At the ſame time, he cautioned him againſt indiſcretion in the courſe of his gallantries; and took his word and honour, that he ſhould drop all meaſures of reſentment againſt the perſon of Hornbeck during his reſidence in that place.

The delinquent, thus honourably acquitted, thanked the prince in the moſt reſpectful manner, for his generoſity and candour, and retired with his two friends, who were amazed and bewildered in their thoughts at what they had ſeen and heard, the whole adventure ſtill remaining without the ſphere of their comprehenſion, which was not at all enlarged by the unaccountable appearance of Pipes, who, with the valet de chambre, joined them at the caſtle gate. Had Jolter been a man of a luxuriant imagination, his brain would undoubtedly have ſuffered in the inveſtigation of his pupil's myſterious conduct, which he ſtrove in vain to unravel; but his intellects were too ſolid to be affected by the miſcarriage of his invention; and as Peregrine did not think proper to make him acquainted with the cauſe of his being apprehended, he contented himſelf with ſuppoſing that there was a lady in the caſe.

The painter, whoſe imagination was of a more flimſy texture, formed a thouſand chimerical conjectures, which he communicated to Pickle, in imperfect inſinuations, hoping, by his anſwers and behaviour, to diſcover the truth; but the youth, in order to tantalize him, eluded all his inquiries, with ſuch appearance of induſtry and art, as heightened his curioſity, while it diſappointed his aim, and inflamed him to ſuch a degree of impatience, that his wits began to be unſettled. Then Peregrine was fain to recompoſe his brain, by telling him in confidence,

that he had been arreſted as a ſpy. This ſecret he found more intolerable than his former uncertainty: He ran from one apartment to another, like a gooſe in the agonies of egg-laying, with intention of diſburdening this important load; but, Jolter being engaged with his pupil, and all the people of the houſe ignorant of the only language he could ſpeak, he was compelled, with infinite reluctance, to addreſs himſelf to the doctor, who was at that time ſhut up in his own chamber. Having knocked at the door to no purpoſe, he peeped through the key-hole, and ſaw the phyſician ſitting at a table, with a pen in one hand, and paper before him, his head reclined upon his other hand, and his eyes fixed upon the cieling, as if he had been entranced. Pallet, concluding that he was under the power of ſome convulſion, endeavoured to force the door open; and the noiſe of his efforts recalled the doctor from his reverie. This poetical republican, being ſo diſagreeably diſturbed, ſtarted up in a paſſion, and, opening the door, no ſooner perceived who had interrupted him, than he flung it in his face with great fury, and curſed him for his impertinent intruſion, which had deprived him of the moſt delightful viſion that ever regaled the human fancy. He imagined (as he afterwards imparted to Peregrine), that, as he enjoyed himſelf in walking through the flowery plain that borders on Parnaſſus, he was met by a venerable ſage, whom, by a certain divine vivacity that lightened from his eyes, he inſtantly knew to be the immortal Pindar. He was immediately ſtruck with reverence and awe, and proſtrated himſelf before the apparition, which, taking him by the hand, lifted him gently from the ground; and, with words more ſweet than the honey of the Hybla bees, told him, that, of all the moderns, he alone was viſited by that celeſtial impulſe by which he himſelf had been inſpired, when he produced his moſt applauded odes. So ſaying, he led him up the ſacred hill, perſuaded him to drink a copious draught of the waters of the Hippocrene, and then preſented him to the harmonious Nine, who crowned his temples with a laurel wreath.

No wonder that he was enraged at being himſelf cut off from ſuch ſublime ſociety. He raved at the invader, who was ſo big with his own

mindful of the diſgrace he had ſuſtained, and diſregarding all the ſymptoms of the phyſician's diſpleaſure, he applied his mouth to the door, in an eager tone, "I'll hold you any wager (ſaid he), that I gueſs the true cauſe of Mr. Pickle's impriſonment." To this challenge he received no reply; and therefore repeated it, adding, "I ſuppoſe you imagine he was taken up for fighting a duel, or affronting a nobleman, or lying with ſome man's wife, or ſome ſuch matter; but, egad! you was never more miſtaken in your life; and I'll lay my Cleopatra againſt your Homer's head, that in four and twenty hours you ſha'n't light on the true reaſon."

The favourite of the muſes, exaſperated at this vexatious perſeverance of the painter, who he imagined had come to teaze and inſult him, "I would (ſaid he) ſacrifice a cock to Æſculapius, were I aſſured that any perſon had been taken up for extirpating ſuch a troubleſome Goth as you are, from the face of the earth. As for your boaſted Cleopatra, which you ſay was drawn from your own wife, I believe the copy has as much of the *to kalon* as the original. But, were it mine, it ſhould be hung up in the temple of Cloacina, as the picture of that goddeſs; for any other apartment would be diſgraced by its appearance." "Hark ye, Sir (replied Pallet, enraged in his turn at the contemptuous mention of his darling performance), you may make as free with my wife as you think proper, but 'ware my works; thoſe are the children of my fancy, conceived by the glowing imagination, and formed by the art of my own hands; and you yourſelf are a Goth, and a Turk, and a Tartar, and an impudent pretending jackanapes, to treat with ſuch diſreſpect a production which, in the opinion of all the connoiſſeurs of the age, will, when finiſhed, be a maſterpiece in its kind, and do honour to human genius and ſkill. So I ſay again and again (and I care not though your friend Playtor heard me), that you have no more taſte than a drayman's horſe, and that thoſe fooliſh notions of the ancients ought to be drubbed out of you with a good cudgel, that you might learn to treat men of parts with more veneration. Perhaps you may not always be in the company of one who will hollow for aſſiſtance, when you are on the brink of being chaſtiſed for your inſolence, as I did, when you

brought upon yourſelf the reſentment of that Scot, who, by the Lard! would have paid you both ſcot and lot, as Falſtaff ſays, if the French officer had not put him in arreſt."

The phyſician, to this declamation, which was conveyed through the key-hole, anſwered, that he (the painter) was a fellow ſo infinitely below his conſideration, that his conſcience upbraided him with no action of his life, except that of chooſing ſuch a wretch for his companion and fellow-traveller. That he had viewed his character through the medium of good-nature and compaſſion, which had prompted him to give Pallet an opportunity of acquiring ſome new ideas, under his immediate inſtruction; but he had abuſed his goodneſs and condeſcenſion in ſuch a flagrant manner, that he was now determined to diſcard him entirely from his acquaintance; and deſired him, for the preſent, to take himſelf away, on pain of being kicked for his preſumption.

Pallet was too much incenſed to be intimidated by this threat, which he retorted with great virulence, defying him to come forth, that it might appear which of them was beſt ſkilled in that pedeſtrian exerciſe, which he immediately began to practiſe againſt the door, with ſuch thundering application, as reached the ears of Pickle and his governor, who coming out into the paſſage, and ſeeing him thus employed, aſked if he had forgot the chamber-pots of Aloſt, that he ventured to behave in ſuch a manner as entitled him to a ſecond preſcription of the ſame nature.

The doctor, underſtanding that there was company at hand, opened the door in a twinkling; and, ſpringing upon his antagoniſt like a tyger, a fierce contention would have enſued, to the infinite ſatisfaction of our hero, had not Jolter, to the manifeſt peril of his own perſon, interpoſed, and, partly by force, and partly by exhortations, put a ſtop to the engagement before it was fairly begun. After having demonſtrated the indecency of ſuch a vulgar rencounter, betwixt two fellow citizens, in a foreign land, he begged to know the cauſe of their diſſention, and offered his good offices towards an accommodation. Peregrine alſo, ſeeing the fray was finiſhed, expreſſed himſelf to the ſame purpoſe; and the painter, for obvious

reaſons, declining an explanation, his antagoniſt told the youth what a mortifying interruption he had ſuffered by the impertinent intruſion of Pallet, and gave him a detail of the particulars of his viſion, as above recited. The arbiter owned the provocation was not to be endured; and decreed, that the offender ſhould make ſome atonement for his tranſgreſſion. Upon which the painter obſerved, that, however he might have been diſpoſed to make acknowledgments, if the phyſician had ſignified his diſpleaſure like a gentleman, the complainant had now forfeited all claim to any ſuch conceſſions, by the vulgar manner in which he had reviled him and his productions; obſerving, that, if he (the painter) had been inclined to retort his ſlanderous inſinuations, the republican's own works would have afforded ample ſubject for his ridicule and cenſure.

After divers diſputes and repreſentations, peace was at length concluded, on condition, that, for the future, the doctor ſhould never mention Cleopatra, unleſs he could ſay ſomething in her praiſe; and that Pallet, in conſideration of his having been the firſt aggreſſor, ſhould make a ſketch of the phyſician's viſion, to be engraved and prefixed to the next edition of his odes.

CHAPTER LXII.

The travellers depart for Antwerp, at which place the painter gives a looſe to his enthuſiaſm.

OUR adventurer, baffled in all his efforts to retrieve his loſt Amanda, yielded at length to the remonſtrances of his governor and fellow-travellers, who, out of pure complaiſance to him, had exceeded their intended ſtay by ſix days at leaſt: and a couple of poſt chaiſes, with three riding horſes, being hired, they departed from Bruſſels in the morning, dined at Mechlin, and arrived about eight in the evening at the venerable city of Antwerp. During this day's journey, Pallet was elevated to an uncommon flow of ſpirits, with the proſpect of ſeeing the birth-place of Rubens, for whom he profeſſed an enthuſiaſtic

admiration. He ſwore, that the pleaſure he felt was equal to that of a Muſſulman, on the laſt day of his pilgrimage to Mecca; and that he already conſidered himſelf a native of Antwerp, being ſo intimately acquainted with their ſo juſtly boaſted citizen, from whom, at certain junctures, he could not help believing himſelf derived, becauſe his own pencil adopted the manner of that great man with ſurpriſing facility, and his face wanted nothing but a pair of whiſkers and a beard to exhibit the expreſs image of the Fleming's countenance. He told them he was ſo proud of this reſemblance, that, in order to render it more ſtriking, he had, at one time of his life, reſolved to keep his face ſacred from the razor; and in that purpoſe had perſevered, notwithſtanding the continual reprehenſions of Mrs. Pallet, who, being then with child, ſaid, his aſpect was ſo hideous, that ſhe dreaded a miſcarriage every hour, until ſhe threatened, in plain terms, to diſpute the ſanity of his intellects, and apply to the chancellor for a committee.

The doctor, on this occaſion, obſerved, that a man who is not proof againſt the ſolicitations of a woman, can never expect to make a great figure in life; that painters and poets ought to cultivate no wives but the muſes; or, if they are, by the accidents of fortune, encumbered with families, they ſhould carefully guard againſt that pernicious weakneſs, falſely honoured with the appellation of *natural affection*, and pay no manner of regard to the impertinent cuſtoms of the world. "Granting that you had been, for a ſhort time, deemed a lunatic (ſaid he), you might have acquitted yourſelf honourably of that imputation, by ſome performance that would have raiſed your character above all cenſure. Sophocles himſelf, that celebrated tragic poet, who, for the ſweetneſs of his verſification, was ſtyled *melitta*, or *the bee*, in his old age ſuffered the ſame accuſation from his own children, who, ſeeing him neglect his family affairs, and devote himſelf entirely to poetry, carried him before the magiſtrate, as a man whoſe intellects were ſo much impaired by the infirmities of age, that he was no longer fit to manage his domeſtic concerns; upon which the reverend bard produced his tragedy of *Oedipus epi kolono*, as a work he had juſt finiſhed; which being peruſed, inſtead of being de-

clared unſound of underſtanding, he was diſmiſſed with admiration and applauſe. I wiſh your beard and whiſkers had been ſanctioned by the like authority; though I am afraid you would have been in the predicament of thoſe diſciples of a certain philoſopher, who drank decoctions of cummin ſeeds, that their faces might adopt the paleneſs of their maſter's complexion, hoping, that, in being as wan, they would be as learned as their teacher." The painter, ſtung with this ſarcaſm, replied, " or like thoſe virtuoſi, who, by repeating Greek, eating ſillikickaby, and pretending to ſee viſions, think they equal the ancients in taſte and genius." The phyſician retorted, Pallet rejoined, and the altercation continued until they entered the gates of Antwerp, when the admirer of Rubens broke forth into a rapturous exclamation, which put an end to the diſpute, and attracted the notice of the inhabitants, many of whom, by ſhrugging up their ſhoulders, and pointing to their foreheads, gave ſhrewd indications that they believed him a poor gentleman diſordered in his brain.

They had no ſooner alighted at the inn, than this pſeudo-enthuſiaſt propoſed to viſit the great church, in which he had been informed ſome of his maſter's pieces were to be ſeen; and was remarkably chagrined, when he underſtood that he could not be admitted till next day. He roſe next morning by day-break, and diſturbed his fellow-travellers in ſuch a noiſy and clamorous manner, that Peregrine determined to puniſh him with ſome new infliction; and, while he put on his clothes, actually formed the plan of promoting a duel between him and the doctor; in the management of which he promiſed himſelf ſtore of entertainment, from the behaviour of both.

Being provided with one of thoſe domeſtics who are always in waiting to offer their ſervices to ſtrangers on their firſt arrival, they were conducted to the houſe of a gentleman who had an excellent collection of pictures; and, though the greateſt part of them were painted by his favourite artiſt, Pallet condemned them all by the lump, becauſe Pickle had told him beforehand, that there was not one performance of Rubens among the number.

The next place they viſited was what is called the Aca-

demy of Painting, furniſhed with a number of paltry pieces, in which our painter recognized the ſtile of Peter Paul, with many expreſſions of admiration, on the ſame ſort of previous intelligence.

From this repoſitory, they went to the great church; and being led to the tomb of Rubens, the whimſical painter fell upon his knees, and worſhipped with ſuch appearance of devotion, that the attendant, ſcandalized at his ſuperſtition, pulled him up, obſerving, with great warmth, that the perſon buried in that place was no ſaint, but as great a ſinner as himſelf; and that, if he was ſpiritually diſpoſed, there was a chapel of the Bleſſed Virgin, at the diſtance of three yards on the right hand, to which he might retire. He thought it was incumbent upon him to manifeſt ſome extraordinary inſpiration, while he reſided on the ſpot where Rubens was born; and therefore his whole behaviour was an affectation of rapture, expreſſed in diſtracted exclamations, convulſive ſtarts, and uncouth geſticulations. In the midſt of his frantic behaviour, he ſaw an old Capuchin, with a white beard, mount the pulpit, and hold forth to the congregation with ſuch violence of emphaſis and geſture, as captivated his fancy; and, bawling aloud, "Zounds! what an excellent Paul preaching at Athens!" he pulled a pencil and a ſmall memorandum-book from his pocket, and began to take a ſketch of the orator, with great eagerneſs and agitation, ſaying, "Egad! friend Raphael, we ſhall ſee whether you or I have got the beſt knack at trumping up an apoſtle." This appearance of diſreſpect gave offence to the audience, who began to murmur againſt this heretic libertine; when one of the prieſts belonging to the choir, in order to prevent any ill conſequence from their diſpleaſure, came and told him in the French language, that ſuch liberties were not permitted in their religion, and adviſed him to lay aſide his implements, leſt the people ſhould take umbrage at his deſign, and be provoked to puniſh him as a profane ſcoffer at their worſhip.

The painter, ſeeing himſelf addreſſed by a friar, who, while he ſpoke, bowed with great complaiſance, imagined that he was a begging brother come to ſupplicate his charity; and his attention being quite engroſſed by the de-

ſign he was making, he patted the prieſt's ſhaven crown with his hand, ſaying, *Oter tems, oter tems;* and then reſumed his pencil with great earneſtneſs. The eccleſiaſtic, perceiving that the ſtranger did not comprehend his meaning, pulled him by the ſleeve, and explained himſelf in the Latin tongue; upon which Pallet, provoked at his intruſion, curſed him aloud for an impudent beggarly ſon of a whore, and, taking out a ſhilling, flung it upon the pavement, with manifeſt ſigns of indignation.

Some of the common people, enraged to ſee their religion contemned, and their prieſts inſulted at the very altar, roſe from their ſeats, and ſurrounding the aſtoniſhed painter, one of the number ſnatched his book from his hand, and tore it into a thouſand pieces. Frightened as he was, he could not help crying, "Fire and faggots! all my favourite ideas are gone to wreck!" and was in danger of being very roughly handled by the crowd, had not Peregrine ſtepped in, and aſſured them, that he was a poor unhappy gentleman, who laboured under a tranſport of the brain. Thoſe who underſtood the French language communicated this information to the reſt, ſo that he eſcaped without any other chaſtiſement than being obliged to retire. And as they could not ſee the famous deſcent from the croſs till after the ſervice was finiſhed, they were conducted by their domeſtic to the houſe of a painter, where they found a beggar ſtanding for his picture, and the artiſt actually employed in repreſenting a huge louſe that crawled upon his ſhoulder. Pallet was wonderfully pleaſed with this circumſtance, which he ſaid was altogether a new thought, and an excellent hint, of which he would make his advantage; and, in the courſe of his ſurvey of this Fleming's performances, perceiving a piece in which two flies were engaged upon the carcaſe of a dog half devoured, he ran to his brother Bruſh, and ſwore he was worthy of being a fellow-citizen of the immortal Rubens. He then lamented, with many expreſſions of grief and reſentment, that he had loſt his common-place book, in which he had preſerved a thouſand conceptions of the ſame ſort, formed by the accidental objects of his ſenſes and imagination; and took an opportunity of telling his fellow-travellers, that in execution he had equalled, if not excelled, the two ancient painters who vied

with each other in the repreſentation of a curtain and a bunch of grapes; for he had exhibited the image of a certain object ſo like to nature, that the bare ſight of it ſet a whole hog-ſty in an uproar.

When he had examined and applauded all the productions of this minute artiſt, they returned to the great church, and were entertained with the view of that celebrated maſterpiece of Rubens, in which he has introduced the portraits of himſelf and his whole family. The doors that conceal this capital performance were no ſooner unfolded, than our enthuſiaſt, debarred the uſe of ſpeech, by a previous covenant with his friend Pickle, lifted up his hands and eyes, and putting himſelf in the attitude of Hamlet, when his father's ghoſt appears, adored in ſilent ecſtaſy and awe. He even made a merit of neceſſity; and, when they had withdrawn from the place, proteſted that his whole faculties were ſwallowed up in love and admiration. He now profeſſed himſelf more than ever enamoured of the Flemiſh ſchool, raved in extravagant encomiums, and propoſed that the whole company ſhould pay homage to the memory of the divine Rubens, by repairing forthwith to the houſe in which he lived, and proſtrating themſelves on the floor of his painting-room.

As there was nothing remarkable in the tenement, which had been rebuilt more than once ſince the death of that great man, Peregrine excuſed himſelf from complying with the propoſal, on pretence of being fatigued with the circuit they had already performed. Jolter declined it for the ſame reaſon; and the queſtion being put to the doctor, he refuſed his company with an air of diſdain. Pallet, piqued at his contemptuous manner, aſked, if he would not go and ſee the habitation of Pindoor, provided he was in the city where that poet lived? and when the phyſician obſerved, that there was an infinite difference between them men—"That I'll allow (replied the painter), for the devil a poet ever lived in Greece or Troy, that was worthy to clean the pencils of our beloved Rubens." The phyſician could not, with any degree of temper and forbearance, hear [illegible] outrageous blaſphemy, for which, he ſaid, Pall[illegible] ought to be picked out by owls; and the diſ[illegible]

ſuch ſcurrilities of language, and indecency of behaviour, that paſſengers began to take notice of their animoſity, and Peregrine was obliged to interpoſe for his own credit.

CHAPTER LXII.

Peregrine arfully foments a quarrel between Pallet and the phyſician, who fight a duel on the ramparts.

THE painter betook himſelf to the houſe of the Flemiſh Raphael, and the reſt of the company went back to their lodgings; where the young gentleman, taking the advantage of being alone with the phyſician, recapitulated all the affronts he had ſuſtained from the painter's petulance, aggravating every circumſtance of the diſgrace, and adviſing him, in the capacity of a friend, to take care of his honour, which could not fail to ſuffer in the opinion of the world, if he allowed himſelf to be inſulted with impunity, by one ſo much his inferior in every degree of conſideration.

The phyſician aſſured him, that Pallet had hitherto eſcaped chaſtiſement, by being deemed an object unworthy his reſentment, and in conſideration of the wretch's family, for which his compaſſion was intereſted; but that repeated injuries would inflame the moſt benevolent diſpoſition: And although he could find no precedent of duelling among the Greeks and Romans, whom he conſidered as the patterns of demeanour, Pallet ſhould no longer avail himſelf of his veneration for the ancients, but be puniſhed for the very next offence he ſhould commit.

Having thus ſpirited up the doctor to a reſolution from which he could not decently ſwerve, our adventurer acted the incendiary with the other party alſo; giving him to underſtand, that the phyſician treated his character with ſuch contempt, and behaved to him with ſuch inſolence, as no gentleman ought to bear: That, for his own part, he was every day put out of countenance by their mutual animoſity, which appeared in nothing but vulgar expreſ-

ſions, more becoming ſhoe-boys and oyſter-women than men of honour and education; and therefore he ſhould be obliged, contrary to his inclination, to break off all correſpondence with them both, if they would not fall upon ſome method to retrieve the dignity of their characters.

Theſe repreſentations would have had little effect upon the timidity of the painter, who was likewiſe too much of a Grecian to approve of ſingle combat, in any other way than that of boxing, an exerciſe in which he was well ſkilled, had they not been accompanied with an inſinuation, that his antagoniſt was no Hector, and that he might humble him into any conceſſion, without running the leaſt perſonal riſk. Animated by this aſſurance, our ſecond Rubens ſet the trumpet of defiance to his mouth, ſwore he valued not his life a ruſh, when his honour was concerned, and entreated Mr. Pickle to be the bearer of a challenge, which he would inſtantly commit to writing.

The miſchievous fomenter highly applauded this manifeſtation of courage, by which he was at liberty to cultivate his friendſhip and ſociety, but declined the office of carrying the billet, that his tenderneſs of Pallet's reputation might not be miſinterpreted into an officious deſire of promoting quarrels. At the ſame time, he recommended Tom Pipes, not only as a very proper meſſenger on this occaſion, but alſo as a truſty ſecond in the field. The magnanimous painter took his advice, and, retiring to his chamber, penn'd a challenge in theſe terms:

"SIR,

"WHEN I am heartily provoked, I fear not the devil himſelf; much leſs——I will not call you a pedantic coxcomb, nor an unmannerly fellow, becauſe theſe are the hippythets of the wulgar: But, remember, ſuch as you are, I nyther love you nor fear you; but, on the contrary, expect ſatisfaction for your audacious behaviour to me on divers occaſions; and will, this evening, in the twilight, meet you on the ramparts with ſword and piſtol, where the Lord have mercy on the ſoul of one us, for your body ſhall find no favour with your incenſed defier, till death,

LAYMAN PALLET."

This reſolute defiance, after having been ſubmitted to the peruſal, and honoured with the approbation of our youth, was committed to the charge of Pipes, who, according to his orders, delivered it in the afternoon; and brought for anſwer, that the phyſician would attend him at the appointed time and place. The challenger was evidently diſcompoſed at the unexpected news of this acceptance, and ran about the houſe in great diſorder, in queſt of Peregrine, to beg his further advice and aſſiſtance; but underſtanding that the youth was engaged in private with his adverſary, he began to ſuſpect ſome colluſion, and curſed himſelf for his folly and precipitation. He even entertained ſome thoughts of retracting his invitation, and ſubmitting to the triumph of his antagoniſt: But before he would ſtoop to this opprobrious condeſcenſion, he reſolved to try another expedient, which might be the means of ſaving both his character and perſon. In this hope he viſited Mr. Jolter, and very gravely deſired he would be ſo good as to undertake the office of his ſecond in a duel which he was to fight that evening with the phyſician.

The governor, inſtead of anſwering his expectation, in expreſſing fear and concern, and breaking forth into exclamations of "Good God! gentlemen, what d'ye mean? You ſhall not murder one another while it is in my power to prevent your purpoſe. I will go directly to the governor of the place, who ſhall interpoſe his authority." I ſay, inſtead of theſe and other friendly menaces of prevention, Jolter heard the propoſal with the moſt phlegmatic tranquillity, and excuſed himſelf from accepting the honour he intended for him, on account of his character and ſituation, which would not permit him to be concerned in any ſuch rencounters. Indeed this mortifying reception was owing to a previous hint from Peregrine, who, dreading ſome ſort of interruption from his governor, had made him acquainted with his deſign, and aſſured him, that the affair ſhould not be brought to any dangerous iſſue.

Thus diſappointed, the dejected challenger was overwhelmed with perplexity and diſmay; and, in the terrors of death or mutilation, reſolved to deprecate the wrath of his enemy, and conform to any ſubmiſſion he ſhould propoſe, when he was accidentally encountered by our adventurer, who, with demonſtrations of infinite

ſatisfaction, told him in confidence, that his billet had thrown the doctor into an agony of conſternation; that his acceptance of his challenge was a mere effort of deſpair, calculated to confound the ferocity of the ſender, and diſpoſe him to liſten to terms of accommodation; that he had imparted the letter to him with fear and trembling, on pretence of engaging him as a ſecond, but, in reality, with a view of obtaining his good offices in promoting a reconciliation; "but, perceiving the ſituation of his mind (added our hero), I thought it would be more for your honour to baffle his expectation, and therefore I readily undertook the taſk of attending him to the field, in full aſſurance that he will there humble himſelf before you, even to proſtration. In this ſecurity, you may go and prepare your arms, and beſpeak the aſſiſtance of Pipes, who will 'ſquire you in the field, while I keep myſelf up, that our correſpondence may not be ſuſpected by the phyſician." Pallet's ſpirits, that were ſunk to dejection, roſe at this encouragement to all the inſolence of triumph; he again declared his contempt of danger, and his piſtols being loaded and accommodated with new flints, by his truſty armour-bearer, he waited, without flinching, for the hour of battle.

On the firſt approach of twilight, ſomebody knocked at his door, and Pipes having opened it at his deſire, he heard the voice of his antagoniſt pronounce, "Tell Mr. Pallet, that I am going to the place of appointment." The painter was not a little ſurpriſed at this anticipation, which ſo ill agreed with the information he had received from Pickle; and his concern beginning to recur, he fortified himſelf with a large bumper of brandy, which, however, did not overcome the anxiety of his thoughts. Nevertheleſs, he ſet out on the expedition with his ſecond, betwixt whom and himſelf the following dialogue paſſed, in their way to the ramparts. "Mr. Pipes (ſaid the painter, with diſordered accent), methinks the doctor was in a peſtilent hurry with that meſſage of his." "Ey, ey, (anſwered Tom), I do ſuppoſe he longs to be foul of you." "What! (replied the other), d'ye think he thirſts after my blood?" "To be ſure a does," (ſaid Pipes, thruſting a large quid of tobacco in his cheek with great deliberation). "If that be the caſe (cried Pallet, begin-

ning to ſhake), he is no better than a cannibal, and no Chriſtian ought to fight him on equal footing." Tom obſerving his emotion, eyed him with a frown of indignation, ſaying, "You an't afraid, are you?" "God forbid! (replied the callenger, ſtammering with fear) What ſhould I be afraid of? The worſt he can do is to take my life, and then he'll be anſwerable both to God and man for the murder: Don't you think he will?" "I think no ſuch matter (anſwered the ſecond); if ſo be as how he puts a brace of bullets through your bows, and kills you fairly, it is no more murder than if I was to bring down a noddy from the main top-ſail-yard." By this time Pallet's teeth chattered with ſuch violence, that he could ſcarce pronounce this reply. "Mr. Thomas, you ſeem to make very light of a man's life; but I truſt in the Almighty, I ſhall not be ſo eaſily brought down. Sure many a man has fought a duel without loſing his life. Do you imagine that I run ſuch a hazard of falling by the hand of my adverſary?" "You may or you may not (ſaid the unconcerned Pipes), juſt as it happens. What then! Death is a debt that every man owes, according to the ſong; and if you ſet foot to foot, I think one of you muſt go to pot." "Foot to foot! (exclaimed the terrified painter), that's downright butchery; and I'll be damn'd before I fight any man on earth in ſuch a barbarous way. What! d'ye take me to be a ſavage beaſt?" This declaration he made while they aſcended the ramparts. His attendant perceiving the phyſician and his ſecond at the diſtance of an hundred paces before them, gave him notice of their appearance, and adviſed him to make ready, and behave like a man. Pallet in vain endeavoured to conceal his panic, which diſcovered itſelf in an univerſal trepidation of body, and the lamentable tone in which he anſwered this exhortation of Pipes, ſaying, "I do behave like a man; but you would have me act the part of a brute. Are they coming this way?" When Tom told him that they had faced about, and admoniſhed him to advance, the nerves of his arm refuſed their office, he could not hold out his piſtol, and inſtead of going forward, retreated with an inſenſibility of motion; till Pipes, placing himſelf in the rear, ſet his own back to that of his principal, and ſwore he ſhould not budge an inch farther in that direction.

While the valet this tutored the painter, his maſter enjoyed the terrors of the phyſician, which were more ridiculous than thoſe of Pallet, becauſe he was more intent upon diſguiſing them. His declaration to Pickle in the morning would not ſuffer him to ſtart any objections when he received the challenge; and finding that the young gentleman made no offer of mediating the affair, but rather congratulated him on the occaſion, when he communicated the painter's billet, all his efforts conſiſted in oblique hints, and general reflections upon the abſurdity of duelling, which was firſt introduced among civilized nations by the barbarous Huns and Longobards. He likewiſe pretended to ridicule the uſe of fire-arms, which confounded all the diſtinctions of ſkill and addreſs, and deprived a combatant of the opportunity of ſignalizing his perſonal proweſs.

Pickle aſſented to the juſtneſs of his obſervations; but, at the ſame time, repreſented the neceſſity of complying with the cuſtoms of this world (ridiculous as they were), on which a man's honour and reputation depend. So that, ſeeing no hopes of profiting by that artifice, the republican's agitation became more and more remarkable; and he propoſed, in plain terms, that they ſhould contend in armour, like the combatants of ancient days; for it was but reaſonable that they ſhould practiſe the manner of fighting, ſince they adopted the diſpoſition of thoſe iron times.

Nothing could have afforded more diverſion to our hero than the ſight of two ſuch dueliſts caſed in iron; and he wiſhed that he had promoted the quarrel in Bruſſels, where he could have hired the armour of Charles the Fifth, and the valiant Duke of Parma, for their accomodation; but as there was no poſſibility of furniſhing them cap-a-pee at Antwerp, he perſuaded him to conform to the modern uſe of the ſword, and meet the painter on his own terms; and ſuſpecting that his fear would ſupply him with other excuſes for declining the combat, he comforted him with ſome diſtant inſinuations, to the prejudice of his adverſary's courage, which would, in all probability, evaporate before any miſchief could happen.

Notwithſtanding this encouragement, he could not ſuppreſs the reluctance with which he went to the field,

and caſt many a wiſhful look over his left ſhoulder, to ſee whether or not his adverſary was at his heels. When, by the advice of his ſecond, he took poſſeſſion of the ground, and turned about with his face to the enemy, it was not ſo dark, but that Peregrine could perceive the unuſual paleneſs of his countenance, and the ſweat ſtanding in large drops upon his forehead; nay, there was a manifeſt diſorder in his ſpeech, when he regretted his want of the *pila* and *parma*, with which he would have made a rattling noiſe, to aſtoniſh his foe, in ſpringing forward, and ſinging the hymn to battle, in the manner of the ancients.

In the mean time, obſerving the heſitation of his antagoniſt, who, far from advancing, ſeemed to recoil, and even ſtruggle with his ſecond, he gueſſed the ſituation of the painter's thoughts; and, collecting all the manhood that he poſſeſſed, ſeized the opportunity of profiting by his enemy's conſternation. Striking his ſword and piſtol together, he advanced in a ſort of trot, raiſing a loud howl, in which he repeated, in lieu of the Spartan ſong, part of the ſtrophe from one of Pindar's Pythia, beginning with *ek theon gar makanai paſai Broteais aretais*, &c. This imitation of the Greeks had all the deſired effect upon the painter, who ſeeing the phyſician running towards him like a fury, with a piſtol in his right hand, which was extended, and hearing the dreadful yell he uttered, and the outlandiſh words he pronounced, was ſeized with an univerſal palſy of his limbs. He would have dropped down upon the ground, had not Pipes ſupported and encouraged him to ſtand upon his defence. The doctor, contrary to his expectation, finding that he had not flinched from the ſpot, though he had now performed one half of his career, put in practice his laſt effort, by firing his piſtol, the noiſe of which no ſooner reached the ears of the affrighted painter, than he recommended his ſoul to God, and roared for mercy with great vociferation.

The republican, overjoyed at this exclamation, commanded him to yield, and ſurrender his arms, on pain of immediate death; upon which he threw away his piſtols and ſword, in ſpite of all the admonitions and even threats of his ſecond, who left him to his fate, and went up to his maſter, ſtopping his noſe with ſigns of lothing and abhorrence.

The victor, having won the *ſpolia opima*, granted him his life, on condition that he would on his knees ſupplicate his pardon, acknowledge himſelf inferior to his conqueror in every virtue and qualification, and promiſe for the future to merit his favour by ſubmiſſion and reſpect. Theſe inſolent terms were readily embraced by the unfortunate challenger, who fairly owned, that he was not at all calculated for the purpoſes of war, and that henceforth he would contend with no weapon but his pencil. He begged, with great humility, that Mr. Pickle would not think the worſe of his morals for this defect of courage, which was a natural infirmity inherited from his father, and ſuſpend his opinion of his talents, until he ſhould have an opportunity of contemplating the charms of his Cleopatra, which would be finiſhed in leſs than three months.

Our hero obſerved, with an affected air of diſpleaſure, that no man could be juſtly condemned for being ſubject to the impreſſions of fear; and therefore his cowardice might eaſily be forgiven; but there was ſomething ſo preſumptuous, diſhoneſt, and diſingenuous, in arrogating a quality to which he knew he had not the ſmalleſt pretenſion, that he could not forget his miſbehaviour all at once, though he would condeſcend to communicate with him as formerly, in hopes of ſeeing a reformation in his conduct. Pallet proteſted, that there was no diſſimulation in the caſe; for he was ignorant of his own weakneſs, until his reſolution was put to the trial: He faithfully promiſed to demean himſelf, during the remaining part of the tour, with that conſcious modeſty and penitence which became a perſon in his condition; and, for the preſent, implored the aſſiſtance of Mr. Pipes, in diſembarraſſing him from the diſagreeable conſequence of his fear.

CHAPTER LXIV.

The doctor exults in his victory. They ſet out for Rotterdam, where they are entertained by two Dutch gentlemen in a yacht, which is overturned in the Maeſe, to the manifeſt hazard of the painter's life. They ſpend the evening with their entertainers, and next day viſit a cabinet of curioſities.

TOM was accordingly ordered to miniſter to his occaſions; and the conqueror, elated with his ſucceſs, which he in a great meaſure attributed to his manner of attack, and the hymn which he howled, told Peregrine, that he was now convinced of the truth of what Pindar ſung in theſe words, *oſſa de me pephileke Zeus atuzontai Boan Pieriden aionta*; for he had no ſoooner begun to repeat the mellifluent ſtrains of that divine poet, than the wretch his antagoniſt was confounded, and his nerves unſtrung.

On their return to the inn, he expatiated on the prudence and tranquillity of his own behaviour, and aſcribed the conſternation of Pallet to the remembrance of ſome crime that lay heavy upon his conſcience; for, in his opinion, a man of virtue and common ſenſe could not poſſibly be afraid of death, which is not only the peaceful harbour that receives him ſhattered on the tempeſtuous ſea of life, but alſo the eternal ſeal of his fame and glory, which it is no longer in his power to forfeit and forego. He lamented his fate, in being doomed to live in ſuch degenerate days, when war is become a mercenary trade; and ardently wiſhed, that the day would come, when he ſhould have ſuch an opportunity of ſignalizing his courage in the cauſe of liberty, as that of Marathon, where an handful of Athenians, fighing for their freedom, defeated the whole ſtrength of the Perſian empire. "Would to heaven! (ſaid he), my muſe were bleſſed with an occaſion to emulate that glorious teſtimony on the trophy in Cyprus, erected by Cimon, for two great victories gained on the ſame day over the Perſians by ſea and land; in which it is very remarkable, that the greatneſs of the occaſion has raiſed the manner of expreſſion above the uſual ſimplicity and modeſty of all other ancient inſcriptions." He then repeated it with all the pomp of declamation, and ſignified his hope, that the French would

one day invade us with ſuch an army as that which Xerxes led into Greece, that it might be in his power to devote himſelf, like Leonidas, to the freedom of his country.

This memorable combat being thus determined, and every thing that was remarkable in Antwerp ſurveyed, they ſent their baggage down the Scheldt to Rotterdam, and ſet out for the ſame place in a poſt waggon, which that ſame evening brought them in ſafety to the banks of the Maeſe. They put up at an Engliſh houſe of enterment, remarkable for the modeſty and moderation of the landlord; and next morning the doctor went in perſon to deliver letters of recommendation to two Dutch gentlemen from one of his acquaintance at Paris. Neither of them happened to be at home when he called; ſo that he left a meſſage at their lodgings, with his addreſs; and in the afternoon they waited upon the company, and, after many hoſpitable profeſſions, one of the two invited them to ſpend the evening at his houſe.

Meanwhile they had provided a pleaſure yacht, in which they propoſed to treat them with an excurſion upon the Maeſe. This being almoſt the only diverſion that place affords, our young gentleman reliſhed the propoſal; and, notwithſtanding the remonſtrances of Mr. Jolter, who declined the voyage on account of the roughneſs of the weather, they went on board without heſitation, and found a collation prepared in the cabin. While they tacked to and fro in the river, under the impulſe of a mackerel breeze, the phyſician expreſſed his ſatisfaction, and Pallet was raviſhed with the entertainment. But the wind increaſing, to the unſpeakable joy of the Dutchmen, who had now an opportunity of ſhowing their dexterity in the management of the veſſel, the gueſts found it inconvenient to ſtand upon deck, and impoſſible to ſit below, on account of the clouds of tobacco ſmoke which rolled from the pipes of their entertainers, in ſuch volumes as annoyed them even to the hazard of ſuffocation. This fumigation, together with the extraordinary motion of the ſhip, began to affect the head and ſtomach of the painter, who begged earneſtly to be ſet on ſhore: But the Dutch gentlemen, who had no idea of his ſufferings, inſiſted, with ſurpriſing obſtinacy of regard, upon his ſtaying until he ſhould ſee an inſtance of the ſkill of

their mariners; and, bringing him on deck, commanded the men to carry the veſſel's lee gun-wall under water. This nicety of navigation they inſtantly performed, to the admiration of Pickle, the diſcompoſure of the doctor, and terror of Pallet, who bleſſed himſelf from the courteſy of a Dutchman, and prayed to heaven for his deliverance.

While the Hollanders enjoyed the reputation of this feat, and the diſtreſs of the painter at the ſame time, the yacht was overtaken by a ſudden ſquall, that overſet her in a moment, and flung every man overboard into the Maeſe, before they could have the leaſt warning of their fate, much leſs time to provide againſt the accident. Peregrine, who was an expert ſwimmer, reached the ſhore in ſafety; the phyſician, in the agonies of deſpair, laid faſt hold on the trunk-breeches of one of the men, who dragged him to the other ſide; the entertainers landed at the bomb-keys, ſmoking their pipes all the way with great deliberation; and the poor painter muſt have gone to the bottom, had not he been encountered by the cable of a ſhip that lay at anchor near the ſcene of their diſaſter. Though his ſenſes had forſaken him, his hands faſtened by inſtinct on this providential occurrence, which he held with ſuch a convulſive graſp, that, when a boat was ſent out to bring him on ſhore, it was with the utmoſt difficulty that his fingers were diſengaged. He was carried into a houſe, deprived of the uſe of ſpeech, and bereft of all ſenſation; and, being ſuſpended by the heels, a vaſt quantity of water ran out of his mouth. This evacuation being made, he began to utter dreadful groans, which gradually increaſed to a continued roar; and, after he had regained the uſe of his ſenſes, he underwent a delirium that laſted ſeveral hours. As for the treaters, they never dreamed of expreſſing the leaſt concern to Pickle or the phyſician for what had happened, becauſe it was an accident ſo common as to paſs without notice.

Leaving the care of the veſſel to the ſeamen, the company retired to their reſpective lodgings, in order to ſhift their clothes; and in the evening our travellers were conducted to the houſe of their new friend, who, with a view of making his invitation the more agreeable, had aſſembled to the number of twenty or thirty Engliſhmen, of all

ranks and degrees, from the merchant to the periwig-maker's 'prentice.

In the midſt of this congregation ſtood a chafing-diſh with live coals, for the convenience of lighting their pipes, and every individual was accommodated with a ſpitting-box. There was not a mouth in the apartment unfurniſhed with a tube, ſo that they reſembled a congregation of chimeras breathing fire and ſmoke; and our gentlemen were fain to imitate their example in their own defence. It is not to be ſuppoſed that the converſation was either very ſprightly or polite; the whole entertainment was of the Dutch caſt, frowzy and phlegmatic; and our adventurer, as he returned to his lodging, tortured with the head-ach, and diſguſted with every circumſtance of his treatment, curſed the hour in which the doctor had ſaddled them with ſuch troubleſome companions.

Next morning by eight o'clock, theſe polite Hollanders returned the viſit, and, after breakfaſt, attended their Engliſh friends to the houſe of a perſon that poſſeſſed a very curious cabinet of curioſities, to which they had ſecured our company's admiſſion. The owner of this collection was a cheeſemonger, who received them in a woollen night-cap, with ſtraps buttoned under his chin. As he underſtood no language but his own, he told them, by the canal of one of their conductors, that he did not make a practice of ſhowing his curioſities; but underſtanding that they were Engliſhmen, and recommended to his friends, he was content to ſubmit them to their peruſal. So ſaying, he led them up a dark ſtair, into a ſmall room, decorated with a few paltry figures in plaſter of Paris, two or three miſerable landſcapes, the ſkins of an otter, ſeal, and ſome fiſhes ſtuffed; and in one corner ſtood a glaſs-caſe, furniſhed with newts, frogs, lizards, and ſerpents, preſerved in ſpirits; a human fœtus, a calf with two heads, and about two dozen of butterflies pinned upon paper.

The virtuoſo having exhibited theſe particulars, eyed the ſtrangers with a look ſoliciting admiration and applauſe; and as he could not perceive any ſymptom of either in their geſtures or countenances, withdrew a curtain, and diſplayed a wainſcot cheſt of drawers, in which, he gave them to underſtand, was ſomething that would

agreeably amuſe the imagination. Our travellers, regaled with this notice, imagined that they would be entertained with the ſight of ſome curious medals, or other productions of antiquity; but how were they diſappointed, when they ſaw nothing but a variety of ſhells, diſpoſed in whimſical figures, in each drawer! After he had detained them full two hours with a tedious commentary upon the ſhape, ſize, and colour of each department, he, with a ſupercilious ſimper, deſired that the Engliſh gentlemen would frankly and candidly declare, whether his cabinet, or that of Mynheer Sloane at London, was the moſt valuable. When this requeſt was ſignified in Engliſh to the company, the painter inſtantly exclaimed, "By the Lard! they are not to be named of a day. And as for that matter, I would not give one corner of Saltero's coffeehouſe at Chelſea for all the traſh he hath ſhown." Peregrine, unwilling to mortify any perſon who had done his endeavour to pleaſe him, obſerved, that what he had ſeen was very curious and entertaining; but that no private collection in Europe was equal to that of Sir Hans Sloane, which, excluſive of preſents, had coſt an hundred thouſand pounds. The two conductors were confounded at this aſſeveration, which being communicated to the cheeſemonger, he ſhook his head with a ſignificant grin; and, though he did not chooſe to expreſs his incredulity in words, gave our hero to underſtand, that he did not much depend upon his veracity.

From the houſe of this Dutch naturaliſt, they were dragged all round the city by the painful civility of their attendants, who did not quit them till the evening was well advanced, and then not till after they had promiſed to be with them before ten o'clock next day, in order to conduct them to a country-houſe, ſituated in a pleaſant village on the other ſide of the river.

Pickle was already ſo much fatigued with their hoſpitality, that, for the firſt time of his life, he ſuffered a dejection of ſpirits; and reſolved, at any rate, to avoid the threatened perſecution of to-morrow. With this view, he ordered his ſervants to pack up ſome clothes and linen in a portmanteau; and in the morning embarked, with his governor, in the Treckſkuyt, for the Hague, whither he pretended to be called by ſome urgent occaſion, leaving

his fellow-travellers to make his apology to their friends; and aſſuring them, that he would not proceed for Amſterdam without their ſociety. He arrived at the Hague in the forenoon, and dined at an ordinary frequented by officers and people of faſhion; where being informed that the princeſs would ſee company in the evening, he dreſſed himſelf in a rich ſuit of the Pariſian cut, and went to court, without any introduction. A perſon of his appearance could not fail to attract the notice of ſuch a ſmall circle. The prince himſelf, underſtanding he was an Engliſhman and a ſtranger, went up to him without ceremony, and, having welcomed him to the place, converſed with him for ſome minutes on the common topics of diſcourſe.

CHAPTER LXV.

They proceed to the Hague; from whence they depart for Amſterdam, where they ſee a Dutch tragedy. Viſit the muſic-houſe, in which Peregrine quarrels with the captain of a man of war. They paſs through Haerlem, in their way to Leyden. Return to Rotterdam, where the company ſeparates, and our hero, with his attendants, arrive in ſafety at Harwich.

BEING joined by their fellow-travellers in the morning, they made a tour to all the remarkable places in this celebrated village; ſaw the Foundery, the Stadthouſe, the Spinhuys, Vauxhall, and Count Bentincke's gardens, and in the evening went to the French comedy, which was directed by a noted Harlequin, who had found means to flatter the Dutch taſte ſo effectually, that they extolled him as the greateſt actor that ever appeared in the province of Holland. This famous company did not repreſent regular theatrical pieces, but only a ſort of impromptus, in which this noted player always performed the greateſt part of the entertainment. Among other ſallies of wit that eſcaped him, there was one circumſtance ſo remarkably adapted to the diſpoſition and genius of his audience, that it were pity to paſs it over in ſilence. A windmill being exhibited on the ſcene, Harlequin, after having ſurveyed it with curioſity and admiration, aſks one of the millers the uſe of that machine; and being told

that it was a windmill, obſerves, with ſome concern, that as there was not the leaſt breath of wind, he could not have the pleaſure of ſeeing it turn round. Urged by this conſideration, he puts himſelf into the attitude of a perſon wrapt in profound meditation; and having continued a few ſeconds in this poſture, runs to the miller with great eagerneſs and joy, and telling him that he had found an expedient to make his mill work, very fairly unbuttons his breeches: Then preſenting his poſteriors to the ſails of the machine, certain exploſions are immediately heard, and the arms of the mill begin to turn round, to the infinite ſatisfaction of the ſpectators, who approve the joke with loud peals of applauſe.

Our travellers ſtaid a few days at the Hague, during which the young gentleman waited on the Britiſh ambaſſador, to whom he was recommended by his excellency at Paris, and loſt about thirty guineas at billiards to a French adventurer, who decoyed him into the ſnare by keeping up his game. Then they departed in a poſt-waggon for Amſterdam, being provided with letters of introduction to an Engliſh merchant reſiding in that city, under whoſe auſpices they viſited every thing worth ſeeing, and, among other excurſions, went to ſee a Dutch tragedy acted; an entertainment which, of all others, had the ſtrangeſt effect upon the organs of our hero; the dreſs of their chief perſonages was ſo antic, their manner ſo awkwardly abſurd, and their language ſo ridiculouſly unfit for conveying the ſentiments of love and honour, that Peregrine's nerves were diuretically affected with the complicated abſurdity, and he was compelled to withdraw twenty times before the cataſtrophe of the piece.

The ſubject of this performance was the famous ſtory of Scipio's continence and virtue, in reſtoring the fair captive to her lover. The young Roman hero was repreſented by a broad-faced Batavian, in a burgomaſter's gown and a fur cap, ſitting ſmoking his pipe at a table furniſhed with a can of beer, a drinking glaſs, and a plate of tobacco: The lady was ſuch a perſon as Scipio might very well be ſuppoſed to give away, without any great effort of generoſity; and indeed the Celtiberian prince ſeemed to be of that opinion; for, upon receiving her from the hand of the victor, he diſcovered none of thoſe tranſports

of gratitude and joy which Livy deſcribes in recounting this event. The Dutch Scipio, however, was complaiſant enough in his way; for he deſired her to ſit at his right hand, by the appellation of *Ya frow*, and with his own fingers filling a clean pipe, preſented it to Mynheer Allucio the lover. The reſt of the economy of the piece was in the ſame taſte; which was ſo agreeable to the audience, that they ſeemed to have ſhaken off their natural phlegm, in order to applaud the performance.

From the play our company adjourned to the houſe of their friend, where they ſpent the evening; and the converſation turning upon poetry, a Dutchman who was preſent, and underſtood the Engliſh language, having liſtened very attentively to the diſcourſe, lifted up with both hands the greateſt part of a Cheſhire cheeſe that lay upon the table, ſaying, "I do know vat is boeter. Mine brotre be a great boet, and ave vrought a book as dick as all dat." Pickle, diverted with this method of eſtimating an author according to the quantity of his works, inquired about the ſubjects of this bard's writings; but of theſe his brother could give no account, or other information, but that there was little market for the commodity, which hung heavy upon his hands, and induced him to wiſh he had applied himſelf to another trade.

The only remarkable ſcene in Amſterdam, which our company had not ſeen, was the Spuyl or muſic-houſes, which, by the connivance of the magiſtrates, are maintained for the recreation of thoſe who might attempt the chaſtity of creditable women, if they were not provided with ſuch conveniences. To one of theſe night-houſes did our travellers repair, under the conduct of the Engliſh merchant, and were introduced into ſuch another place as the ever memorable coffee-houſe of Moll King; with this difference, that the company here were not ſo riotous as the bucks of Covent-Garden, but formed themſelves into a circle, within which ſome of the number danced to the muſic of a ſcurvy organ and a few other inſtruments, that uttered tunes [illegible] the diſpoſition of the hearers, wh[illegible] ſhrouded with clouds of [illegible]

When our gentlemen
two females and th

of their exerciſe, lifted their legs like ſo many oxen at plough; and the pipe of one of thoſe hoppers happening to be exhauſted, in the midſt of his ſarabrand he very deliberately drew forth his tobacco-box, filling and lighting it again, without any interruption to the dance. Peregrine being unchecked by the preſence of his governor, who was too tender of his own reputation, to attend them in this expedition, made up to a ſprightly French girl who ſat in ſeeming expectation of a cuſtomer, and prevailing upon her to be his partner, led her into the circle, and, in his turn, took the opportunity of dancing a minuet, to the admiration of all preſent. He intended to have exhibited another ſpecimen of his ability in this art, when a captain of a Dutch man of war chancing to come in, and ſeeing a ſtranger engaged with the lady whom, it ſeems, he had beſpoke for his bedfellow, he advanced, without any ceremony, and ſeizing her by the arm, pulled her to the other ſide of the room. Our adventurer, who was not a man to put up with ſuch a brutal affront, followed the raviſher with indignation in his eyes; and puſhing him on one ſide, retook the ſubject of their conteſt, and led her back to the place from whence ſhe had been dragged. The Dutchman, enraged at the youth's preſumption, obeyed the firſt dictates of his choler, and lent his rival a hearty box on the ear; which was immediately repaid with intereſt, before our hero could recollect himſelf ſufficiently to lay his hand upon his ſword, and beckon the aggreſſor to the door.

Notwithſtanding the confuſion and diſorder which this affair produced in the room, and the endeavours of Pickle's company, who interpoſed, in order to prevent bloodſhed, the antagoniſts reached the ſtreet; and Peregrine drawing, was ſurpriſed to ſee the captain advance againſt him with a long knife, which he preferred to the ſword that hung by his ſide. The youth, confounded at this prepoſterous behaviour, deſired him, in the French tongue, to lay aſide that vulgar implement, and approach like a gentleman: But the Hollander, who neither underſtood the propoſal, nor would have complied with his demand, had he been made acquainted with his meaning, ruſhed forward like a deſperado, before his adverſary could put himſelf on his guard; and if the young gentleman had

not been endued with ſurpriſing agility, his noſe would have fallen a ſacrifice to the fury of the aſſailant. Finding himſelf in ſuch imminent jeopardy, he leaped to one ſide, and the Dutchman paſſing him, in the force of his career, he with one nimble kick made ſuch application to his enemy's heels, that he flew like lightning into the canal, where he had almoſt periſhed by pitching upon one of the poſts with which it was faced.

Peregrine having performed this exploit, did not ſtay for the captain's coming on ſhore, but retreated with all diſpatch, by the advice of his conductor; and next day embarked, with his companions, in the Skuyt for Haerlem, where they dined, and in the evening arrived at the ancient city of Leyden, where they met with ſome Engliſh ſtudents, who treated them with great hoſpitality. Not but that the harmony of the converſation was that ſame night interrupted by a diſpute that aroſe between one of thoſe young gentlemen and the phyſician, about the cold and hot methods of preſcription in the gout and rheumatiſm; and proceeded to ſuch a degree of mutual reviling, that Pickle, aſhamed and incenſed at his fellow traveller's want of urbanity, eſpouſed the other's cauſe, and openly rebuked him for his unmannerly petulance, which (he ſaid) rendered him unfit for the purpoſes, and unworthy of the benefit, of ſociety. This unexpected declaration overwhelmed the doctor with amazement and confuſion; he was inſtantaneouſly deprived of his ſpeech, and, during the remaining part of the party, ſat in ſilent mortification. In all probability he deliberated with himſelf, whether or not he ſhould expoſtulate with the young gentleman on the freedom he had taken with his character in a company of ſtrangers; but as he knew he had not a Pallet to deal with, he very prudently ſuppreſſed that ſuggeſtion, and in ſecret chewed the cud of reſentment.

After they had viſited the phyſic garden, the univerſity, the anatomical hall, and every other thing that was recommended to their view, they returned to Rotterdam, and held a conſultation upon the method of tranſporting themſelves to England. The doctor, whoſe grudge againſt Peregrine was rather inflamed than allayed by our hero's indifference and neglect, had tampered with the ſimplicity of the painter, who was proud of his advances to-

wards a perfect reconciliation; and now took the opportunity of parting with our adventurer, by declaring that he and his friend Mr. Pallet were resolved to take their passage in a trading sloop, after he had heard Peregrine object against that tedious, disagreeable, and uncertain method of conveyance. Pickle immediately saw his intention; and, without using the least argument to dissuade them from their design, or expressing the smallest degree of concern at their separation, very coolly wished them a prosperous voyage, and ordered his baggage to be sent to Helvoetsluys. There he himself and his retinue went on board of the packet next day, and, by the favour of a fair wind, in eighteen hours arrived at Harwich.

CHAPTER LXVI.

Peregrine delivers his letters of recommendation at London, and returns to the garrison, to the unspeakable joy of the commodore and his whole family.

Now that our hero found himself on English ground, his heart dilated with the proud recollection of his own improvement since he left his native soil. He began to recognize the interesting ideas of his tender years; he enjoyed by anticipation the pleasure of seeing his friends in the garrison, after an absence of eighteen months; and the image of his charming Emily, which other less worthy considerations had depressed, resumed the full possession of his breast, He remembered with shame, that he had neglected the correspondence with her brother, which he himself had solicited, and in consequence of which he had received a letter from that young gentleman, while he lived at Paris. In spite of these conscientious reflections, he was too self-sufficient to think he should find any difficulty in obtaining forgiveness for such sins of omission; and began to imagine, that his passion would be prejudicial to the dignity of his situation, if it could not be gratified upon terms which formerly his imagination durst not conceive.

Sorry I am, that the task I have undertaken, lays me under the necessity of divulging this degeneracy in the

ſentiments of our imperious youth, who was now in the heyday of his blood, fluſhed with the conſciouſneſs of his own qualifications, vain of his fortune, and elated on the wings of imaginary expectation. Though he was deeply enamoured of Miſs Gauntlet, he was far from propoſing her heart as the ultimate aim of his gallantry, which (he did not doubt) would triumph over the moſt illuſtrious females of the land, and at once regale his appetite and ambition.

Meanwhile, being willing to make his appearance at the garriſon equally ſurpriſing and agreeable, he cautioned Mr. Jolter againſt writing to the commodore, who had not heard of them ſince their departure from Paris, and hired a poſt chaiſe and horſes for London. The governor, going out to give orders about the carriage, inadvertently left a paper book open upon the table; and his pupil caſting his eyes upon the page, chanced to read theſe words:—"Sept. 15. Arrived in ſafety, by the bleſſing of God, in this unhappy kingdom of England. And thus concludes the journal of my laſt peregrination." Peregrine's curioſity being inflamed by this extraordinary concluſion, he turned to the beginning, and peruſed ſeveral ſheets of a diary ſuch as is commonly kept by that claſs of people known by the denomination of travelling governors, for the ſatisfaction of themſelves and the parents or guardians of their pupils, and for the edification and entertainment of their friends.

That the reader may have a clear idea of Mr. Jolter's performance, we ſhall tranſcribe the tranſactions of one day, as he had recorded them; and that abſtract will be a ſufficient ſpecimen of the whole plan and execution of the work.

"May 3. At eight o'clock ſet out from Boulogne in a poſt chaiſe—the morning hazy and cold. Fortified my ſtomach with a cordial. Recommended ditto to Mr. P. as an antidote againſt the fog. Mem. He refuſed it. The hither horſe greaſed in the off-paſtern of the hind leg. Arrive at Samers. Mem. This laſt was a poſt and a half, i. e. three leagues, or nine Engliſh miles. The day clears up. A fine champaign country, well ſtored with corn. The poſtillion ſays his prayers in paſſing by a wooden crucifix upon the road. Mem. The horſes ſtaled in a ſmall

brook that runs in a bottom, betwixt two hills. Arrive at Cormont. A common poſt. A diſpute with my pupil, who is obſtinate, and ſwayed by an unlucky prejudice. Proceed to Montreuil, where we dine on choice pigeons. A very moderate charge. No chamber-pot in the room, owing to the negligence of the maid. This is an ordinary poſt. Set out again for Nampont. Troubled with flatulencies and indigeſtion. Mr. P. is ſullen, and ſeems to miſtake an eructation for the breaking of wind backwards. From Nampont depart for Bernay, at which place we arrive in the evening, and propoſe to ſtay all night. N. B. The two laſt are double poſts, and our cattle very willing, though not ſtrong. Sup on a delicate ragout and excellent partridges, in company with Mr. H. and his ſpouſe. Mem. The ſaid H. trod upon my corn by miſtake. Diſcharge the bill, which is not very reaſonable. Diſpute with Mr. P. about giving money to the ſervant: He inſiſts upon my giving a twenty-four ſols piece, which is too much by two-thirds, in all conſcience. N. B. She was a pert baggage, and did not deſerve a liard."

Our hero was ſo much diſobliged with certain circumſtances of this amuſing and inſtructing journal, that, by way of puniſhing the author, he interlined theſe words betwixt two paragraphs, in a manner that exactly reſembled the tutor's hand-writing—"Mem. Had the pleaſure of drinking myſelf into a ſweet intoxication, by toaſting our lawful king, and his royal family, among ſome worthy Engliſh fathers of the Society of Jeſus."

Having taken this revenge, he ſet out for London, where he waited upon thoſe noblemen to whom he had letters of recommendation from Paris; and was not only graciouſly received, but even loaded with careſſes and profers of ſervice, becauſe they underſtood he was a young gentleman of fortune, who, far from ſtanding in need of their countenance or aſſiſtance, would make an uſeful and creditable addition to the number of their adherents. He had the honour of dining at their tables, in conſequence of preſſing invitations, and of ſpending ſeveral evenings with the ladies to whom he was particulary agreeable, on account of his perſon, addreſs, and bleeding freely at play.

Being thus initiated in the beau monde, he thought it

was high time to pay his reſpects to his generous benefactor, the commodore; and accordingly departed one morning, with his train, for the garriſon, at which he arrived in ſafety the ſame night. When he entered the gate, which was opened by a new ſervant that did not know him, he found his old friend Hatchway ſtalking in the yard, with a night-cap on his head, and a pipe in his mouth; and, advancing to him, took him by the hand before he had any intimation of his approach. The lieutenant, thus ſaluted by a ſtranger, ſtared at him in ſilent aſtoniſhment, till he recollected his features, which were no ſooner known, than, daſhing the pipe upon the pavement, he exclaimed, "Smite my croſs-trees! th'art welcome to port;" and hugged him in his arms with great affection. He then, by a cordial ſqueeze, expreſſed his ſatisfaction at ſeeing his old ſhip-mate, Tom, who applying his whiſtle to his mouth, the whole caſtle echoed with his performance.

The ſervants, hearing the well-known ſound, poured out in a tumult of joy; and, underſtanding that their young maſter was returned, raiſed ſuch a peal of acclamation, as aſtoniſhed the commodore and his lady, and inſpired Julia with ſuch an intereſting preſage, that her heart began to throb with violence. Running out in the hurry and perturbation of her hope, ſhe was ſo much overwhelmed at ſight of her brother, that ſhe actually fainted in his arms. But from this trance ſhe ſoon awaked; and Peregrine, having teſtified his pleaſure and affection, went up ſtairs, and preſented himſelf before his godfather and aunt. Mrs. Trunnion roſe and received him with a gracious embrace, bleſſing God for his happy return from a land of impiety and vice, in which ſhe hoped his morals had not been corrupted, nor his principles of religion altered or impaired. The old gentleman being confined to his chair, was ſtruck dumb with pleaſure at his appearance; and, having made divers ineffectual efforts to get up, at length diſcharged a volley of curſes againſt his own limbs, and held out his hand to his godſon, who kiſſed it with great reſpect.

After he had finiſhed his apoſtrophe to the gout, which was the daily and hourly ſubject of his execrations, "Well, my lad, (ſaid he), I care not how ſoon I go to the bottom,

now I behold thee ſafe in harbour again; and yet I tell a damn'd lie: I would I could keep afloat until I ſhould ſee a luſty boy of thy begetting. Odds my timbers! I love thee ſo well, that I believe thou art the ſpawn of my own body; though I can give no account of thy being put upon the ſtocks." Then turning his eye upon Pipes, who by this time had penetrated into his apartment, and addreſſed him with the uſual ſalutation of "What cheer?" "Ahey! (cried he) are you there, you herring-faced ſon of a ſea-calf? What a ſlippery trick you played your old commander! But come, you dog! there's my fiſt; I forgive you, for the love you bear to my godſon. Go, man your tackle, and hoiſt a caſk of ſtrong beer into the yard, knock out the bung, and put a pump in it, for the uſe of all my ſervants and neighbours; and, d'ye hear, let the patereroes be fired, and the garriſon illuminated, as rejoicings for the ſafe arrival of your maſter. By the Lord! if I had the uſe of theſe damn'd ſhambling ſhanks, I would dance a hornpipe with the beſt of you."

The next object of his attention was Mr. Jolter, who was honoured with particular marks of diſtinction, and the repeated promiſe of enjoying the living in his gift, as an acknowledgment of the care and diſcretion with which he had ſuperintended the education and morals of our hero. The governor was ſo affected by the generoſity of his patron, that the tears ran down his cheeks, while he expreſſed his gratitude, and the infinite ſatisfaction he felt in contemplating the accompliſhments of his pupil.

Meanwhile, Pipes did not neglect the orders he had received: The beer was produced, the gates were thrown open for the admiſſion of all comers, the whole houſe was lighted up, and the patereroes were diſcharged in repeated vollies. Such phenomena could not fail to attract the notice of the neighbourhood. The club at Tunley's were aſtoniſhed at the report of the guns, which produced various conjectures among the members of that ſagacious ſociety. The landlord obſerved, that, in all likelihood, the commodore was viſited by hobgoblins, and ordered the guns to be fired in token of diſtreſs, as he had acted twenty years before, when he was annoyed by the ſame grievance. The exciſeman, with a waggiſh ſneer, expreſſed his apprehenſion of Trunnion's death, in

conſequence of which the patereroes might be diſcharged with an equivocal intent, either as ſignals of his lady's ſorrow or rejoicing. The attorney ſignified a ſuſpicion of Hatchway's being married to Miſs Pickle, and that the firing and illuminations were in honour of the nuptials; upon which Gamaliel diſcovered ſome faint ſigns of emotion, and, taking the pipe from his mouth, gave it as his opinion, that his ſiſter was brought to bed.

While they were thus bewildered in the maze of their own imaginations, a company of countrymen, who ſat drinking in the kitchen, and whoſe legs were more ready than their invention, ſallied out to know the meaning of theſe exhibitions. Underſtanding that there was a butt of ſtrong-beer a-broach in the yard, to which they were invited by the ſervants, they ſaved themſelves the trouble and expence of returning to ſpend the evening at the public houſe, and liſted themſelves under the banner of Tom Pipes, who preſided as director of this feſtival.

The news of Peregrine's return being communicated to the pariſh, the parſon, and three or four neighbouring gentlemen, who were wellwiſhers to our hero, immediately repaired to the garriſon, in order to pay their compliments on this happy event, and were detained to ſupper. An elegant entertainment was prepared by the direction of Miſs Julia, who was an excellent houſewife; and the commodore was ſo invigorated with joy, that he ſeemed to have renewed his age.

Among thoſe who honoured the occaſion with his preſence was Mr. Clover, the young gentleman that made his addreſſes to Peregrine's ſiſter. His heart was ſo big with his paſſion, that, while the reſt of the company were engroſſed by their cups, he ſeized an opportunity of our hero's being detached from the converſation, and, in the impatience of his love, conjured him to conſent to his happineſs; proteſting, that he would comply with any terms of ſettlement that a man of his fortune could embrace, in favour of a young lady who was abſolute miſtreſs of his affection.

Our youth thanked him very politely for his favourable ſentiments and honourable intention towards his ſiſter, and told him, that at preſent he ſaw no reaſon to obſtruct his deſire; that he would conſult Julia's own in-

inclinations, and confer with him about the means of gratifying his wiſh; but, in the meantime, begged to be excuſed from diſcuſſing any point of ſuch importance to them both. Reminding him of the jovial purpoſe on which they were happily met, he promoted ſuch a quick circulation of the bottle, that their mirth grew noiſy and obſtreperous; they broke forth into repeated peals of laughter, without any previous incitement, except that of claret. Theſe exploſions were ſucceeded by Bacchanalian ſongs, in which the old gentleman himſelf attempted to bear a ſhare; the ſedate governor ſnapped time with his fingers, and the pariſh prieſt aſſiſted in the chorus with a moſt expreſſive nakedneſs of countenance. Before midnight they were almoſt all pinned to their chairs, as if they had been fixed by the power of inchantment; and, what rendered the confinement ſtill more unfortunate, every ſervant in the houſe was in the ſame ſituation; ſo that they were fain to take their repoſe as they ſat, and nodded at each other like a congregation of Anabaptiſts.

Next day Peregrine communed with his ſiſter on the ſubject of her match with Mr. Clover, who (ſhe told him) had offered to ſettle a jointure of four hundred pounds, and take her to wife, without any expectation of a dowry. She moreover gave him to underſtand, that, in his abſence, ſhe had received ſeveral meſſages from her mother, commanding her to return to her father's houſe; but that ſhe had refuſed to obey theſe orders, by the advice and injunction of her aunt and the commodore, which were indeed ſeconded by her own inclination; becauſe ſhe had all the reaſon in the world to believe, that her mother only wanted an opportunity of treating her with ſeverity and rancour. The reſentment of that lady had been carried to ſuch indecent lengths, that, ſeeing her daughter at church one day, ſhe roſe up, before the parſon entered, and reviled her with great bitterneſs, in the face of the whole congregation.

CHAPTER LXVII.

Sees his ſiſter happily married. Viſits Emilia, who receives him according to his deſerts.

HER brother being of opinion, that Mr. Clover's propoſal was not to be neglected, eſpecially as Julia's heart was engaged in his favour, communicated the affair to his uncle, who, with the approbation of Mrs. Trunnion, declared himſelf well ſatisfied with the young man's addreſſes, and deſired that they might be buckled with all expedition, without the knowledge or concurrence of her parents, to whom (on account of their unnatural barbarity) ſhe was not bound to pay the leaſt regard. Though our adventurer entertained the ſame ſentiments of the matter, and the lover, dreading ſome obſtruction, earneſtly begged the immediate condeſcenſion of his miſtreſs, ſhe could not be prevailed upon to take ſuch a material ſtep, without having firſt ſolicited the permiſſion of her father, reſolved, nevertheleſs, to comply with the dictates of her own heart, ſhould his objections be frivolous or unjuſt.

Urged by this determination, her admirer waited upon Mr. Gamaliel at the public-houſe, and, with the appearance of great deference and reſpect, made him acquainted with his affection for his daughter, communicated the particulars of his fortune, with the terms of ſettlement he was ready to make; and in concluſion told him, that he would marry her without a portion. This laſt offer ſeemed to have ſome weight with the father, who received it with civility, and promiſed in a day or two to favour him with a final anſwer to his demand. He, accordingly, that ſame evening conſulted his wife, who being exaſperated at the proſpect of her daughter's independency, argued with the moſt virulent expoſtulation againſt the match, as an impudent ſcheme of her own planning, with a view of inſulting her parents, towards whom ſhe had already been guilty of the moſt vicious diſobedience. In ſhort, ſhe uſed ſuch remonſtrances, as not only averted this weak huſband's inclination from the propoſal which he had reliſhed before, but even inſtigated him to apply for a warrant to apprehend his daughter, on

the ſuppoſition that ſhe was about to beſtow herſelf in marriage without his privity or conſent.

The juſtice of peace to whom this application was made, though he could not refuſe the order, yet, being no ſtranger to the malevolence of the mother, which, together with Gamaliel's ſimplicity, was notorious in the county, he ſent an intimation of what had happened to the garriſon; upon which a couple of centinels were placed on the gate, and, at the preſſing ſolicitation of the lover, as well as the deſire of the commodore, her brother, and aunt, Julia was wedded without further delay; the ceremony being performed by Mr. Jolter, becauſe the pariſh prieſt prudently declined any occaſion of giving offence, and the curate was too much in the intereſt of their enemies to be employed in that office.

This domeſtic concern being ſettled to the ſatisfaction of our hero, he eſcorted her next day to the houſe of her huſband, who immediately wrote a letter to her father, declaring his reaſons for having thus ſuperſeded his authority; and Mrs. Pickle's mortification was unſpeakable.

That the new married couple might be guarded againſt all inſult, our young gentleman and his friend Hatchway, with their adherents, lodged in Mr. Clover's houſe for ſome weeks; during which they viſited their acquaintance in the neighbourhood, according to cuſtom. When the tranquillity of their family was perfectly eſtabliſhed, and the contract of marriage executed in the preſence of the old commodore and his lady, who gave her niece five hundred pounds to purchaſe jewels and clothes, Mr. Peregrine could no longer reſtrain his impatience to ſee his dear Emily; and told his uncle, that next day he propoſed to ride acroſs the country, in order to viſit his friend Gauntlet, whom he had not heard of for a long time.

The old gentleman, looking ſtedfaſtly in his face, "Ah! damn your cunning! (ſaid he) I find the anchor holds faſt! I did ſuppoſe as how you would have ſlipt your cable, and changed your birth; but, I ſee, when a young fellow is once brought up by a pretty wench, he may man his capſtans and viol block, if he wool; but he'll as ſoon heave up the Pike of Teneriffe, as bring his anchor a-weigh! Odds heartlikins! had I

known the young woman was Ned Gauntlet's daughter, I ſhouldn't have thrown out ſignal for leaving off chaſe."

Our adventurer was not a little ſurpriſed to hear the commodore talk in this ſtyle; and immediately conjectured, that his friend Godfrey had informed him of the whole affair. Inſtead of liſtening to this approbation of his flame, with thoſe tranſports of joy which he would have felt, had he retained his former ſentiments, he was chagrined at Trunnion's declaration, and offended at the preſumption of the young ſoldier, in preſuming to diſcloſe the ſecret with which he had intruſted him. Reddening with theſe reflections, he aſſured the commodore, that he never had ſerious thoughts of matrimony; ſo that, if any perſon had told him he was under any engagement of that kind, he had abuſed his ear; for he proteſted, that he would never contract ſuch attachments, without his knowledge and expreſs permiſſion.

Trunnion commended him for his prudent reſolution, and obſerved, that, though no perſon mentioned to him what promiſes had paſſed betwixt him and his ſweatheart, it was very plain that he had made love to her, and therefore it was to be ſuppoſed, that his intentions were honourable; for he could not believe he was ſuch a rogue in his heart, as to endeavour to debauch the daughter of a brave officer, who had ſerved his country with credit and reputation. Notwithſtanding this remonſtrance, which Pickle imputed to the commodore's ignorance of the world, he ſet out for the habitation of Mrs. Gauntlet, with the unjuſtifiable ſentiments of a man of pleaſure, who ſacrifices every conſideration to the deſire of his ruling appetite; and, as Wincheſter lay in his way, reſolved to viſit ſome of his friends who lived in that place. It was in the houſe of one of theſe that he was informed of Emilia's being then in town with her mother; upon which he excuſed himſelf from ſtaying to drink tea, and immediately repaired to their lodgings, according to the directions he had received.

When he arrived at the door, inſtead of undergoing that perturbation of ſpirits, which a lover in his intereſting ſituation might be ſuppoſed to feel, he ſuffered no emotion but that of vanity and pride, favoured with an

opportunity of ſelf-gratification, and entered his Emilia's apartment with the air of a conceited petit-maitre, rather than that of the reſpectful admirer, when he viſits the object of his paſſion, after an abſence of ſeventeen months.

The young lady, having been very much diſobliged at his mortifying neglect of her brother's letter, had ſummoned all her own pride and reſolution to her aid; and, by means of a happy diſpoſition, ſo far overcame her chagrin at his indifference, that ſhe was able to behave in his preſence with apparent tranquillity and eaſe. She was even pleaſed to find he had, by accident, choſen a time for his viſit when ſhe was ſurrounded by two or three young gentlemen, who profeſſed themſelves her admirers. Our gallant was no ſooner announced, than ſhe collected all her coquettry, put on the gayeſt air ſhe could aſſume, and contrived to giggle juſt as he appeared at the room door. The compliments of ſalutation being performed, ſhe welcomed him to England in a careleſs manner, aſked the news of Paris, and, before he could make any reply, deſired one of the other gentlemen to proceed with the ſequel of that comical adventure, in the relation of which he had been interrupted.

Peregrine ſmiled within himſelf at this behaviour, which (without all doubt) he believed ſhe had affected to puniſh him for his unkind ſilence while he was abroad, being fully perſuaded that her heart was abſolutely at his devotion. On this ſuppoſition, he practiſed his Pariſian improvements on the art of converſation, and uttered a thouſand prettineſſes in the way of compliment, with ſuch incredible rotation of tongue, that his rivals were ſtruck dumb with aſtoniſhment; and Emilia fretted out of all temper, as ſeeing herſelf deprived of the prerogative of the ſex. He perſiſted, however, in this ſupriſing loquacity, until the reſt of the company thought proper to withdraw, and then contracted his diſcourſe into the focus of love, which now put on a very different appearance from that which it had formerly worn. Inſtead of awful veneration, which her preſence uſed to inſpire, that chaſtity of ſentiment, and delicacy of expreſſion, he now gazed upon her with the eyes of a libertine, he glowed with the impatience of deſire, talked in a ſtrain

that barely kept within the bounds of decency, and attempted to ſnatch ſuch favours, as ſhe, in the tenderneſs of mutual acknowledgment, had once vouchſafed to beſtow.

Grieved and offended as ſhe was, at this palpable alteration in his carriage, ſhe diſdained to remind him of his former deportment, and, with diſſembled good humour, rallied him on the progreſs he had made in gallantry and addreſs: But, far from ſubmitting to the liberties he would have taken, ſhe kept her perſon ſacred from his touch, and would not even ſuffer him to raviſh a kiſs of her fair hand; ſo that he reaped no other advantage from the exerciſe of his talents, during this interview, which laſted a whole hour, than that of knowing he had overrated his own importance, and that Emily's heart was not a garriſon likely to ſurrender at diſcretion.

At length his addreſſes were interrupted by the arrival of the mother, who had gone abroad to viſit by herſelf; and the converſation becoming more general, he underſtood, that Godfrey was at London, ſoliciting for a lieutenantcy that had fallen vacant in the regiment to which he belonged; and that Miſs Sophy was at home with her father.

Though our adventurer had not met with all the ſucceſs he expected by his firſt viſit, he did not deſpair of reducing the fortreſs, believing that in time there would be a mutiny in his favour, and accordingly carried on the ſiege for ſeveral days, without profiting by his perſeverance; till, at length, having attended the ladies to their own houſe in the country, he began to look upon this adventure as time miſ-ſpent, and reſolved to diſcontinue his attack, in hopes of meeting with a more favourable occaſion; being in the mean time, ambitious of diſplaying, in an higher ſphere, thoſe qualifications which his vanity told him were at preſent miſapplied.

CHAPTER LXVIII.

He attends his uncle with great affection, during a fit of illneſs. Sets out again for London. Meets with his friend Godfrey, who is prevailed upon to accompany him to Bath; on the road to which place they chance to dine with a perſon who entertains them with a curious account of a certain company of adventurers.

THUS determined, he took leave of Emilia and her mother, on pretence of going to London upon ſome urgent buſineſs, and returned to the garriſon, leaving the good old lady very much concerned, and the daughter incenſed at his behaviour, which was the more unexpected, becauſe Godfrey had told them, that the commodore approved of his nephew's paſſion.

Our adventurer found his uncle ſo ill of the gout, which, for the firſt time, had taken poſſeſſion of his ſtomach, that his life was in imminent danger, and the whole family in diſorder: He therefore took the reins of government in his own hands, ſent for all the phyſicians in the neighbourhood, and attended him in perſon with the moſt affectionate care, during the whole fit, which laſted a fortnight, and then retired before the ſtrength of his conſtitution.

When the old gentleman recovered his health, he was ſo penetrated with Peregrine's behaviour, that he actually would have made over to him his whole fortune, and depended upon him for his own ſubſiſtence, had not our youth oppoſed the execution of the deed with all his influence and might, and even perſuaded him to make a will, in which his friend Hatchway, and all his other adherents, were liberally remembered, and his aunt provided for on her own terms. This material point being ſettled, he, with his uncle's permiſſion, departed for London, after having ſeen the family affairs eſtabliſhed under the direction and adminiſtration of Mr. Jolter and the lieutenant; for, by this time, Mrs. Trunnion was wholly occupied with her ſpiritual concerns.

On his firſt arrival at London, he ſent a card to the lodgings of Gauntlet, in conſequence of a direction from his mother; and that young gentleman waited on him next morning, though not with that alacrity of counte-

nance and warmth of friendſhip which might have been expected from the intimacy of their former connection. Nor was Peregrine himſelf actuated by the ſame unreſerved affection for the ſoldier which he had formerly entertained. Godfrey, over and above the offence he had taken at Pickle's omiſſion in point of correſponding with him, had been informed, by a letter from his mother, of the youth's cavalier behaviour to Emilia, during his laſt reſidence at Wincheſter; and our young gentleman (as we have already obſerved) was diſguſted at the ſuppoſed diſcovery which the ſoldier had made in his abſence to the commodore. They perceived their mutual umbrage at meeting, and received each other with that civility of reſerve which commonly happens between two perſons when their friendſhip is in the wane.

Gauntlet at once divined the cauſe of the other's diſpleaſure; and, in order to vindicate his own character, after the firſt compliments were paſſed, took the opportunity, on inquiring after the health of the commodore, to tell Peregrine, that, while he tarried at the garriſon, on his return from Dover, the ſubject of the converſation, one night, happening to turn on our hero's paſſion, the old gentleman had expreſſed his concern about that affair; and, among other obſervations, ſaid, he ſuppoſed the object of his love was ſome paltry huſſy, whom he had picked up when he was a boy at ſchool. Upon which, Mr. Hatchway aſſured him, that ſhe was a young woman of as good a family as any in the county; and, after having prepoſſeſſed him in her favour, ventured (out of the zeal of his friendſhip) to tell who ſhe was: Wherefore, the diſcovery was not to be imputed to any other cauſe; and he hoped Mr. Pickle would acquit him of all ſhare in the tranſaction.

Peregrine was very well pleaſed to be thus undeceived; his countenance immediately cleared up, the formality of his behaviour relaxed into his uſual familiarity; he aſked pardon for his unmannerly neglect of Godfrey's letter, which, he proteſted, was not owing to any diſregard, or abatement of friendſhip, but to a hurry of youthful engagements, in conſequence of which he had procraſtinated his anſwer from time to time, until he was ready to return in perſon.

The young ſoldier was contented with this apology; and, as Pickle's intention, with reſpect to his ſiſter, was ſtill dubious and undeclared, he did not think it was incumbent upon him, as yet, to expreſs any reſentment on that ſcore; but was wiſe enough to foreſee, that the renewal of his intimacy with our young gentleman might be the means of reviving that flame which had been diſſipated by a variety of new ideas. With thoſe ſentiments, he laid aſide all reſerve, and their communication immediately reſumed its former channel. Peregrine made him acquainted with all the adventures in which he had been engaged ſince their parting; and he, with the ſame confidence, related the remarkable incidents of his own fate; among other things, giving him to underſtand, that, upon obtaining a commiſſion in the army, the father of his dear Sophy, without once inquiring about the occaſion of his promotion, had not only favoured him with his countenance in a much greater degree than heretofore, but alſo contributed his intereſt, and even promiſed the aſſiſtance of his purſe, in procuring for him a lieutenantcy, which he was then ſoliciting with all his power; whereas, if he had not been enabled, by a moſt accidental piece of good fortune, to lift himſelf into the ſphere of an officer, he had all the reaſon in the world to believe that this gentleman, and all the reſt of his wealthy relations, would have ſuffered him to languiſh in obſcurity and diſtreſs; and by turning his misfortune into reproach, made it a plea for their own want of generoſity and friendſhip.

Peregrine, underſtanding the ſituation of his friend's affairs, would have accommodated him upon the inſtant with a ſum to accelerate the paſſage of his commiſſion through the offices; but, being too well acquainted with his ſcrupulous diſpoſition, to manifeſt his benevolence in that manner, he found means to introduce himſelf to one of the gentlemen of the war office, who was ſo well ſatisfied with the arguments he uſed in behalf of his friend, that Godfrey's buſineſs was tranſacted in a very few days, though he himſelf knew nothing of his intereſt being thus reinforced.

By this time, the ſeaſon at Bath was begun; and our hero, panting with the deſire of diſtinguiſhing himſelf at

that reſort of the faſhionable world, communicated his deſign of going thither to his friend Godfrey, whom he importuned to accompany him in the excurſion; and leave of abſence for his regiment being obtained by the influence of Peregrine's new quality friends, the two companions departed from London in a poſt-chaiſe, attended, as uſual, by the valet de chambre and Pipes, who were become almoſt as neceſſary to our adventurer as any two of his own organs.

At the inn, when they alighted for dinner, Godfrey perceived a perſon walking by himſelf in the yard, with a very penſive air, and, upon obſerving him more narrowly, recognized him to be a profeſſed gameſter, whom he had formerly known at Tunbridge. On the ſtrength of this acquaintance, he accoſted the peripatetic, who knew him immediately; and, in the fulneſs of his grief and vexation, told him, that he was now on his return from Bath, where he had been ſtripped by a company of ſharpers, who reſented that he ſhould preſume to trade upon his own bottom.

Peregrine, who was extremely curious in his inquiries, imagining that he might learn ſome entertaining and uſeful anecdotes from this artiſt, invited him to dinner, and was accordingly fully informed of all the political ſyſtems at the Bath. He underſtood that there was at London one great company of adventurers, who employed agents in all the different branches of impoſition throughout the whole kingdom of England, allowing theſe miniſters a certain proportion of the profits accruing from their induſtry and ſkill, and reſerving the greateſt ſhare for the benefit of the common ſtock, which was chargeable with the expence of fitting out individuals in their various purſuits, as well as with the loſs ſuſtained in the courſe of their adventures. Some, whoſe perſons and qualifications are by the company judged adequate to the taſk, exert their talents in making love to ladies of fortune, being accommodated with money and accoutrements for that purpoſe, after having given their bonds payable to one or other of the directors, on the day of marriage, for certain ſums, proportioned to the dowries they are to receive. Others, verſed in the doctrine of chances, and certain ſecret expedients, frequent all thoſe places where games of

hazard are allowed; and ſuch as are maſters in the arts of billiards, tennis, and bowls, are continually lying in wait, in all the ſcenes of theſe diverſions, for the ignorant and unwary. A fourth claſs attend horſe-races, being ſkilled in thoſe myſterious practices, by which the knowing-ones are taken in. Nor is this community unfurniſhed with thoſe who lay wanton wives and old rich widows under contribution, and extort money, by proſtituting themſelves to the embraces of their own ſex, and then threatening their admirers with proſecution. But their moſt important returns are made by that body of their undertakers who exerciſe their underſtandings in the innumerable ſtratagems of the card-table, at which no ſharper can be too infamous to be received, and even careſſed by perſons of the higheſt rank and diſtinction. Among other articles of intelligence, our young gentleman learned, that thoſe agents, by whom their gueſt was broke, and expelled from Bath, had conſtituted a bank againſt all ſporters, and monopolized the advantage in all ſorts of play. He then told Gauntlet, that, if he would put himſelf under his direction, he would return with them, and lay ſuch a ſcheme as would infallibly ruin the whole ſociety at billiards, as he knew that Godfrey excelled them all in his knowledge of that game.

The ſoldier excuſed himſelf from engaging in any party of that kind; and after dinner the travellers parted; but, as the converſation between the two friends turned upon the information they had received, Peregrine projected a plan for puniſhing thoſe villanous peſts of ſociety, who prey upon their fellow-creatures; and it was put in execution by Gauntlet in the following manner.

CHAPTER LXIX.

Godfrey executes a ſcheme at Bath, by which a whole company of ſharpers is ruined.

On the evening after their arrival at Bath, Godfrey, who had kept himſelf up all day for that purpoſe, went in boots to the billiard-table; and, two gentlemen being at play, began to bet with ſo little appearance of judg-

ment, that one of the adventurers then preſent was inflamed with the deſire of profiting by his inexperience; and, when the table was vacant, invited him to take a game for amuſement. The ſoldier, aſſuming the air of a ſelf-conceited dupe, anſwered, that he did not chooſe to throw away his time for nothing, but, if he pleaſed, would piddle for a crown a game. This declaration was very agreeable to the other, who wanted to be further confirmed in the opinion he had conceived of the ſtranger, before he would play for any thing of conſequence. The party being accepted, Gauntlet put off his coat, and, beginning with ſeeming eagerneſs, won the firſt game, becauſe his antagoniſt kept up his play with a view of encouraging him to wager a greater ſum. The ſoldier purpoſely bit at the hook, the ſtakes were doubled, and he was again victorious, by the permiſſion of his competitor. He now began to yawn; and obſerving, that it was not worth his while to proceed in ſuch a childiſh manner; the other ſwore, in an affected paſſion, that he would play with him for twenty guineas. The propoſal being embraced (through the connivance of Godfrey) the money was won by the ſharper, who exerted his dexterity to the uttermoſt, fearing that otherwiſe his adverſary would decline continuing the game.

Godfrey thus conquered, pretended to loſe his temper, curſed his own ill luck, ſwore that the table had a caſt, and that the balls did not run true, changed his maſt, and, with great warmth, challenged his enemy to double the ſum. The gameſter, with feigned reluctance, complied with his deſire; and, having got the two firſt hazards, offered to lay one hundred guineas to fifty on the game. The odds were taken: and Godfrey having allowed himſelf to be overcome began to rage with great violence, broke the maſt to pieces, threw the balls out at the window, and, in the fury of his indignation, defied his antagoniſt to meet him to-morrow, when he ſhould be refreſhed from the fatigue of travelling. This was a very welcome invitation to the gameſter, who, imagining that the ſoldier would turn out a moſt beneficial prize, aſſured him, that he would not fail to be there next forenoon, in order to give him his revenge.

Gauntlet went home to his lodgings, fully certified of

his own ſuperiority; and took his meaſures with Peregrine, touching the proſecution of their ſcheme; while his opponent made a report of his ſucceſs to the brethren of the gang, who reſolved to be preſent at the deciſion of the match, with a view of taking advantage of the ſtranger's paſſionate diſpoſition.

Affairs being thus concerted on both ſides, the players met, according to appointment, and the room was immediately filled with ſpectators, who either came thither by accident, curioſity, or deſign. The match was fixed for one hundred pounds a game, the principals choſe their inſtruments, and laid aſide their coats, and one of the knights of the order proffered to lay another hundred on the head of his aſſociate. Godfrey took him upon the inſtant. A ſecond worthy of the ſame claſs, ſeeing him ſo eager, challenged him to treble the ſum; and his propoſal met with the ſame reception, to the aſtoniſhment of the company, whoſe expectation was raiſed to a very intereſting pitch. The game was begun, and the ſoldier having loſt the firſt hazard, the odds were offered by the confederacy with great vociferation; but no body would run ſuch a riſk in favour of a perſon who was utterly unknown. The ſharper having gained the ſecond alſo, the noiſe increaſed to a ſurpriſing clamour, not only of the gang, but likewiſe of almoſt all the ſpectators, who deſired to lay two to one againſt the brother of Emilia.

Peregrine, who was preſent, perceiving the cupidity of the aſſociation ſufficiently inflamed, all of a ſudden opened his mouth, and anſwered their bets, to the amount of twelve hundred pounds; which were immediately depoſited, on both ſides, in money and notes; ſo that this was, perhaps, the moſt important game that ever was played at billiards. Gauntlet ſeeing the agreement ſettled, ſtruck his antagoniſt's ball into the pocket in a twinkling, though it was in one of thoſe ſituations which are ſuppoſed to be againſt the ſtriker. The betters were a little diſcompoſed at this event, for which, however, they conſoled themſelves, by imputing the ſucceſs to accident; but when, at the very next ſtroke, he ſprung it over the table, their countenances underwent an inſtantaneous diſtraction of feature, and they waited, in the moſt dreadful ſuſpence, for the next hazard, which being likewiſe taken with in-

finite eaſe by the ſoldier, the blood forſook their cheeks, and the interjection *Zounds!* pronounced with a look of conſternation, and in a tone of deſpair, proceeded from every mouth at the ſame inſtant of time. They were overwhelmed with horror and aſtoniſhment at ſeeing three hazards taken in as many ſtrokes, from a perſon of their friend's dexterity; and ſhrewdly ſuſpected, that the whole was a ſcheme preconcerted for their deſtruction: On this ſuppoſition, they changed the note, and attempted to hedge for their own indemnification, by propoſing to lay the odds in favour of Gauntlet; but ſo much was the opinion of the company altered by that young gentleman's ſucceſs, that no body would venture to eſpouſe the cauſe of his competitor, who, chancing to improve his game by the addition of another lucky hit, diminiſhed the concern, and revived the hopes of his adherents. But this gleam of fortune did not long continue. Godfrey collected his whole art and capacity, and augmenting his ſcore to number ten, indulged himſelf with a view of the whole fraternity. The viſages of theſe profeſſors had adopted different ſhades of complexion at every hazard he had taken; from their natural colour they had ſhifted into a ſallow hue; from thence into pale; from pale into yellow, which degenerated into a mahogany tint; and now they ſaw ſeventeen hundred pounds of their ſtock depending upon a ſingle ſtroke, they ſtood like ſo many ſwarthy Moors, jaundiced with terror and vexation. The fire which naturally glowed in the cheeks and noſe of the player, ſeemed utterly extinct, and his carbuncles exhibited a livid appearance, as if a gangrene had already made ſome progreſs in his face; his hand began to ſhake, and his whole frame was ſeized with ſuch trepidation, that he was fain to ſwallow a bumper of brandy, in order to reeſtabliſh the tranquillity of his nerves. This expedient, however, did not produce the deſired effect; for he aimed the ball at the lead with ſuch diſcompoſure, that it ſtruck on the wrong ſide, and came off at an angle which directed it full in the middle hole. This fatal accident was attended with an univerſal groan, as if the whole univerſe had gone to wreck; and notwithſtanding that tranquillity for which adventurers are ſo remarkable, this loſs made ſuch an impreſſion upon them all, that each in

particular manifeſted his chagrin, by the moſt violent emotions. One turned up his eyes to heaven, and bit his nether lip; another gnawed his fingers, while he ſtalked acroſs the room; a third blaſphemed with horrid imprecations; and he who played the party ſneaked off, grinding his teeth together, with a look that baffles all deſcription, and, as he croſſed the threſhold, exclaiming, "A damn'd bite, by G—d!"

The victors, after having inſulted them, by aſking, if they were diſpoſed for another chance, carried of their winning, with the appearance of great compoſure, though in their hearts they were tranſported with unſpeakable joy; not ſo much on account of the booty they had gained, as in conſideration of having ſo effectually deſtroyed ſuch a neſt of pernicious miſcreants.

Peregrine, believing that now he had found an opportunity of ſerving his friend, without giving offence to the delicacy of his honour, told him, upon their arrival at their lodgings, that fortune had at length enabled him to become in a manner independent, or at leaſt make himſelf eaſy in his circumſtances, by purchaſing a company with the money he had won. So ſaying, he put his ſhare of the ſucceſs in Gauntlet's hand, as a ſum that of right belonged to him, and promiſed to write in his behalf to a nobleman, who had intereſt enough to promote ſuch a quick riſe in the ſervice.

Godfrey thanked him for his obliging intention, but abſolutely refuſed, with great loftineſs of demeanor, to appropriate to his own uſe any part of the money which Pickle had gained, and ſeemed affronted at the other's entertaining a ſentiment ſo unworthy of his character. He would not even accept, in the way of loan, ſuch an addition to his own ſtock, as would amount to the price of a company of foot; but expreſſed great confidence in the future exertion of that talent which had been bleſſed with ſuch a proſperous beginning. Our hero finding him thus obſtinately deaf to the voice of his own intereſt, reſolved to govern himſelf, in his next endeavours of friendſhip, by his experience of this tickliſh punctilio; and, in the mean time, gave a handſome benefaction to the hoſpital, out of theſe firſt-fruits of the ſucceſs in play, and reſerved two hundred pounds for a ſet of diamond ear-

rings and ſolitaire, which he intended for a preſent to Miſs Emily.

CHAPTER LXX.

The two friends eclipſe all their competitors in gallantry, and practiſe a pleaſant project of revenge upon the phyſicians of the place.

THE fame of their exploit againſt the ſharpers was immediately diffuſed through all the companies at Bath; ſo that, when our adventurers appeared in public, they were pointed out by an hundred extended fingers, and conſidered as conſummate artiſts in all the different ſpecies of fineſſe, which they would not fail to practiſe with the firſt opportunity. Nor was this opinion of their characters any obſtacle to their reception into the faſhionable parties in the place; but, on the contrary, ſuch a recommendation, which (as I have already hinted) never fails to operate for the advantage of the poſſeſſor.

This firſt adventure, therefore, ſerved them as an introduction to the company at Bath, who were not a little ſurpriſed to find their expectations baffled by the conduct of the two companions; becauſe, far from engaging deeply at play, they rather ſhunned all occaſions of gaming, and directed their attention to gallantry, in which our hero ſhone unrivalled. His external qualifications, excluſive of any other merit, were ſtrong enough to captivate the common run of the female ſex; and theſe, reinforced with a ſprightlineſs of converſation, and a moſt inſinuating addreſs, became irreſiſtible, even by thoſe who were fortified with pride, caution, or indifference. But, among all the nymphs of this gay place, he did not meet with one object that diſputed the empire of his heart with Emilia, and therefore he divided his attachment according to the ſuggeſtions of vanity and whim; ſo that, before he had reſided a fortnight at Bath, he had ſet all the ladies by the ears, and furniſhed all the hundred tongues of ſcandal with full employment. The ſplendour of his appearance excited the inquiries of envy, which, inſtead of diſcovering any circumſtance to his prejudice, was curſed

with the information of his being a young gentleman of a good family, and heir to an immenſe fortune.

The countenance of ſome of his quality friends, who arrived at Bath, confirmed this piece of intelligence: Upon which his acquaintance was courted and cultivated with great aſſiduity; and he met with ſuch advances from ſome of the fair ſex, as rendered him extremely fortunate in his amours. Nor was his friend Godfrey a ſtranger to favours of the ſame kind; his accompliſhments were exactly calculated for the meridian of female taſte; and, with certain individuals of that ſex, his muſcular frame, and the robuſt connection of his limbs, were more attractive than the delicate proportions of his companion. He accordingly reigned paramount among thoſe inamoratas who were turned of thirty, without being under the neceſſity of proceeding by tedious addreſſes, and was thought to have co-operated with the waters in removing the ſterility of certain ladies, who had long undergone the reproach and diſguſt of their huſbands; while Peregrine ſet up his throne among thoſe who laboured under the diſeaſe of celibacy, from the pert miſs of fifteen, who, with a fluttering heart, toſſes her head, bridles up, and giggles involuntarily at ſight of an handſome young man, to the ſtaid maid of twenty-eight, who, with a demure aſpect, moralizes on the vanity of beauty, the folly of youth, and ſimplicity of woman, and expatiates on friendſhip, benevolence, and good ſenſe, in the ſtyle of a Platonic philoſopher.

In ſuch a diverſity of diſpoſitions, his conqueſts were attended with all the heart-burnings, animoſities, and turmoils of jealouſy and ſpite. The younger claſs took all opportunities of mortifying their ſeniors in public, by treating them with that indignity which (contrary to the general privilege of age) is, by the conſent and connivance of mankind, levelled againſt thoſe who have the misfortune to come under the denomination of old maids; and theſe laſt retorted their hoſtilities in the private machinations of ſlander, ſupported by experience and ſubtilty of invention. Not one day paſſed in which ſome new ſtory did not circulate, to the prejudice of one or other of thoſe rivals.

If our hero, in the long-room, chanced to quit one of

the moraliſts, with whom he had been engaged in converſation, he was immediately accoſted by a number of the oppoſite faction, who, with ironical ſmiles, upbraided him with cruelty to the poor lady he had left, exhorted him to have compaſſion on her ſufferings; and, turning their eyes towards the object of their interceſſion, broke forth into an univerſal peal of laughter. On the other hand, when Peregrine, in conſequence of having danced with one of the minors overnight, viſited her in the morning, the Platoniſts immediately laid hold on the occaſion, taſked their imaginations, aſſociated ideas, and, with ſage inſinuations, retailed a thouſand circumſtances of the interview, which never had any foundation in truth. They obſerved, that, if girls are determined to behave with ſuch indiſcretion, they muſt lay their accounts with incurring the cenſure of the world; that ſhe in queſtion was old enough to act more circumſpectly; and wondered that her mother would permit any young fellow to approach the chamber while her daughter was naked in bed. As for the ſervants peeping through the key-hole, to be ſure it was an unlucky accident; but people ought to be upon their guard againſt ſuch curioſity, and give their domeſtics no cauſe to employ their penetration. Theſe and other ſuch reflections were occaſionally whiſpered as ſecrets among thoſe who were known to be communicative; ſo that, in a few hours, it became the general topic of diſcourſe; and, as it had been divulged under injunctions of ſecrecy, it was almoſt impoſſible to trace the ſcandal to its origin; becauſe every perſon concerned muſt have promulgated her own breach of truſt, in diſcovering her author of the report.

Peregrine, inſtead of allaying, rather exaſperated this contention, by an artful diſtribution of his attention among the competitors; well knowing, that, ſhould his regard be converged into one point, he would ſoon forfeit the pleaſure he enjoyed in ſeeing them at variance; for both parties would join againſt the common enemy, and his favourite would be perſecuted by the whole coalition. He perceived, that, among the ſecret agents of ſcandal, none were ſo buſy as the phyſicians, a claſs of animals who live in this place, like ſo many ravens hovering about a carcaſe, and even ply for employment, like ſcullers at

Hungerford ſtairs. The greateſt part of them have correſpondence in London, who make it their buſineſs to inquire into the hiſtory, character, and diſtemper of every one that repairs to Bath, for the benefit of the waters; and if they cannot procure intereſt to recommend their medical friends to theſe patients before they ſet out, they at leaſt furniſh them with a previous account of what they could collect, that their correſpondents may uſe this intelligence for their own advantage. By theſe means, and the aſſiſtance of flattery and aſſurance, they often inſinuate themſelves into the acquaintance of ſtrangers, and, by conſulting their diſpoſitions, become neceſſary and ſubſervient to their prevailing paſſions. By their connection with apothecaries and nurſes, they are informed of all the private occurrences in each family, and therefore enabled to gratify the rancour of malice, amuſe the ſpleen of peeviſh indiſpoſition, and entertain the eagerneſs of impertinent curioſity.

In the courſe of theſe occupations, which frequently affected the reputation of our two adventurers, this whole body fell under the diſpleaſure of our hero, who, after divers conſultations with his friend, concerted a ſtratagem, which was practiſed upon the faculty in this manner. Among thoſe who frequented the pump-room, was an old officer, whoſe temper, naturally impatient, was, by repeated attacks of the gout, which had almoſt deprived him of the uſe of his limbs, ſublimated into a remarkable degree of virulence and perverſeneſs: He imputed the inveteracy of his diſtemper to the mal-practice of a ſurgeon who had adminiſtered to him, while he laboured under the conſequences of an unfortunate amour; and this ſuppoſition had inſpired him with an unſurmountable antipathy to all the profeſſors of the medical art, which was more and more confirmed by the information of a friend at London, who had told him, that it was a common practice among the phyſicians at Bath to diſſuade their patients from drinking the water, that the cure, and in conſequence their attendance, might be longer protracted.

Thus prepoſſeſſed, he had come to Bath, and, conformable to a few general inſtructions he had received, uſed the waters without any farther direction, taking all occa-

ſions of manifeſting his hatrrd and contempt of the ſons of Æſculapius, both by ſpeech and geſticulations, and even by purſuing a regimen quite contrary to that which he knew they preſcribed to others who ſeemed to be exactly in his condition. But he did not find his account in this method, how ſucceſsful ſoever it may have been in other caſes. His complaints, inſtead of vaniſhing, were every day more and more enraged; and at length he was confined to his bed, where he lay blaſpheming from morn to night, and from night to morn, though ſtill more determined than ever to adhere to his former maxims.

In the midſt of his torture, which was become the common joke of the town, being circulated through the induſtry of the phyſicians, who triumphed in his diſaſter, Peregrine, by means of Mr. Pipes, employed a country fellow, who had come to market, to run with great haſte, early one morning, to the lodgings of all the doctors in town, and deſire them to attend the colonel with all imaginable diſpatch. In conſequence of this ſummons, the whole faculty put themſelves in motion; and three of the foremoſt arriving at the ſame inſtant of time, far from complimenting one another with the door, each ſeparately eſſayed to enter, and the whole triumvirate ſtuck in the paſſage. While they remained thus wedged together, they deſcried two of their brethren poſting towards the ſame goal, with all the ſpeed that God had enabled them to exert; upon which they came to a parley, and agreed to ſtand by one another. This covenant being made, they diſentangled themſelves, and, inquiring about the patient, were told by the ſervant that he had juſt fallen aſleep.

Having received this intelligence, they took poſſeſſion of his antichamber, and ſhut the door, while the reſt of the tribe poſted themſelves on the outſide as they arrived; ſo that the whole paſſage was filled, from the top of the ſtair-caſe to the ſtreet-door; and the people of the houſe, together with the colonel's ſervant, ſtruck dumb with aſtoniſhment. The three leaders of this learned gang had no ſooner made their lodgment good, than they began to conſult about the patient's malady, which every one of them pretended to have conſidered with great care and aſſiduity. The firſt who gave his opinion, ſaid, the diſtemper was an obſtinate arthritis; the ſecond affirmed,

that it was no other than a confirmed pox; and the third ſwore it was an inveterate ſcurvy. This diverſity of opinions was ſupported by a variety of quotations from medical authors, ancient as well as modern; but theſe were not of ſufficient authority, or at leaſt not explicit enough to decide the diſpute; for there are many ſchiſms in medicine, as well as in religion, and each ſect can quote the fathers in ſupport of the tenets they profeſs. In ſhort, the contention roſe to ſuch a pitch of clamour, as not only alarmed the brethren on the ſtair, but alſo awaked the patient from the firſt nap he had enjoyed in the ſpace of ten whole days. Had it been ſimply waking, he would have been obliged to them for the noiſe that diſturbed him; for, in that caſe, he would have been relieved from the tortures of hell fire, to which, in his dream, he fancied himſelf expoſed: But this dreadful viſion had been the reſult of that impreſſion which was made upon his brain, by the intolerable anguiſh of his joints; ſo that, when he waked, the pain, inſtead of being allayed, was rather aggravated by a great acuteneſs of ſenſation; and the confuſed vociferation in the next room invading his ears at the ſame time, he began to think his dream was realized, and, in the pangs of deſpair, applied himſelf to a bell that ſtood by his bedſide, which he rung with great violence and perſeverance.

This alarm put an immediate ſtop to the diſputation of the three doctors, who, upon this notice of his being awake, ruſhed into his chamber without ceremony; and two of them ſeizing his arms, the third made the like application to one of his temples. Before the patient could recollect himſelf from the amazement which had laid hold on him at this unexpected irruption, the room was filled by the reſt of the faculty, who followed the ſervant that entered in obedience to his maſter's call; and the bed was in a moment ſurrounded by theſe gaunt miniſters of death. The colonel ſeeing himſelf beſet with ſuch an aſſemblage of ſolemn viſages and figures, which he had always conſidered with the utmoſt deteſtation and abhorrence, was incenſed to a moſt inexpreſſible degree of indignation; and ſo inſpirited by his rage, that, though his tongue denied its office, his other limbs performed their functions: He diſengaged himſelf from the trium-

virate, who had taken poſſeſſion of his body, ſprung out of bed with incredible agility, and, ſeizing one of his crutches, applied it ſo effectually to one of the three, juſt as he ſtooped to examine the patient's water, that his tye-periwig dropped into the pot, while he himſelf fell motionleſs on the floor.

This ſignificant explanation diſconcerted the whole fraternity; every man turned his face, as if it were by inſtinct, towards the door; and the retreat of the community being obſtructed by the efforts of individuals, confuſion and tumultuous uproar enſued: For the colonel, far from limiting his proweſs to the firſt exploit, handled his weapon with aſtoniſhing vigour and dexterity, without reſpect of perſons; ſo that few or none of them had eſcaped without marks of his diſpleaſure—when his ſpirits failed, and he ſunk down again quite exhauſted on his bed. Favoured by this reſpite, the diſcomfited faculty collected their hats and wigs, which had fallen off in the fray; and perceiving the aſſailant too much enfeebled to renew the attack, ſet up their throats together, and loudly threatened to proſecute him ſeverely for ſuch an outrageous aſſault.

By this time the landlord had interpoſed; and inquiring into the cauſe of the diſturbance, was informed of what had happened by the complainants, who, at the ſame time, giving him to underſtand that they had been ſeverally ſummoned to attend the colonel that morning, he aſſured them, that they had been impoſed upon by ſome wag; for his lodger had never dreamed of conſulting any one of their profeſſion.

Thunderſtruck at this declaration, the general clamour inſtantaneouſly ceaſed; and each, in particular, at once comprehending the nature of the joke, they ſneaked ſilently off with the loſs they had ſuſtained, in unutterable ſhame and mortification; while Peregrine and his friend, who took care to be paſſing that way by accident, made a full ſtop at ſight of ſuch an extraordinary efflux, and enjoyed the countenance and condition of every one as he appeared; nay, even made up to ſome of thoſe who ſeemed moſt affected with their ſituation, and miſchievouſly tormented them with queſtions, touching this unuſual congregation; then, in conſequence of the infor-

mation they received from the landlord and the colonel's valet, ſubjected the ſufferers to the ridicule of all the company in town. As it would have been impoſſible for the authors of this farce to keep themſelves concealed from the indefatigable inquiries of the phyſicians, they made no ſecret of their having directed the whole; though they took care to own it in ſuch an ambiguous manner, as afforded no handle of proſecution.

CHAPTER LXXI.

Peregrine humbles a noted Hector, and meets with a ſtrange character at the houſe of a certain lady.

AMONG thoſe who never failed to reſide at Bath during the ſeaſon, was a certain perſon, who, from the moſt abject miſery, had, by his induſtry and art at play, amaſſed about fifteen thouſand pounds; and, though his character was notorious, inſinuated himſelf ſo far into the favour of what is called the beſt company, that very few private parties of pleaſure took place in which he was not principally concerned. He was of a gigantic ſtature, a moſt intrepid countenance; and his diſpoſition, naturally overbearing, had, in the courſe of his adventures and ſucceſs, acquired a moſt intolerable degree of inſolence and vanity. By the ferocity of his features, and audacity of his behaviour, he had obtained a reputation for the moſt undaunted courage, which had been confirmed by divers adventures, in which he had humbled the moſt aſſuming heroes of his own fraternity: So that he now reigned chief Hector of the place with unqueſtioned authority.

With this ſon of fortune was Peregrine one evening engaged at play, and ſo ſuccefsful, that he could not help informing his friend of his good luck. Godfrey hearing the deſcription of the loſer, immediately recognized the perſon, whom he had known at Tunbridge; and aſſuring Pickle that he was a ſharper of the firſt water, cautioned him againſt any further connection with ſuch a dangerous companion, who (he affirmed) had ſuffered him to win

a ſmall ſum, that he might be encouraged to loſe a much greater ſum upon ſome other occaſion.

Our young gentleman treaſured up this advice; and though he did not ſcruple to give the gameſter an opportunity of retrieving his loſs, when he next day demanded his revenge, he abſolutely refuſed to proceed, after he had refunded his winning. The other, who conſidered him as a hot-headed unthinking youth, endeavoured to inflame his pride to a continuance of the game, by treating his ſkill with ſcorn and contempt; and, among other ſarcaſtic expreſſions, adviſed him to go to ſchool again, before he pretended to engage with maſters of the art. Our hero, incenſed at his arrogance, replied with great warmth, that he knew himſelf ſufficiently qualified for playing with men of honour, who deal upon the ſquare, and hoped he ſhould always deem it infamous either to learn or practiſe the tricks of a profeſſed gameſter. "Blood and thunder! meaning me, Sir? (cried this artiſt, raiſing his voice, and curling his viſage into a moſt intimidating frown). Zounds! I'll cut the throat of any ſcoundrel who has the preſumption to ſuppoſe that I don't play as honourably as e'er a nobleman in the kingdom: And I inſiſt upon an explanation from you, Sir; or, by hell and brimſtone! I ſhall expect other ſort of ſatisfaction." Peregrine (whoſe blood by this time boiled within him) anſwered without heſitation, "Far from thinking your demand unreaſonable, I will immediately explain myſelf without reſerve, and tell you, that, upon unqueſtionable authority, I believe you to be an impudent raſcal and common cheat."

The Hector was ſo amazed and confounded at the freedem of this declaration, which he thought no man on earth would venture to make in his preſence, that, for ſome minutes, he could not recollect himſelf; but at length, whiſpered a challenge in the ear of our hero, which was accordingly accepted. When they arrived next morning upon the field, the gameſter, arming his countenance with all its terrors, advanced with a ſword of a monſtrous length, and putting himſelf in a poſture, called aloud in a moſt terrific voice, "Draw, damn ye, draw; I will this inſtant ſend you to your fathers." The youth was not ſlow in complying with his deſire; his

weapon was unſheathed in a moment, and he began the attack with ſuch unexpected ſpirit and addreſs, that his adverſary, having made ſhift with great difficulty to parry the firſt paſs, retreated a few paces, and demanded a parley, in which he endeavoured to perſuade the young man, that to lay a man of his character under the neceſſity of chaſtiſing his inſolence, was the moſt raſh and inconſiderate ſtep that he could poſſibly have taken; but that he had compaſſion upon his youth, and was willing to ſpare him if he would ſurrender his ſword, and promiſe to aſk pardon in public for the offence he had given. Pickle was ſo much exaſperated at this unparalleled effrontery, that, without deigning to make the leaſt reply, he flung his own hat in the propoſer's face, and renewed the charge with ſuch undaunted agility, that the gameſter, finding himſelf in manifeſt hazard of his life, betook himſelf to his heels, and fled homewards with incredible ſpeed, being cloſely purſued by Peregrine, who, having ſheathed his ſword, pelted him with ſtones as he ran, and compelled him to go, that ſame day, into baniſhment from Bath, where he had domineered ſo long.

By this achievement, which was the ſubject of aſtoniſhment to all the company, who had looked upon the fugitive as a perſon of heroic courage, our adventurer's reputation was rendered formidable in all its circumſtances; although he thereby diſobliged a good many people of faſhion, who had contracted an intimacy of friendſhip with the exile, and who reſented his diſgrace, as if it had been the misfortune of a worthy man. Theſe generous patrons, however, bore a very ſmall proportion to thoſe who were pleaſed with the event of the duel; becauſe, in the courſe of their reſidence at Bath, they had either been inſulted or defrauded by the challenger. Nor was this inſtance of our hero's courage unacceptable to the ladies, few of whom could now reſiſt the united force of ſuch accompliſhments. Indeed, neither he nor his friend Godfrey would have found much difficulty in picking up an agreeable companion for life; but Gauntlet's heart was pre-engaged to Sophy; and Pickle, excluſive of his attachment to Emily, which was ſtronger than he himſelf imagined, poſſeſſed ſuch a ſhare of ambition, as could not be ſatisfied with the conqueſt of any female he beheld at Bath.

His viſits were, therefore, promiſcuous, without any other view than that of amuſement; and though his pride was flattered by the advances of the fair, whom he had captivated, he never harboured one thought of proceeding beyond the limits of common gallantry, and carefully avoided all particular explanations. But, what above all other enjoyments yielded him the moſt agreeable entertainment, was the ſecret hiſtory of characters, which he learned from a very extraordinary perſon, with whom he became acquainted in this manner.

Being at the houſe of a certain lady, on a viſiting day, he was ſtruck with the appearance of an old man, who no ſooner entered the room than the miſtreſs of the houſe very kindly deſired one of the wits preſent to roaſt the old put. This petit maitre, proud of the employment, went up to the ſenior, who had ſomething extremely peculiar and ſignificant in his countenance, and ſaluting him with divers faſhionable conges, accoſted him in theſe words: "Your ſervant, you old raſcal. I hope to have the honour of ſeeing you hang'd. I vow to Gad! you look extremely ſhocking, with theſe gummy eyes, lanthorn jaws, and toothleſs chaps. What! you ſquint at the ladies, you old rotten medlar? Yes, yes, we underſtand your ogling; but you muſt content yourſelf with a cook-maid, ſink me! I ſee you want to ſit. Theſe wither'd ſhanks of yours tremble under their burden; but you muſt have a little patience, old Hireo; indeed you muſt. I intend to mortify you a little longer, curſe me!"

The company was ſo tickled with this addreſs, which was delivered with much grimace and geſticulation, that they burſt out into a loud fit of laughter, which they fathered upon a monkey that was chained in the room; and, when the peal was over, the wit renewed his attack. in theſe words:—"I ſuppoſe you are fool enough to think this mirth was occaſioned by Pug: Ay, their he is; you had beſt ſurvey him; he is of your own family, ſwitch me: But the laugh was at your expence; and you ought to thank heaven for making you ſo ridiculous." While he uttered theſe ingenious ejaculations, the old gentleman bowed alternately to him and the monkey, that ſeemed to grin and chatter in imitation of the beau, and, with an arch ſolemnity of viſage, pronounced, "Gen-

tivated the old man's acquaintance with ſuch inſinuating addreſs, that in leſs than a fortnight he obtained his confidence. As they one day walked into the fields together, the manhater diſcloſed himſelf in theſe words: "Though the term of our communication has been but ſhort, you muſt have perceived, that I treat you with uncommon marks of regard; which, I aſſure you, is not owing to your perſonal accompliſhments, nor the pains you take to oblige me; for the firſt I overlook, and the laſt I ſee through: But there is ſomething in your diſpoſition which indicates a rooted contempt for the world, and I underſtand you have made ſome ſucceſsful efforts in expoſing one part of it to the ridicule of the other. It is upon this aſſurance that I offer you my advice and aſſiſtance, in proſecuting other ſchemes of the ſame nature; and to convince you that ſuch an alliance is not to be rejected, I will now give you a ſhort ſketch of my hiſtory, which will be publiſhed after my death, in forty-ſeven volumes of my own compiling.

I was born about forty miles from this place, of parents, who, having a very old family-name to ſupport, beſtowed their whole fortune on my elder brother; ſo that I inherited of my father little elſe than a large ſhare of choler, to which I am indebted for a great many adventures that did not always end to my ſatisfaction. At the age of eighteen I was ſent up to town, with a recommendation to a certain peer, who found means to amuſe me with the promiſe of a commiſſion for ſeven whole years; and 'tis odds but I ſhould have made my fortune by my perſeverance, had not I been arreſted, and thrown into the Marſhalſea by my landlord, on whoſe credit I had ſubſiſted three years, after my father had renounced me as an idle vagabond: There I remained ſix months, among thoſe priſoners who have no other ſupport than chance charity; and contracted a very valuable acquaintance, which was of great ſervice to me in the future emergencies of my life.

I was no ſooner diſcharged, in conſequence of an act of parliament for the relief of inſolvent debtors, than I went to the houſe of my creditor, whom I cudgelled without mercy; and, that I might leave nothing undone of thoſe things which I ought to have done, my next ſtage

was to Weſtminſter-hall, where I waited until my patron came forth from the houſe, and ſaluted him with a blow that laid him ſenſeleſs on the pavement: But my retreat was not ſo fortunate as I could have wiſhed: The chairmen and lacquies in waiting having ſurrounded and diſarmed me in a trice, I was committed to Newgate, and loaded with chains; and a very ſagacious gentleman, who was afterwards hanged, having ſat in judgment upon my caſe, pronounced me guilty of a capital crime, and foretold my condemnation at the Old Bailey. His prognoſtic, however, was diſappointed; for nobody appearing to proſecute me at the next ſeſſions, I was diſcharged by order of the court. It would be impoſſible for me to recount, in the compaſs of one day's converſation, all the particular exploits of which I bore conſiderable ſhare: Suffice it to ſay, I have been, at different times, priſoner in all the jails within the bills of mortality. I have broke from every round-houſe on this ſide Temple-bar. No bailiff, in the days of my youth and deſperation, durſt execute a writ upon me without a dozen of followers; and the juſtices themſelves trembled when I was brought before them.

I was once maimed by a carman, with whom I quarrelled, becauſe he ridiculed my leek on St. David's day; my ſkull was fractured by a butcher's cleaver, on the like occaſion. I have been run through the body five times, and loſt the tip of my left ear by a piſtol bullet. In a rencounter of this kind, having left my antagoniſt for dead, I was wiſe enough to make my retreat into France; and a few days after my arrival at Paris, entering into converſation with ſome officers on the ſubject of politics, a diſpute aroſe, in which I loſt my temper, and ſpoke ſo irreverently of the *Grand Monarque*, that next morning I was ſent to the Baſtile, by virtue of a *lettre de cachet*. There I remained for ſome months, deprived of all intercourſe with rational creatures; a circumſtance for which I was not ſorry, as I had the more time to project ſchemes of revenge againſt the tyrant who confined me, and the wretch who had betrayed my private converſation: But tired, at length, with theſe fruitleſs ſuggeſtions, I was fain to unbend the ſeverity of my thoughts by a correſpondence

with ſome induſtrious ſpiders, who had hung my dungeon with their ingenious labours.

I conſidered their work with ſuch attention, that I ſoon became an adept in the myſtery of weaving, and furniſhed myſelf with as many uſeful obſervations and reflections on that art, as will compoſe a very curious treatiſe, which I intend to bequeath to the Royal Society, for the benefit of our woollen manufacture; and this with a view to perpetuate my own name, rather than befriend my country: For, thank Heaven! I am weaned from all attachments of that kind, and look upon myſelf as one very little obliged to any ſociety whatſoever. Although I preſided with abſolute power over this long-legged community, and diſtributed rewards and puniſhments to each, according to his deſerts, I grew impatient of my ſituation; and my natural diſpoſition, one day, prevailing, like a fire which had long been ſmothered, I wreaked the fury of my indignation upon my innocent ſubjects, and in a twinkling deſtroyed the whole race. While I was employed in this general maſſacre, the turnkey, who brought me food, opened the door, and perceiving my tranſport, ſhrugged up his ſhoulders, and leaving my allowance, went out, pronouncing *Le pauvre diable! la tete lui tourne.* My paſſion no ſooner ſubſided than I reſolved to profit by this opinion of the jailor, and from that day counterfeited lunacy with ſuch ſucceſs, that in leſs than three months I was delivered from the Baſtile, and ſent to the galleys, in which they thought my bodily vigour might be of ſervice, although the faculties of my mind were decayed. Before I was chained to the oar, I received three hundred ſtripes by way of welcome, that I might thereby be rendered more tractable, notwithſtanding I uſed all the arguments in my power to perſuade them I was only *mad north north-weſt, and, when the wind was ſoutherly, knew a hawk from an hand-ſaw.*

In our ſecond cruize we had the good fortune to be overtaken by a tempeſt, during which the ſlaves were unbound, that they might contribute the more to the preſervation of the galley, and have a chance for their lives, in caſe of ſhipwreck. We were no ſooner at liberty, than, making ourſelves maſters of the veſſel, we robbed the officers, and ran her on ſhore among rocks on

the coaſt of Portugal; from whence I haſtened to Liſbon, with a view of obtaining my paſſage in ſome ſhip bound for England, where, by this time, I hoped my affair was forgotten.

But, before this ſcheme could be accompliſhed, my evil genius led me into company; and being intoxicated, I began to broach doctrines on the ſubject of religion, at which ſome of the party were ſcandalized and incenſed; and I was next day dragged out of bed by the officers of the inquiſition, and conveyed to a cell in the priſon belonging to that tribunal.

At my firſt examination, my reſentment was ſtrong enough to ſupport me under the torture, which I endured without flinching; but my reſolution abated, and my zeal immediately cooled, when I underſtood from a fellow-priſoner, who groaned on the other ſide of the partition, that in a ſhort time there would be an *auto de fe*; in conſequence of which I ſhould, in all probability, be doomed to the flames, if I would not renounce my heretical errors, and ſubmit to ſuch penance as the church ſhould think fit to preſcribe. This miſerable wretch was convicted of Judaiſm, which he had privately practiſed by connivance for many years, until he had amaſſed a fortune ſufficient to attract the regard of the church. To this he fell a ſacrifice, and accordingly prepared himſelf for the ſtake; while I, not at all ambitious of the crown of martyrdom, reſolved to temporiſe: So that, when I was brought to the queſtion the ſecond time, I made a ſolemn recantation. As I had no worldly fortune to obſtruct my ſalvation, I was received into the boſom of the church, and, by way of penance, enjoined to walk barefoot to Rome in the habit of a pilgrim.

During my peregrination through Spain, I was detained as a ſpy, until I could procure credentials from the inquiſition at Liſbon; and behaved with ſuch reſolution and reſerve, that, after being releaſed, I was deemed a proper perſon to be employed in quality of a ſecret intelligencer at a certain court. This office I undertook without heſitation; and being furniſhed with money and bills of credit, croſſed the Pyrenees, with intention to revenge myſelf upon the Spaniards for the ſeverities I had undergone during my captivity.

Having therefore effectually diſguiſed myſelf by a change of dreſs, and a large patch on one eye, I hired an equipage, and appeared at Bologna in quality of an itinerant phyſician; in which capacity I ſucceeded tolerably well, till my ſervants decamped in the night, with my baggage, and left me in the condition of Adam. In ſhort, I have travelled over the greateſt part of Europe, as a beggar, pilgrim, prieſt, ſoldier, gameſter, and quack; and felt the extremes of indigence and opulence, with the inclemency of weather, in all its viciſſitudes. I have learned that the characters of mankind are every where the ſame; that common ſenſe and honeſty bear an infinitely ſmall proportion to folly and vice; and that life is at beſt a paltry province.

After having ſuffered innumerable hardſhips, dangers, and diſgraces, I returned to London, where I lived ſome years in a garret, and picked up a ſubſiſtence, ſuch as it was, by vending purges in the ſtreets, from the back of a pied horſe; in which ſituation I uſed to harangue the mob in broken Engliſh, under pretence of being an High German doctor.

At laſt an uncle died, by whom I inherit an eſtate of three hundred pounds per annum, though, in his lifetime, he would not have parted with a ſixpence to ſave my ſoul and body from perdition.

I now appear in the world, not as a member of any community, or what is called a ſocial creature, but merely as a ſpectator, who entertains himſelf with the grimaces of a Jack-pudding, and banquets his ſpleen in beholding his enemies at loggerheads. That I may enjoy this diſpoſition, abſtracted from all interruption, danger, and participation, I feign myſelf deaf; an expedient by which I not only avoid all diſputes and their conſequences, but alſo become maſter of a thouſand little ſecrets, which are every day whiſpered in my preſence, without any ſuſpicion of their being overheard. You ſaw how I handled that ſhallow politician at my Lady Plauſible's the other day. The ſame method I practiſe upon the crazed tory, the bigot whig, the four ſupercilious pedant, the petulant critic, the bluſtering coward, the fawning tool, the pert pimp, ſly ſharper, and every other ſpecies of knaves and fools, with which this kingdom abounds.

In conſequence of my rank and character, I obtain free admiſſion to the ladies, among whom I have acquired the appellation of the Scandalous Chronicle. As I am conſidered (while ſilent) in no other light than that of a foot-ſtool or elbow chair, they diveſt their converſation of all reſtraint before me, and gratify my ſenſe of hearing with ſtrange things, which (if I could prevail upon myſelf to give the world that ſatisfaction) would compoſe a curious piece of ſecret hiſtory, and exhibit a quite different idea of characters from what is commonly entertained.

By this time, young gentleman, you may perceive, that I have it in my power to be a valuable correſpondent, and that it will be your intereſt to deſerve my confidence."

Here the miſanthrope left off ſpeaking, deſirous to know the ſentiments of our hero, who embraced the proffered alliance in a tranſport of joy and ſurpriſe; and the treaty was no ſooner concluded, than Mr. Crabtree began to perform articles, by imparting to him a thouſand delicious ſecrets, from the poſſeſſion of which he promiſed himſelf innumerable ſcenes of mirth and enjoyment. By means of this aſſociate, whom he conſidered as the ring of Gyges, he foreſaw, that he ſhould be enabled to penetrate, not only into the chambers, but even to the inmoſt thoughts of the female ſex. In order to ward off ſuſpicion, they agreed to revile each other in public, and meet at a certain private rendezvous, to communicate their mutual diſcoveries, and concert their future operations.

In conſequence of a letter from Lieutenant Hatchway, repreſenting the dangerous ſituation of the commodore, Peregrine took a haſty leave of his friends, and departed immediately for the garriſon.

CHAPTER LXXIII.

Peregrine arrives at the garriſon, where he receives the laſt admonitions of Commodore Trunnion, who next day reſigns his breath, and is buried according to his own directions. Some gentlemen in the country make a fruitleſs attempt to accommodate matters betwixt Mr. Gamaliel Pickle and his eldeſt ſon.

ABOUT four o'clock in the morning our hero arrived at the garriſon, where he found his generous uncle in ex-

tremity, ſupported in bed by Julia on one ſide, and Lieutenant Hatchway on the other, while Mr. Jolter adminiſtered ſpiritual conſolation to his ſoul; and between whiles comforted Mrs. Trunnion, who, with her maid, ſat by the fire, weeping with great decorum; the phyſician having juſt taken his laſt fee, and retired, after pronouncing the fatal prognoſtic, in which he anxiouſly wiſhed he might not be miſtaken.

Though the commodore's ſpeech was interrupted by a violent hiccup, he ſtill retained the uſe of his ſenſes; and, when Peregrine approached, ſtretched out his hand with manifeſt ſigns of ſatisfaction. The young gentleman, whoſe heart overflowed with gratitude and affection, could not behold ſuch a ſpectacle unmoved. He endeavoured to conceal his tenderneſs, which, in the wildneſs of his youth, and the pride of his diſpoſition, he conſidered as a derogation from his manhood; but, in ſpite of all his endeavours, the tears guſhed from his eyes, while he kiſſed the old man's hand; and he was ſo utterly diſconcerted by his grief, that, when he attempted to ſpeak, his tongue denied its office;—ſo that the commodore, perceiving his diſorder, made a laſt effort of ſtrength, and conſoled him in theſe words:—"Swab the ſpray from your bowſprit, my good lad, and coil up your ſpirits. You muſt not let the toplifts of your heart give way, becauſe you ſee me ready to go down at theſe years: Many a better man has foundered before he has made half my way; thof I truſt, by the mercy of God, I ſhall be ſure in port in a very few glaſſes, and faſt moored in a moſt bleſſed riding; for my good friend Jolter hath overhauled the journal of my ſins, and, by the obſervation he hath taken of the ſtate of my ſoul, I hope I ſhall happily conclude my voyage, and be brought up in the latitude of heaven. Here has been a doctor that wanted to ſtow me chockfull of phyſic; but, when a man's hour is come, what ſignifies his taking his departure with a 'pothecary's ſhop in his hold. Thoſe fellows come alongſide of dying men, like the meſſengers of the admiralty with ſailing orders; but I told him as how I could ſlip my cable without his direction or aſſiſtance, and ſo he hawled off in dudgeon. This curſed hiccup makes ſuch a rippling in the current of my ſpeech, that mayhap you

don't underſtand what I ſay. Now, while the ſucker of my wind-pump will go, I would willingly mention a few things, which I hope you will ſet down in the log-book of your remembrance, when I am ſtiff, d'ye ſee. There's your aunt ſitting whimpering by the fire, I deſire you will keep her tight, warm, and eaſy in her old age; ſhe's an honeſt heart in her own way, and, thof ſhe goes a little crank and humourſome, by being often overſtowed with Nantz and religion, ſhe has been a faithful ſhipmate to me, and I dare ſay never turned in with another man ſince we firſt embarked in the ſame bottom. Jack Hatchway, you know the trim of her as well as e'er a man in England, and I believe ſhe has a kindneſs for you; whereby, if you two will grapple in the way of matrimony, when I am gone, I do ſuppoſe that my godſon, for love of me, will allow you to live in the garriſon all the days of your life."

Peregrine aſſured him, he would with pleaſure comply with any requeſt he ſhould make in behalf of two perſons whom he eſteemed ſo much. The lieutenant, with a waggiſh ſneer, which even the gravity of the ſituation could not prevent, thanked them both for their good-will, telling the commodore, he was obliged to him for his friendſhip, in ſeeking to promote him to the command of a veſſel which he himſelf had wore out in the ſervice; but that, notwithſtanding, he ſhould be content to take charge of her, though he could not help being ſhy of coming after ſuch an able navigator.

Trunnion, exhauſted as he was, ſmiled at this ſally, and, after ſome pauſe, reſumed his admonitions in this manner:—"I need not talk of Pipes, becauſe I know you'll do for him without my recommendation; the fellow has ſailed with me in many a hard gale, and I'll warrant him as ſtout a ſeaman as ever ſet face to the weather: But I hope you'll take care of the reſt of my crew, and not diſrate them after I am dead, in favour of new followers. As for that young woman, Ned Gauntlet's daughter, I'm informed as how ſhe's an excellent wench, and has a reſpect for you; whereby, if you run her on board in an unlawful way, I leave my curſe upon you, and truſt you will never proſper in the voyage of life: But I believe you are more of an honeſt man, than to behave ſo

much like a pirate. I beg of all love you wool take care of your conſtitution, and beware of running foul of harlots, who are no better than ſo many mermaids, that ſit upon rocks in the ſea, and hang out a fair face for the deſtruction of paſſengers; thof I muſt ſay, for my own part, I never met with any of thoſe ſweet fingers, and yet I have gone to ſea for the ſpace of thirty years. But howſomever, ſteer your courſe clear of all ſuch brimſtone bitches. Shun going to law, as you would ſhun the devil; and look upon all attorneys as devouring ſharks, or ravenous fiſh of prey. As ſoon as the breath is out of my body, let minute guns be fired, till I am ſafe under ground. I would alſo be buried in the red jacket I had on when I boarded and took the Renummy. Let my piſtols, cutlaſs, and pocket compaſs be laid in the coffin along with me. Let me be carried to the grave by my own men, rigged in the black caps and white ſhirts which my barge's crew were wont to wear; and they muſt keep a good look-out, that none of your pilfering raſcallions may come and heave me up again, for the lucre of what they can get, until the carcaſe is belayed by a tombſtone. As for the motto, or what you call it, I leave that to you and Mr. Jolter, who are ſcholars; but I do deſire, that it may not be engraved in the Greek or Latin lingos, and much leſs in the French, which I abominate, but in plain Engliſh, that, when the angel comes to pipe all hands, at the great day, he may know that I am a Britiſh man, and ſpeak to me in my mother tongue. And now I have no more to ſay, but God in heaven have mercy upon my ſoul, and ſend you all fair weather, whereſoever you are bound." So ſaying, he regarded every individual around him with a look of complacency, and, cloſing his eye, compoſed himſelf to reſt, while the whole audience, Pipes himſelf not excepted, were melted with ſorrow; and Mrs. Trunnion conſented to quit the room, that ſhe might not be expoſed to the unſpeakable anguiſh of ſeeing him expire.

His laſt moments, however, were not ſo near as they imagined. He began to doſe, and enjoyed ſmall intervals of eaſe, till next day in the afternoon; during which remiſſions, he was heard to pour forth many pious ejaculations, expreſſing his hope, that, for all the heavy cargo

of his ſins, he ſhould be able to ſurmount the puttock-ſhrouds of deſpair, and get aloft to the croſs-trees of God's good favour. At laſt, his voice ſunk ſo low as not to be diſtinguiſhed; and, having lain about an hour, almoſt without any perceptible ſigns of life, he gave up the ghoſt with a groan, which announced his deceaſe.

Julia was no ſooner certified of this melancholy event, than ſhe ran to her aunt's chamber, weeping aloud; and immediately a very decent concert was performed by the good widow and her attendants. Peregrine and Hatchway retired till the corps ſhould be laid out; and Pipes having ſurveyed the body, with a face of rueful attention, —"Well fare thy ſoul! old Hawſer Trunnion (ſaid he): Man and boy I have known thee theſe five and thirty years, and ſure a truer heart never broke biſcuit. Many a hard gale haſt thou weathered; but now thy ſpells are all over, and thy hull fairly laid up. A better commander I'd never deſire to ſerve; and who knows but I may help to ſet up thy ſtanding rigging in another world?"

All the ſervants of the houſe were affected with the loſs of their old maſter; and the poor people in the neighbourhood aſſembled at the gate, and, by repeated howlings, expreſſed their ſorrow for the death of their charitable benefactor. Peregrine, though he felt every thing which love and gratitude could inſpire on this occaſion, was not ſo much overwhelmed with affliction, as to be incapable of taking the management of the family into his own hands. He gave directions about the funeral with great diſcretion, after having paid the compliments of condolence to his aunt, whom he conſoled with the aſſurance of his inviolable eſteem and affection. He ordered a ſuit of mourning to be made for every perſon in the garriſon, and invited all the neighbouring gentlemen to the burial, not even excepting his father and brother Gam, who did not, however, honour the ceremony with their preſence; nor was his mother humane enough to viſit her ſiſter-in-law in her diſtreſs.

In the method of interment, the commodore's injunctions were obeyed to a tittle; and at the ſame time our hero made a donation of fifty pounds to the poor of the pariſh, as a benefaction which his uncle had forgot to bequeath.

Having performed theſe obſequies with the moſt pious punctuality, he examined the will, to which there was no addition ſince it had been firſt executed, adjuſted the payment of all the legacies, and, being ſole executor, took an account of the eſtate to which he had ſucceeded, which, after all deductions, amounted to thirty thouſand pounds. The poſſeſſion of ſuch a fortune, of which he was abſolute maſter, did not at all contribute to the humiliation of his ſpirit, but inſpired him with new ideas of grandeur and magnificence, and elevated his hope to the higheſt pinnacle of expectation.

His domeſtic affairs being ſettled, he was viſited by almoſt all the gentlemen of the country, who came to pay their compliments of congratulation on his acceſſion to the eſtate; and ſome of them offered their good offices towards a reconciliation betwixt his father and him, induced by the general deteſtation which was entertained for his brother Gam, who was by this time looked upon by his neighbours as a prodigy of inſolence and malice. Our young ſquire thanked them for their kind propoſal, which he accepted; and old Gamaliel, at their entreaties, ſeemed very well diſpoſed to any accommodation; but, as he would not venture to declare himſelf before he had conſulted his wife, his favourable diſpoſition was rendered altogether ineffectual, by the inſtigations of that implacable woman; and our hero reſigned all expectation of being reunited to his father's houſe. His brother, as uſual, took all opportunities of injuring his character, by falſe aſperſions, and ſtories miſrepreſented, in order to prejudice his reputation; nor was his ſiſter Julia ſuffered to enjoy her good fortune in peace. Had he undergone ſuch perſecution from an alien to his blood, the world would have heard of his revenge; but, notwithſtanding his indignation, he was too much tinctured by the prejudices of conſanguinity, to lift his arm in judgment againſt the ſon of his own parents; and this conſideration abridged the term of his reſidence at the garriſon, where he had propoſed to ſtay for ſome months.

CHAPTER LXXIV.

The young gentleman having ſettled his domeſtic affairs, arrives in London, and ſets up a gay equipage. He meets with Emilia, and is introduced to her uncle.

His aunt, at the earneſt ſolicitations of Julia and her huſband, took up her quarters at the houſe of that affectionate kinſwoman, who made it her chief ſtudy to comfort and cheriſh the diſconſolate widow; and Jolter, in expectation of the living, which was not yet vacant, remained in garriſon, in quality of land-ſteward, upon our hero's country eſtate. As for the lieutenant, our young gentleman communed with him in a ſerious manner, about the commodore's propoſal of taking Mrs. Trunnion to wife; and Jack, being quite tired of the ſolitary ſituation of a bachelor, which nothing but the company of his old commander could have enabled him to ſupport ſo long, far from diſcovering averſion to the match, obſerved, with an arch ſmile, that it was not the firſt time he had commanded a veſſel in the abſence of Captain Trunnion; and therefore, if the widow was willing, he would cheerfully ſtand by her helm, and, as he hoped the duty would not be of long continuance, do his endeavour to ſteer her ſafe into port, where the commodore might come on board, and take charge of her again.

In conſequence of this declaration, it was determined that Mr. Hatchway ſhould make his addreſſes to Mrs. Trunnion as ſoon as decency would permit her to receive them; and Mr. Clover and his wife promiſed to exert their influence in his behalf. Meanwhile Jack was deſired to live at the caſtle as uſual, and aſſured, that it ſhould be put wholly in his poſſeſſion, as ſoon as he ſhould be able to accompliſh this matrimonial ſchi[illegible]e.

When Peregrine had ſettled all theſe points to his own ſatisfaction, he took leave of all his friends, and, repairing to the great city, purchaſed a new chariot and horſes, put Pipes and another lacquey into rich liveries, took elegant lodgings in Pall-mall, and made a moſt remarkable appearance among the people of faſhion. It was owing to this equipage, and the gaiety of his perſonal deportment, that common fame, which is always a common

liar, repreſented him as a young gentleman who had juſt ſucceeded to an eſtate of five thouſand pounds *per annum*, by the death of an uncle; that he was entitled to an equal fortune at the deceaſe of his own father, excluſive of two conſiderable jointures, which would devolve upon him at the demiſe of his mother and aunt. This report, falſe and ridiculous as it was, he could not find in his heart to contradict: Not but that he was ſorry to find himſelf ſo miſrepreſented; but his vanity would not allow him to take any ſtep that might diminiſh his importance in the opinion of thoſe who courted his acquaintance, on the ſuppoſition that his circumſtances were actually as affluent as they were ſaid to be. Nay, ſo much was he infatuated by this weakneſs, that he reſolved to encourage the deception, by living up to the report; and accordingly engaged in the moſt expenſive parties of pleaſure, believing that, before his preſent finances ſhould be exhauſted, his fortune would be effectually made, by the perſonal accompliſhments he ſhould have occaſion to diſplay to the beau monde in the courſe of his extravagance. In a word, vanity and pride were the ruling foibles of our adventurer, who imagined himſelf ſufficiently qualified to retrieve his fortune in various ſhapes, long before he could have any idea of want or difficulty. He thought he ſhould have it in his power, at any time, to make prize of a rich heireſs, or opulent widow; his ambition had already aſpired to the heart of a young handſome ducheſs dowager, to whoſe acquaintance he had found means to be introduced; or, ſhould matrimony chance to be unſuitable to his inclinations, he never doubted, that, by the intereſt he might acquire among the nobility, he ſhould be favoured with ſome lucrative poſt, that would amply recompence him for the liberality of his diſpoſition. There are many young men who entertain the ſame expectations, with half the reaſon he had to be ſo preſumptuous.

In the midſt of theſe chimerical calculations, his paſſion for Emilia did not ſubſide; but, on the contrary, began to rage with ſuch an inflammation of deſire, that her idea interfered with every other reflection, and abſolutely diſabled him from proſecuting the other lofty ſchemes which his imagination had projected. He therefore laid

down the honeſt reſolution of viſiting her in all the ſplendor of his ſituation, in order to practiſe upon her virtue with all his art and addreſs, to the utmoſt extent of his influence and fortune. Nay, ſo effectually had his guilty paſſion abſorbed his principles of honour, conſcience, humanity, and regard for the commodore's laſt words, that he was baſe enough to rejoice at the abſence of his friend Godfrey, who, being then with his regiment in Ireland, could not dive into his purpoſe, or take meaſures for fruſtrating his vicious deſign.

Fraught with theſe heroic ſentiments, he determined to ſet out for Suſſex in his chariot and ſix, attended by his valet de chambre and two footmen; and as he was now ſenſible, that in his laſt eſſay he had miſtaken his cue, he determined to change his battery, and ſap the fortreſs, by the moſt ſubmiſſive, ſoft, and inſinuating behaviour.

On the evening that preceded this propoſed expedition, he went into one of the boxes at the play houſe, as uſual, to ſhow himſelf to the ladies; and in reconnoitring the company through a glaſs (for no other reaſon, but becauſe it was faſhionable to be purblind), perceived his miſtreſs very plainly dreſſed, in one of the ſeats above the ſtage, talking to another young woman of a very homely appearance. Though his heart beat the alarm with the utmoſt impatience at ſight of his Emilia, he was for ſome minutes deterred from obeying the impulſe of his love, by the preſence of ſome ladies of faſhion, who, he feared, would think the worſe of him, ſhould they ſee him make his compliment in public to a perſon of her figure. Nor would the violence of his inclination have ſo far prevailed over his pride, as to lead him thither, had not he recollected, that his quality friends would look upon her as ſome handſome Abigail, with whom he had an affair of gallantry, and of conſequence give him credit for the intrigue.

Encouraged by this ſuggeſtion, he complied with the dictates of love, and flew to the place where his charmer ſat. His air and dreſs were ſo remarkable, that it was almoſt impoſſible he ſhould have eſcaped the eyes of a curious obſerver, eſpecially as he had choſen a time for coming in, when his entrance could not fail to attract the

notice of the ſpectators; I mean, when the whole houſe was huſhed in attention to the performance on the ſtage. Emilia, therefore, perceived him at his firſt approach; ſhe found herſelf diſcovered by the direction of his glaſs, and, gueſſing his intention by his abrupt retreat from the box, ſummoned all her fortitude to her aid, and prepared for his reception. He advanced to her with an air of eagerneſs and joy, tempered with modeſty and reſpect, and expreſſed his ſatisfaction at ſeeing her, with a ſeeming reverence of regard. Though ſhe was extremely well pleaſed at this unexpected behaviour, ſhe ſuppreſſed the emotions of her heart, and anſwered his compliments with affected eaſe and unconcern, ſuch as might denote the good humour of a perſon who meets by accident with an indifferent acquaintance. After having certified himſelf of her own good health, he very kindly inquired about her mother and Miſs Sophy, gave her to underſtand that he had lately been favoured with a letter from Godfrey, that he had actually intended to ſet out next morning on a viſit to Mrs. Gauntlet, which (now that he was ſo happy as to meet with her) he would poſtpone, until he ſhould have the pleaſure of attending her to the country. After having thanked him for his polite intention, ſhe told him, that her mother was expected in town in a few days, and that ſhe herſelf had come to London ſome weeks ago, to give her attendance upon her aunt, who had been dangerouſly ill, but was now pretty well recovered.

Although the converſation of courſe turned upon general topics, during the entertainment he took all opportunities of being particular with his eyes, through which he conveyed a thouſand tender proteſtations. She ſaw and inwardly rejoiced at the humility of his looks; but, far from rewarding it with one approving glance, ſhe induſtriouſly avoided this ocular intercourſe, and rather coquetted with a young gentleman that ogled her from the oppoſite box. Peregrine's penetration eaſily detected her ſentiments, and he was nettled at her diſſimulation, which ſerved to confirm him in his unwarrantable deſigns upon her perſon. He perſiſted in his aſſiduities with indefatigable perſeverance; when the play was concluded, handed her and her companion into an hackney-coach, and

with difficulty was permitted to eſcort them to the houſe of Emilia's uncle, to whom our hero was introduced by the young lady, as an intimate friend of her brother Godfrey.

The old gentleman, who was no ſtranger to the nature of Peregrine's connection with his ſiſter's family, prevailed upon him to ſtay ſupper, and ſeemed particularly well pleaſed with his converſation and deportment, which, by the help of his natural ſagacity, he wonderfully adapted to the humour of his entertainer. After ſupper, when the ladies were withdrawn, and the citizen called for his pipe, our ſly adventurer followed his example. Though he abhorred the plant, he ſmoked with an air of infinite ſatisfaction, and expatiated upon the virtues of tobacco, as if he had been deeply concerned in the Virginia trade. In the progreſs of the diſcourſe, he conſulted the merchant's diſpoſition; and the national debt coming upon the carpet, held forth upon the funds like a profeſſed broker. When the alderman complained of the reſtrictions and diſcouragement of trade, his gueſt inveighed againſt exorbitant duties, with the nature of which he ſeemed as well acquainted as any commiſſioner of the cuſtoms; ſo that the uncle was aſtoniſhed at the extent of his knowledge, and expreſſed his ſurpriſe, that a gay young gentleman like him ſhould have found either leiſure or inclination to conſider ſubjects ſo foreign to the faſhionable amuſements of youth.

Pickle laid hold on this opportunity to tell him, that he was deſcended from a race of merchants; and that, early in life, he had made it his buſineſs to inſtruct himſelf in the different branches of trade, which he not only ſtudied as his family profeſſion, but alſo as the ſource of all our national riches and power. He then launched out in praiſe of commerce, and the promoters thereof; and, by way of contraſt, employed all his ridicule in drawing ſuch ludicrous pictures of the manners and education of what is called high life, that the trader's ſides were ſhaken by laughter, even to the danger of his life; and he looked upon our adventurer as a miracle of ſobriety and good ſenſe.

Having thus ingratiated himſelf with the uncle, Peregrine took his leave, and next day in the forenoon viſited the

niece in his chariot, after ſhe had been admoniſhed by her kinſman to behave with circumſpection, and cautioned againſt neglecting or diſcouraging the addreſſes of ſuch a valuable admirer.

CHAPTER LXXV.

He proſecutes his deſign upon Emilia with great art and perſeverance.

OUR adventurer, having by his hypocriſy obtained free acceſs to his miſtreſs, began the ſiege, by profeſſing the moſt ſincere contrition for his former levity, and imploring her forgiveneſs with ſuch earneſt ſupplication, that, guarded as ſhe was againſt his flattering arts, ſhe began to believe his proteſtations, which were even accompanied with tears, and abated a good deal of that ſeverity and diſtance ſhe had propoſed to maintain during this interview. She would not, however, favour him with the leaſt acknowledgement of a mutual paſſion, becauſe, in the midſt of his vows of eternal conſtancy and truth, he did not mention one ſyllable of wedlock, though he was now entirely maſter of his own conduct; and this conſideration created a doubt, which fortified her againſt all his attacks: Yet, what her diſcretion would have concealed, was diſcovered by her eyes, which, in ſpite of all her endeavours, breathed forth complacency and love. For her inclination was flattered by her own ſelf-ſufficiency, which imputed her admirer's ſilence in that particular to the hurry and perturbation of his ſpirits, and perſuaded her, that he could not poſſibly regard her with any other than honourable intentions.

The inſidious lover exulted in the tenderneſs of her looks, from which he preſaged a complete victory; but, that he might not overſhoot himſelf by his own precipitation, he would not run the riſk of declaring himſelf, until her heart ſhould be ſo far entangled within his ſnares, as that neither the ſuggeſtions of honour, prudence, or pride, ſhould be able to diſengage it. Armed with this reſolution, he reſtrained the impatience of his temper within the limits of the moſt delicate deportment. After

having ſolicited and obtained permiſſion to attend her to the next opera, he took her by the hand, and preſſing it to his lips in the moſt reſpectful manner, went away, leaving her in a moſt whimſical ſtate of ſuſpence, chequered with an intereſting viciſſitude of hope and fear.

On the appointed day, he appeared again about five o'clock in the afternoon, and found her native charms ſo much improved by the advantages of dreſs, that he was tranſported with admiration and delight; and, while he conducted her to the Hay-market, could ſcarce bridle the impetuoſity of his paſſion, ſo as to obſerve the forbearing maxims he had adopted. When ſhe entered the pit, he had abundance of food for the gratification of his vanity; for, in a moment, ſhe eclipſed all the female part of the audience, each individual allowing in her own heart, that the ſtranger was by far the handſomeſt woman there preſent, except herſelf.

Here it was that our hero enjoyed a double triumph; he was vain of this opportunity to enhance his reputation for gallantry among the ladies of faſhion who knew him, and proud of an occaſion to diſplay his quality acquaintance to Emilia, that ſhe might entertain the greater idea of the conqueſt ſhe had made, and pay the more deference to his importance in the ſequel of his addreſſes. That he might profit as much as poſſible by this ſituation, he went up and accoſted every perſon in the pit, with whom he ever had the leaſt communication, whiſpered and laughed with an affected air of familiarity, and even bowed at a diſtance to ſome of the nobility, on the ſlender foundation of having ſtood near them at court, or preſented them with a pinch of rapee at White's chocolate houſe.

This ridiculous oſtentation, though now practiſed with a view of promoting his deſign, was a weakneſs, that, in ſome degree, infected the whole of his behaviour; for nothing gave him ſo much joy in converſation, as an opportunity of giving the company to underſtand how well he was with perſons of diſtinguiſhed rank and character: He would often (for example) obſerve, as it were occaſionally, that the Duke of G—— was one of the beſt natured men in the world, and illuſtrate this aſſertion by ſome inſtance of his affability, in which he himſelf was

concerned: Then, by an abrupt tranſition, he would repeat ſome repartee of Lady T——, and mention a certain *bon mot* of the Earl of C———, which was uttered in his hearing.

Abundance of young men, in this manner, make free with the names, though they have never had acceſs to the perſons of the nobility; but this was not the caſe with Peregrine, who, in conſideration of his appearance and ſuppoſed fortune, together with the advantage of his introduction, was by this time freely admitted to the tables of the great.

In his return with Emilia from the opera, though he ſtill maintained the moſt ſcrupulous decorum in his behaviour, he plied her with the moſt paſſionate expreſſions of love, ſqueezed her hand with great fervency, proteſted that his whole ſoul was engroſſed by her idea, and that he could not exiſt independent of her favour. Pleaſed as ſhe was with his warm and pathetic addreſſes, together with the reſpectful manner of his making love, ſhe yet had prudence and reſolution ſufficient to contain her tenderneſs, which was ready to run over; being fortified againſt his arts, by reflecting, that, if his aim was honourable, it was now his buſineſs to declare it. On this conſideration ſhe refuſed to make any ſerious reply to his earneſt expoſtulations, but affected to receive them as the undetermined effuſions of gallantry and good breeding.

This fictitious gaiety and good humour, though it baffled his hope of extorting from her an acknowledgement of which he might have taken immediate advantage, nevertheleſs encouraged him to obſerve (as the chariot paſſed along the Strand), that the night was far advanced; that ſupper would certainly be over before they could reach her uncle's houſe; and to propoſe, that he ſhould wait upon her to ſome place, where they might be accommodated with a ſlight refreſhment. She was offended at the freedom of this propoſal, which, however, ſhe treated as a joke, thanking him for his courteous offer, and aſſuring him, that when ſhe ſhould be diſpoſed for a tavern treat, he alone ſhould have the honour of beſtowing it.

Her kinſman being engaged with company abroad, and her aunt retired to reſt, he had the good fortune to enjoy a *tete-a-tete* with her during a whole hour, which he em-

ployed with ſuch conſummate ſkill, that her caution was almoſt overcome. He not only aſſailed her with the artillery of ſighs, vows, prayers, and tears, but even pawned his honour in behalf of his love. He ſwore with many imprecations, that although her heart were ſurrendered to him at diſcretion, there was a principle within him, which would never allow him to injure ſuch innocence and beauty; and the tranſports of his paſſion had, upon this occaſion, ſo far over-ſhot his purpoſe, that if ſhe had demanded an explanation, while he was thus agitated, he would have engaged himſelf to her wiſh by ſuch ties as he could not break with any regard to his reputation. But from ſuch expoſtulation ſhe was deterred, partly by pride, and partly by the dread of finding herſelf miſtaken in ſuch an intereſting conjecture. She therefore enjoyed the preſent flattering appearance of her fate, was prevailed upon to accept the jewels, which he purchaſed with part of his winning at Bath, and, with the moſt inchanting condeſcenſion, ſubmitted to a warm embrace, when he took his leave, after having obtained permiſſion to viſit her, as often as his inclination and convenience would permit.

In his return to his own lodgings, he was buoyed up with his ſucceſs to an extravagance of hope, already congratulated himſelf upon his triumph over Emilia's virtue, and began to project future conqueſts among the moſt dignified characters of the female ſex. But his attention was not at all diſſipated by theſe vain reflections; he reſolved to concentrate the whole exertion of his ſoul upon the execution of his preſent plan, deſiſted, in the mean time, from all other ſchemes of pleaſure, intereſt, and ambition, and took lodgings in the city, for the more commodious accompliſhment of his purpoſe.

While our lover's imagination was thus agreeably regaled, his miſtreſs did not enjoy her expectations, without the intervention of doubts and anxiety. His ſilence touching the final aim of his addreſſes, was a myſtery on which ſhe was afraid of exerciſing her ſagacity; and her uncle tormented her with inquiries into the circumſtances of Peregrine's profeſſions and deportment. Rather than give this relation the leaſt cauſe of ſuſpicion, which muſt have cut off all intercourſe betwixt her and her admirer,

ſhe ſaid every thing which ſhe thought would ſatisfy his care and concern for her welfare; and, in conſequence of ſuch repreſentation, ſhe enjoyed, without reſerve, the company of our adventurer, who proſecuted his plan with ſurpriſing eagerneſs and perſeverance.

CHAPTER LXXVI.

He prevails upon Emilia to accompany him to a maſquerade, makes a treacherous attempt upon her affection, and meets with a deſerved repulſe.

SCARCE a night elapſed in which he did not conduct her to ſome public entertainment. When, by the dint of his inſidious carriage, he thought himſelf in full poſſeſſion of her confidence and affection, he lay in wait for an opportunity; and hearing her obſerve in converſation, that ſhe had never been at a maſquerade, begged leave to attend her to the next ball; at the ſame time extendiug his invitation to the young lady in whoſe company he had found her at the play, ſhe being preſent when this ſubject of diſcourſe was introduced. He had flattered himſelf, that this gentlewoman would decline the propoſal, as ſhe was a perſon ſeemingly of a demure diſpoſition, who had been born and bred in the city, where ſuch diverſions are looked upon as ſcenes of lewdneſs and debauchery. For once, however, he reckoned without his hoſt; curioſity is as prevalent in the city as at the court end of the town: Emilia no ſooner ſignified her aſſent to his propoſal, than her friend, with an air of ſatisfaction, agreed to make one of the party; and he was obliged to thank her for that complaiſance which laid him under infinite mortification. He ſet his genius at work, to invent ſome ſcheme for preventing her unſeaſonable intruſion. Had an opportunity offered, he would have acted as her phyſician, and adminiſtered a medicine that would have laid her under the neceſſity of ſtaying at home: But his acquaintance with her being too ſlight to furniſh him with the means of executing this expedient, he deviſed another, which was practiſed with all imaginable ſucceſs. Underſtanding that her grandmother had left her a ſum of money independ-

ent of her parents, he conveyed a letter to her mother, intimating, that her daughter, on pretence of going to the maſquerade, intended to beſtow herſelf in marriage to a certain perſon, and that in a few days ſhe would be informed of the circumſtances of the whole intrigue, provided ſhe would keep this information ſecret, and contrive ſome excuſe for detaining the young lady at home, without giving her cauſe to believe ſhe was appriſed of her intention. This billet, ſubſcribed, *Your well-wiſher, and unknown humble ſervant*, had the deſired effect upon the careful matron, who, on the ball-day, feigned herſelf ſo extremely ill, that Miſs could not with any decency quit her mamma's apartment; and therefore ſent her apology to Emilia in the afternoon, immediately after the arrival of Peregrine, who pretended to be very much afflicted with the diſappointment, while his heart throbbed with a tranſport of joy.

About ten o'clock the lovers ſet out for the Hay-market, he being dreſſed in the habit of Pantaloon, and ſhe in that of Columbine; and they had ſcarce entered the houſe, when the muſic ſtruck up, the curtain was withdrawn, and the whole ſcene diſplayed at once, to the admiration of Emilia, whoſe expectation was infinitely ſurpaſſed by this exhibition. Our gallant having conducted her through all the different apartments, and deſcribed the economy of the place, led her into the circle, and, in their turn, they danced ſeveral minuets; then going to the ſide-board, he prevailed upon her to eat ſome ſweetmeats and drink a glaſs of Champagne. After a ſecond review of the company, they engaged in country-dances, at which exerciſe they continued, until our adventurer concluded that his partner's blood was ſufficiently warmed for the proſecution of his deſign. On this ſuppoſition, which was built upon her declaring that ſhe was thirſty and fatigued, he perſuaded her to take a little refreſhment and repoſe; and, for that purpoſe, handed her down ſtairs into the eating-room, where, having ſeated her on the floor, he preſented her with a glaſs of wine and water; and, as ſhe complained of being faint, enriched the draught with ſome drops of a certain elixir, which he recommended as a moſt excellent reſtorative, though it was no other than a ſtimulating tincture, which he had treacherouſly

provided for the occaſion. Having ſwallowed this potion, by which her ſpirits were manifeſtly exhilerated, ſhe ate a ſlice of ham, with the wing of a cold pullet, and concluded the meal with a glaſs of Burgundy, which ſhe drank at the earneſt entreaty of her admirer. Theſe extraordinary cordials co-operating with the ferment of her blood, which was heated by violent motion, could not fail to affect the conſtitution of a delicate young creature, who was naturally ſprightly and volatile. Her eyes began to ſparkle with unuſual fire and vivacity, a thouſand brilliant ſallies of wit eſcaped her, and every maſk that accoſted her underwent ſome ſmarting repartee.

Peregrine, overjoyed at the ſucceſs of his adminiſtration, propoſed that they ſhould reſume their places at the country-dances, with a view to promote and aſſiſt the efficacy of his elixir; and, when he thought her diſpoſition was properly adapted for the theme, began to ply her with all the elocution of love. In order to elevate his own ſpirits to that pitch of reſolution which his ſcheme required, he drank two whole bottles of Burgundy, which inflamed his paſſion to ſuch a degree, that he found himſelf capable of undertaking and perpetrating any ſcheme for the gratification of his deſire.

Emilia, warmed by ſo many concurring incentives, in favour of the man ſhe loved, abated conſiderably of her wonted reſerve, liſtened to his proteſtations with undiſſembled pleaſure, and, in the confidence of her ſatisfaction, even owned him abſolute maſter of her affections. Raviſhed with this confeſſion, he now deemed himſelf on the brink of reaping the delicious fruits of his art and aſſiduity; and the morning being already pretty far advanced, aſſented with rapture to the firſt propoſal ſhe made of retiring to her lodgings. The blinds of the chariot being pulled up, he took advantage of the favourable ſituation of her thoughts; and, on pretence of being whimſical, in conſequence of the wine he had ſwallowed, claſped her in his arms, and imprinted a thouſand kiſſes on her pouting lips, a freedom which ſhe pardoned as the privilege of intoxication. While he thus indulged himſelf with impunity, the carriage halted, and Pipes opening the door, his maſter handed her into the paſſage, before ſhe perceived that it was not her uncle's houſe at which they had alighted.

Alarmed at this diſcovery, ſhe, with ſome confuſion, deſired to know his reaſon for conducting her to a ſtrange place at theſe hours: But he made no reply, until he had led her into an apartment, when he gave her to underſtand, that, as her uncle's family muſt be diſturbed by her going thither ſo late in the night, and the ſtreets near Temple-bar were infeſted by a multitude of robbers and cut-throats, he had ordered his coachman to halt at this houſe, which was kept by a relation of his, a mighty good ſort of a gentlewoman, who would be proud of an opportunity to accommodate a perſon for whom he was known to entertain ſuch tenderneſs and eſteem.

Emilia had too much penetration to be impoſed upon by this plauſible pretext: In ſpite of her partiality for Peregrine, which had never been inflamed to ſuch a pitch of complacency before, ſhe comprehended his whole plan in a twinkling. Though her blood boiled with indignation, ſhe thanked him with an affected air of ſerenity for his kind concern, and expreſſed her obligation to his couſin; but, at the ſame time, inſiſted upon going home, leſt her abſence ſhould terrify her uncle and aunt, who, ſhe knew, would not retire to reſt till her return.

He urged her, with a thouſand remonſtrances, to conſult her own eaſe and ſafety, promiſing to ſend Pipes into the city, for the ſatisfaction of her relations: But, finding her obſtinately deaf to his entreaties, he aſſured her, that he would, in a few minutes, comply with her requeſt; and, in the mean time, begged ſhe would fortify herſelf againſt the cold with a cordial, which he poured out in her preſence, and which (now that her ſuſpicion was aroused) ſhe refuſed to taſte, notwithſtanding all his importunities. He then fell on his knees before her, and the tears guſhing from his eyes, ſwore that his paſſion was wound up to ſuch a pitch of impatience, that he could no longer live upon the unſubſtantial food of expectation; and that, if ſhe would not vouchſafe to crown his happineſs, he would forthwith ſacrifice himſelf to her diſdain. Such an abrupt addreſs, accompanied with all the ſymptoms of frantic agitation, could not fail to perplex and affright the gentle Emilia, who, after ſome recollection, replied with a reſolute tone, that ſhe could not ſee what reaſon he had to complain of her reſerve, which ſhe was

not at liberty to lay entirely aſide, until he ſhould have avowed his intentions in form, and obtained the ſanction of thoſe whom it was her duty to obey. "Divine creature! (cried he, ſeizing her hand, and preſſing it to his lips), it is from you alone I hope for that condeſcenſion, which would overwhelm me with tranſports of celeſtial bliſs. The ſentiments of parents are ſordid, ſilly, and confined: Mean not then to ſubject my paſſion to ſuch low reſtrictions as were calculated for the purpoſes of common life. My love is too delicate and refined to wear thoſe vulgar fetters, which ſerve only to deſtroy the merit of voluntary affection, and to upbraid a man inceſſantly with the articles of compulſion, under which he lies. My dear angel! ſpare me the mortification of being compelled to love you, and reign ſole empreſs of my heart and fortune. I will not affront you ſo much as to talk of ſettlements; my all is at your diſpoſal. In this pocket-book are notes to the amount of two thouſand pounds; do me the pleaſure to accept of them; to-morrow I will lay ten thouſand more in your lap. In a word, you ſhall be miſtreſs of my whole eſtate, and I ſhall think myſelf happy in living dependent on your bounty!"

Heavens! what were the emotions of the virtuous, the ſenſible, the delicate, the tender Emilia's heart, when ſhe heard this inſolent declaration from the mouth of a man whom ſhe had honoured with her affection and eſteem! It was not ſimply horror, grief, or indignation, that ſhe felt, in conſequence of this unworthy treatment, but the united pangs of all together, which produced a ſort of hyſteric laugh, while ſhe told him that ſhe could not help admiring his generoſity.

Deceived by this convulſion, and the ironical compliment that attended it, the lover thought he had already made great progreſs in his operations, and that it was now his buſineſs to ſtorm the fort by a vigorous aſſault, that he might ſpare her the confuſion of yielding without reſiſtance. Poſſeſſed by this vain ſuggeſtion, he ſtarted up, and, folding her in his arms, began to obey the furious dictate of his unruly and ungenerous deſire. With an air of cool determination, ſhe demanded a parley; and when, upon her repeated requeſt, he granted it, addreſſed herſelf to him in theſe words, while her eyes gleamed

with all the dignity of the moſt awful reſentment. "Sir, I ſcorn to upbraid you with a repetition of your former vows and proteſtations, nor will I recapitulate the little arts you have practiſed to enſnare my heart; becauſe, though by dint of the moſt perfidious diſſimulation you have found means to deceive my opinion, your utmoſt efforts have never been able to lull the vigilance of my conduct, or to engage my affection beyond the power of diſcarding you without a tear, whenever my honour ſhould demand ſuch a ſacrifice. Sir, you are unworthy of my concern or regret, and the ſigh that now ſtruggles from my breaſt is the reſult of ſorrow, for my own want of diſcernment. As for your preſent attempt upon my chaſtity, I deſpiſe your power, as I deteſt your intention. Though, under the maſk of the moſt delicate reſpect, you have decoyed me from the immediate protection of my friends, and contrived other impious ſtratagems to ruin my peace and reputation, I confide too much in my own innocence, and the authority of the law, to admit one thought of fear, much leſs to ſink under the horror of this ſhocking ſituation, into which I have been ſeduced. Sir, your behaviour on this occaſion is, in all reſpects, low and contemptible: For, ruffian as you are, you durſt not harbour the thought of executing your execrable ſcheme, while you knew my brother was near enough to prevent or revenge the inſult; ſo that you muſt not only be a treacherous villain, but alſo a moſt deſpicable coward." Having expreſſed herſelf in this manner, with a moſt majeſtic ſeverity of aſpect, ſhe opened the door, and, walking down ſtairs with ſurpriſing reſolution, committed herſelf to the care of a watchman, who accommodated her with a hackney chair, in which ſhe was ſafely conveyed to her uncle's houſe.

Meanwhile, the lover was ſo confounded and overawed by theſe cutting reproaches, and her animated behaviour, that all his reſolution forſook him, and he found himſelf not only incapable of obſtructing her retreat, but even of uttering one ſyllable to deprecate her wrath, or extenuate the guilt of his own conduct. The nature of his diſappointment, and the keen remorſe that ſeized him, when he reflected upon the diſhonourable footing on which his character ſtood with Emilia, raiſed ſuch per-

turbation in his mind, that his ſilence was ſucceeded by a violent fit of diſtraction, during which he raved like a bedlamite, and acted a thouſand extravagancies, which convinced the people of the houſe (a certain bagnio), that he had actually loſt his wits. Pipes, with great concern, adopted the ſame opinion; and, being aſſiſted by the waiters, hindered him, by main force, from running out and purſuing the fair fugitive, whom, in his delirium, he alternately curſed and commended, with horrid imprecations and laviſh applauſe. His faithful valet, having waited two whole hours, in hope of ſeeing this guſt of paſſion overblown, and perceiving that the paroxyſm ſeemed rather to increaſe, very prudently ſent for a phyſician of his maſter's acquaintance, who, having conſidered the circumſtances and ſymptoms of the diſorder, directed that he ſhould be plentifully blooded, without loſs of time, and preſcribed a draught to compoſe the tumult of his ſpirits. Theſe orders being punctually performed, he grew more calm and tractable, recovered his reflection ſo far as to be aſhamed of the ecſtaſy he had undergone, ſuffered himſelf quietly to be undreſſed and put to bed, where the fatigue, occaſioned by his exerciſe at the maſquerade, co-operated with the preſent diſſipation of his ſpirits to lull him into a profound ſleep, which greatly tended to the preſervation of his intellects: Not that he found himſelf in a ſtate of perfect tranquillity when he waked about noon. The remembrance of what had paſſed overwhelmed him with mortification. Emilia's invectives ſtill ſounded in his ears: And, while he deeply reſented her diſdain, he could not help admiring her ſpirit, and his heart did homage to her charms.

CHAPTER LXXVII.

He endeavours to reconcile himſelf to his miſtreſs, and expoſtulates with the uncle, who forbids him the houſe.

In this ſtate of diviſion, he went home to his own lodgings in a chair; and while he deliberated with himſelf whether he ſhould relinquiſh the purſuit, and endeavour to baniſh her idea from his breaſt, or go immediately and

humble himſelf before his exaſperated miſtreſs, and offer his hand as an atonement for his crime, his ſervant put in his hand a packet, which had been delivered by a ticket-porter at the door. He no ſooner perceived that the ſuperſcription was in Emilia's hand-writing, than he gueſſed the nature of the contents; and opening the ſeal with diſordered eagerneſs, found the jewels he had given to her, encloſed in a billet, couched in theſe words.

"THAT I may have no cauſe to reproach myſelf with having retained the leaſt memorial of a wretch whom I equally deſpiſe and abhor, I take this opportunity of reſtoring theſe ineffectual inſtruments of his infamous deſign upon the honour of

EMILIA."

His chagrin was ſo much galled and inflamed at the bitterneſs of this contemptuous meſſage, that he gnawed his fingers till the blood ran over his nails, and even wept with vexation. Sometimes he vowed revenge againſt her haughty virtue, and reviled himſelf for his precipitate declaration, before his ſcheme was brought to maturity; then he would conſider her behaviour with reverence and regard, and bow before the irreſiſtible power of her attractions. In ſhort, his breaſt was torn by conflicting paſſions; love, ſhame, and remorſe, contended with vanity, ambition, and revenge; and the ſuperiority was ſtill doubtful, when headſtrong deſire interpoſed, and decided in favour of an attempt towards a reconciliation with the offended fair.

Impelled by this motive, he ſet out in the afternoon for the houſe of her uncle, not without hopes of that tender enjoyment, which never fails to attend an accommodation betwixt two lovers of taſte and ſenſibility. Though the conſciouſneſs of his treſpaſs encumbered him with an air of awkward confuſion, he was too confident of his own qualifications and addreſs to deſpair of forgiveneſs; and, by that time he arrived at the citizen's gate, he had conned a very artful and pathetic harangue, which he propoſed to utter in his own behalf, laying the blame of his conduct on the impetuoſity of his paſſion, increaſed by the Burgundy, which he had too liberally drank: But he

did not meet with an opportunity to avail himſelf of this preparation. Emilia, ſuſpecting that he would take ſome ſtep of this kind to retrieve her favour, had gone abroad on pretence of viſiting, after having ſignified to her kinſman her reſolution to avoid the company of Peregrine, on account of ſome ambiguities which (ſhe ſaid) were laſt night remarkable in his demeanour, at the maſquerade. She choſe to inſinuate her ſuſpicion in theſe hints, rather than give an explicit detail of the young man's diſhonourable contrivance, which might have kindled the reſentment of the family to ſome dangerous pitch of animoſity and revenge.

Our adventurer, finding himſelf baffled in his expectation of ſeeing her, inquired for the old gentleman, with whom he thought he had influence enough to make his apology good, in caſe he ſhould find him propoſſeſſed by the young lady's information. But here too he was diſappointed, the uncle having gone to dine in the country, and his wife was indiſpoſed; ſo that he had no pretext for ſtaying in the houſe till the return of his charmer. Being, however, fruitful of expedients, he diſmiſſed his chariot, and took poſſeſſion of a room in a tavern, the windows of which fronted the merchant's gate; and there he propoſed to watch until he ſhould ſee her approach. This ſcheme he put in practice with indefatigable patience, though it was not attended with the expected ſucceſs.

Emilia, whoſe caution was equally vigilant and commendable, foreſeeing that ſhe might be expoſed to the ſertility of his invention, came home by a private paſſage, and entered by a poſtern, which was altogether unknown to her admirer; and her uncle did not arrive until it was ſo late that he could not, with any decency, demand a conference.

Next morning, he did not fail to preſent himſelf at the door, and his miſtreſs being denied by her own expreſs direction, inſiſted upon ſeeing the maſter of the houſe, who received him with ſuch coldneſs of civility, as plainly gave him to underſtand, that he was acquainted with the diſpleaſure of his niece. He, therefore, with an air of candour, told the citizen, he could eaſily perceive, by his behaviour, that he was the confident of Miſs Emily,

of whom he was come to aſk pardon for the offence he had given; and did not doubt, if he could be admitted to her preſence, that he ſhould be able to convince her, that he had not erred intentionally, or at leaſt propoſe ſuch reparation as would effectually atone for his fault.

To this remonſtrance the merchant, without any ceremony or circumlocution, anſwered, that though he was ignorant of the nature of his offence, he was very certain, that it muſt have been ſomething very flagrant that could irritate his niece to ſuch a degree, againſt a perſon for whom ſhe had formerly a moſt particular regard. He owned, ſhe had declared her intention to renounce his acquaintance for ever, and, doubtleſs, ſhe had good reaſon for ſo doing; neither would he undertake to promote an accommodation, unleſs he would give him full power to treat on the ſcore of matrimony, which he ſuppoſed would be the only means of evincing his own ſincerity, and obtaining Emilia's forgiveneſs.

Peregrine's pride was kindled by this blunt declaration, which he could not help conſidering as the reſult of a ſcheme concerted betwixt the young lady and her uncle, in order to take the advantage of his heat. He therefore replied, with manifeſt ſigns of diſguſt, that he did not apprehend there was any occaſion for a mediator to reconcile the difference betwixt Emilia and him; and that all he deſired was an opportunity of pleading in his own behalf.

The citizen frankly told him, that, as his niece had expreſſed an earneſt deſire of avoiding his company, he would not put the leaſt conſtraint upon her inclination; and, in the mean time, gave him to know, that he was particularly engaged.

Our hero, glowing with indignation at this ſupercilious treatment, "I was in the wrong (ſaid he) to look for good manners, ſo far on this ſide of Temple-bar: But you muſt give me leave to tell you, Sir, that, unleſs I am favoured with an interview with Miſs Gauntlet, I ſhall conclude, that you have actually laid a conſtrant upon her inclination, for ſome ſiniſter purpoſes of your own." "Sir (replied the old gentleman), you are welcome to make what concluſions ſhall ſeem good unto your own imagination; but pray be ſo good as to allow me the

privilege of being maſter in my own houſe." So ſaying, he very complaiſantly ſhowed him to the door; and our lover being diffident of his own temper, as well as afraid of being uſed with greater indignity, in a place where his perſonal proweſs would only ſerve to heighten his diſgrace, quitted the houſe in a tranſport of rage, which he could not wholly ſuppreſs, telling the landlord, that, if his age did not protect him, he would have chaſtiſed him for his inſolent behaviour.

CHAPTER LXXVIII.

He projects a violent ſcheme, in conſequence of which he is involved in a moſt fatiguing adventure, which greatly tends towards the augmentation of his chagrin.

THUS debarred of perſonal communication with his miſtreſs, he eſſayed to retrieve her good graces by the moſt ſubmiſſive and pathetic letters, which he conveyed by divers artifices to her peruſal; but, reaping no manner of benefit from theſe endeavours, his paſſion acquired a degree of impatience little inferior to downright frenzy; and he determined to run every riſk of life, fortune, and reputation, rather than deſiſt from his unjuſtifiable purſuit. Indeed, his reſentment was now as deeply concerned as his love, and each of theſe paſſions equally turbulent and loud in demanding gratification. He kept centinels continually in pay, to give him notice of her outgoings, in expectation of finding ſome opportunity to carry her off; but her circumſpection entirely fruſtrated this deſign, for ſhe ſuſpected every thing of that ſort from a diſpoſition like his, and regulated her motions accordingly.

Baffled by her prudence and penetration, he altered his plan. On pretence of being called to his country houſe by ſome affair of importance, he departed from London, and, taking lodgings at a farmer's houſe, that ſtood near the road through which ſhe muſt have neceſſarily paſſed, in her return to her mother, concealed himſelf from all intercourſe, except with his valet de chambre and Pipes, who had orders to ſcour the country, and reconnoitre every horſe, coach, or carriage, that ſhould appear on that

highway, with a view of intercepting his Amanda in her paſſage.

He had waited in this ambuſcade a whole week, when his valet gave him notice, that he and his fellow-ſcout had diſcovered a chaiſe and ſix, driving at full ſpeed towards them; upon which they had flapped their hats over their eyes, ſo as as they might not be known, in caſe they ſhould be ſeen, and concealed themſelves behind a hedge, from whence they could perceive in the carriage, as it paſſed, a young man plainly dreſſed, with a lady in a maſk, of the exact ſize, ſhape, and air of Emilia; and that Pipes followed them at a diſtance, while he rode back to communicate this piece of intelligence.

Peregrine would ſcarce allow him time to conclude his information. He ran down to the ſtable, where his horſe was kept ready ſaddled for the purpoſe, and, never doubting that the lady in queſtion was his miſtreſs, attended by one of her uncle's clerks, mounted immediately, and rode full gallop after the chaiſe, which (when he had proceeded about two miles) he underſtood from Pipes, had put up at a neighbouring inn. Though his inclination prompted him to enter her apartment without farther delay, he ſuffered himſelf to be diſſuaded from taking ſuch a precipitate ſtep, by his privy counſellor, who obſerved, that it would be impracticable to execute his purpoſe of conveying her againſt her will from a public inn, that ſtood in the midſt of a populous village, which would infallibly riſe in her defence. He adviſed him therefore to lie in wait for the chaiſe, in ſome remote and private part of the road, where they might accompliſh their aim without difficulty or danger. In conſequence of this admonition, our adventurer ordered Pipes to reconnoitre the inn, that ſhe might not eſcape another way, while he and the valet, in order to avoid being ſeen, took a circuit by an unfrequented path, and placed themſelves in ambuſh, on a ſpot which they choſe for the ſcene of their achievement. Here they tarried a full hour, without ſeeing the carriage, or hearing from their centinel: So that the youth, unable to exert his patience one moment longer, left the foreigner in his ſtation, and rode back to his faithful lacquey, who aſſured him, that the travellers

had not yet hove up their anchor, or proceeded on their voyage.

Notwithſtanding this intimation, Pickle began to entertain ſuch alarming ſuſpicions, that he could not refrain from advancing to the gate, and inquire for the company which had lately arrived in a chaiſe and ſix. The innkeeper, who was not at all pleaſed with the behaviour of thoſe paſſengers, did not think proper to obſerve the inſtructions he had received; on the contrary, he plainly told him, that the chaiſe did not halt, but only entered at one door, and went out at the other, with a view to deceive thoſe who purſued it, as he gueſſed from the words of the gentleman, who had earneſtly deſired that his route might be concealed from any perſon who ſhould inquire about their motions. "As for my own peart, meaſter (continued this charitable publican), I believes as how they are no better than they ſhould be, elſe they wouldn't be in ſuch a deadly fear of being overtaken. Methinks (ſaid I, when I ſaw them in ſuch a woundy pother to be gone), oddſheartlikins! this muſt be ſome London 'prentice running away with his meaſter's daughter, as ſure as I'm a living ſoul. But, be he who he will, ſartin it is, a has nothing of the gentleman about en; for, thof a aſked ſuch a favour, a never once put hand in pocket, or ſaid, "Dog, will you drink?" Howſomever, that don't argufy in reverence of his being in a hurry; and a man may be ſometimes a little too judgmatical in his conjectures." In all probability, this loquacious landlord would have ſerved the traveller effectually, had Peregrine heard him to an end; but this impetuous youth, far from liſtening to the ſequel of his obſervations, interrupted him in the beginning of his career, by aſking eagerly which road they followed; and, having received the inn-keeper's directions, clapped ſpurs to his horſe, commanding Pipes to make the valet acquainted with his courſe, that they might attend him with all imaginable diſpatch.

By the publican's account of their conduct, his former opinion was fully confirmed. He plied his ſteed to the height of his mettle; and ſo much was his imagination engroſſed by the proſpect of having Emilia in his power, that he did not perceive the road on which he travelled

was quite different from that which led to the habitation of Mrs. Gauntlet. The valet de chambre was an utter ſtranger to that part of the country; and, as for Mr. Pipes, ſuch conſiderations were altogether foreign to the economy of his reflection.

Ten long miles had our hero rode, when his eyes were bleſſed with the ſight of the chaiſe aſcending an hill, at the diſtance of a good league; upon which he doubled his diligence in ſuch a manner, that he gained upon the carriage every minute, and at length approached ſo near to it, that he could diſcern the lady and her conductor, with their heads thruſt out at the windows, looking back, and ſpeaking to the driver alternately, as if they earneſtly beſought him to augment the ſpeed of his cattle.

Being thus, as it were, in ſight of port, while he croſſed the road, his horſe happened to plunge into a cart rut with ſuch violence, that he was thrown ſeveral yards over his head; and the beaſt's ſhoulder being ſlipped by the fall, he found himſelf diſabled from plucking the fruit, which was almoſt within his reach; for he had left his ſervants at a conſiderable diſtance behind him; and although they had been at his back, and ſupplied him with another horſe, they were ſo indifferently mounted, that he could not reaſonably expect to overtake the flyers, who profited ſo much by this diſaſter, that the chaiſe vaniſhed in a moment.

It may be eaſily conceived how a young man of his diſpoſition paſſed his time, in this tantalizing ſituation. He ejaculated with great fervency; but his prayers were not the effects of reſignation. He ran back on foot, with incredible ſpeed, in order to meet his valet, whom he unhorſed in a twinkling; and, taking his ſeat, began to exerciſe his whip and ſpurs, after having ordered the Swiſs to follow him on the other gelding, and committed the lame hunter to the care of Pipes.

Matters being adjuſted in this manner, our adventurer proſecuted the race with all his might; and, having made ſome progreſs, was informed by a countryman, that the chaiſe had ſtruck off into another road, and, according to his judgment, was by that time about three miles a-head; though, in all probability, the horſes would not be able to hold out much longer, becauſe they ſeemed to

be quite ſpent when they paſſed his door. Encouraged by this intimation, Peregrine puſhed on with great alacrity, though he could not regain ſight of the deſired object, till the clouds of night began to deepen, and even then he enjoyed nothing more than a tranſient glimpſe; for the carriage was no ſooner ſeen, than ſhrouded again from his view. Theſe vexatious circumſtances animated his endeavours, while they irritated his chagrin: In ſhort, he continued his purſuit till the night was far advanced, and himſelf ſo uncertain about the object of his care, that he entered a ſolitary inn, with a view of obtaining ſome intelligence, when, to his infinite joy, he perceived the chaiſe ſtanding by itſelf, and the horſes panting in the yard. In full confidence of his having arrived at laſt at the goal of all his wiſhes, he alighted inſtantaneouſly, and, running up to the coachman, with a piſtol in his hand, commanded him, in an imperious tone, to conduct him to the lady's chamber, on pain of death. The driver, affrighted at this menacing addreſs, proteſted, with great humility, that he did not know whither his fare had retired; for that he himſelf was paid and diſmiſſed from the ſervice, becauſe he would not undertake to drive them all night croſs the country, without ſtopping to refreſh his horſes: But he promiſed to go in queſt of the waiter, who would ſhow him to their apartment. He was accordingly detached on that errand, while our hero ſtood centinel at the gate, till the arrival of his valet de chambre, who joining him by accident, before the coachman returned, relieved him in his watch; and then the young gentleman, exaſperated at his meſſenger's delay, ruſhed, with fury in his eyes, from room to room, denouncing vengeance upon the whole family; but he did not meet with one living ſoul, until he entered the garret, where he found the landlord and his wife in bed. This chicken-hearted couple, by the light of a ruſh-candle that burned on the hearth, ſeeing a ſtranger burſt into the chamber, in ſuch a terrible attitude, were ſeized with conſternation; and, exalting their voices, in a moſt lamentable ſtrain, begged, for the paſſion of Chriſt, that he would ſpare their lives, and take all they had.

Peregrine gueſſing, from this exclamation, and the circumſtance of their being a-bed, that they miſtook him

for a robber, and were ignorant of that which he wanted to know, diſpelled their terror, by making them acquainted with the cauſe of his viſit, and deſired the huſband to get up with all poſſible diſpatch, in order to aſſiſt and attend him in his ſearch.

Thus reinforced, he rummaged every corner of the inn, and, at laſt, finding the hoſtler in the ſtable, was by him informed (to his unſpeakable mortification), that the gentleman and lady who arrived in the chaiſe, had immediately hired poſt-horſes for a certain village at the diſtance of fifteen miles, and departed without halting for the leaſt refreſhment. Our adventurer, mad with his diſappointment, mounted his horſe in an inſtant, and, with his attendant, took the ſame road, with full determination to die, rather than deſiſt from the proſecution of his deſign. He had, by this time, rode upwards of thirty miles ſince three o'clock in the afternoon; ſo that the horſes were almoſt quite jaded, and travelled this ſtage ſo ſlowly, that it was morning before they reached the place of their deſtination, where, far from finding the fugitives, he underſtood, that no ſuch perſons as he deſcribed had paſſed that way, and that, in all likelihood, they had taken a quite contrary direction, while, in order to miſlead him in his purſuit, they had amuſed the hoſtler with a falſe route. This conjecture was ſtrengthened by his perceiving (now for the firſt time) that he had deviated a conſiderable way from the road, through which they muſt have journeyed, in order to arrive at the place of her mother's reſidence; and theſe ſuggeſtions utterly deprived him of the ſmall remains of recollection which he had hitherto retained. His eyes rolled about, witneſſing rage and diſtraction; he foamed at the mouth, ſtamped upon the ground with great violence, uttered incoherent imprecations againſt himſelf and all mankind, and would have ſallied forth again, he knew not whither, upon the ſame horſe, which he had already almoſt killed with fatigue, had not his confident found means to quiet the tumult of his thoughts, and recal his reflection, by repreſenting the condition of the poor animals, and adviſing him to hire freſh horſes, and ride poſt acroſs the country, to the village in the neighbourhood of Mrs. Gauntlet's habitation, where they

ſhould infallibly intercept the daughter, provided they could get the ſtart of her upon the road.

Peregrine not only reliſhed, but forthwith acted in conformity with this good counſel. His own horſes were committed to the charge of the landlord, with directions for Pipes, in caſe he ſhould come in queſt of his maſter; and a couple of ſtout geldings being prepared, he and his valet took the road again, ſteering their courſe according to the motions of the poſt-boy, who undertook to be their guide. They had almoſt finiſhed the firſt ſtage, when they deſcried a poſt-chaiſe juſt halting at the inn where they propoſed to change horſes; upon which our adventurer, glowing with a moſt intereſting preſage, put his beaſt to the full ſpeed, and approached near enough to diſtinguiſh (as the travellers quitted the carriage) that he had at laſt come up with the very individual perſons whom he had purſued ſo long.

Fluſhed with this diſcovery, he galloped into the yard ſo ſuddenly, that the lady and her conductor ſcarce had time to ſhut themſelves up in a chamber, to which they retreated with great precipitation; ſo that the purſuer was now certain of having houſed his prey. That he might, however, leave nothing to fortune, he placed himſelf upon the ſtair by which they had aſcended to the apartment, and ſent up his compliments to the young lady, deſiring the favour of being admitted to her preſence, otherwiſe he ſhould be obliged to wave all ceremony, and take that liberty which ſhe would not give. The ſervant, having conveyed his meſſage through the key-hole, returned with an anſwer, importing, that ſhe would adhere to the reſolution ſhe had taken, and periſh, rather than comply with his will. Our adventurer, without ſtaying to make any rejoinder to this reply, ran up ſtairs, and, thundering at the door for entrance, was given to underſtand by the nymph's attendant, that a blunderbuſs was ready primed for his reception, and that he would do well to ſpare him the neceſſity of ſhedding blood in defence of a perſon who had put herſelf under his protection. "All the laws of the land (ſaid he) cannot now untie the knots by which we are bound together; and therefore I will guard her as my own property; ſo that you had better deſiſt from your fruitleſs attempt, and thereby conſult your own ſafety;

for, by the God that made me! I will diſcharge my piece upon you, as ſoon as you ſet your noſe within the door—and your blood be upon your own head." Theſe menaces, from a citizen's clerk, would have been ſufficient motives for Pickle to ſtorm the breach, although they had not been reinforced by that declaration, which informed him of Emilia's having beſtowed herſelf in marriage upon ſuch a contemptible rival. This ſole conſideration added wings to his impetuoſity, and he applied his foot to the door with ſuch irreſiſtible force, as burſted it open in an inſtant, entering at the ſame time with a piſtol ready cocked in his hand. His antagoniſt, inſtead of firing his blunderbuſs, when he ſaw him approach, ſtarted back with evident ſigns of ſurpriſe and conſternation, exclaiming, "Lord Jeſus! Sir, you are not the man! and, without doubt, are under ſome miſtake with regard to us."

Before Peregrine had time to anſwer this ſalutation, the lady, hearing it, advanced to him, and pulling off a maſk, diſcovered a face which he had never ſeen before. The Gorgon's head, according to the fables of antiquity, never had a more inſtantaneous or petrifying effect, than that which this countenance produced upon the aſtoniſhed youth. His eyes were fixed upon this unknown object, as if they had been attracted by the power of enchantment, his feet ſeemed rivetted to the ground, and, after having ſtood motionleſs for the ſpace of a few minutes, he dropped down in an apoplexy of diſappointment and deſpair. The Swiſs, who had followed him, ſeeing his maſter in this condition, lifted him up, and, laying him upon a bed in the next room, let him blood immediately, without heſitation, being always provided with a caſe of lancets, againſt all accidents on the road. To this foreſight our hero, in all probability, was indebted for his life. By virtue of a very copious evacuation, he recovered the uſe of his ſenſes; but the complication of fatigues and violent tranſports, which he had undergone, brewed up a dangerous fever in his blood; and a phyſician being called from the next market-town, ſeveral days elapſed before he would anſwer for his life.

CHAPTER LXXIX.

Peregrine ſends a meſſage to Mrs. Gauntlet, who rejects his propoſal. He repairs to the garriſon.

AT length, however, his conſtitution overcame his diſeaſe, though not before it had in a great meaſure tamed the fury of his diſpoſition, and brought him to a ſerious conſideration of his conduct. In this humiliation of his ſpirits, he reflected with ſhame and remorſe upon his treachery to the fair, the innocent Emilia; he remembered his former ſentiments in her favour, as well as the injunctions of his dying uncle; he recollected his intimacy with her brother, againſt which he had ſo baſely ſinned; and, revolving all the circumſtances of her conduct, found it ſo commendable, ſpirited, and noble, that he deemed her an object of ſufficient dignity to merit his honourable addreſſes, even though his duty had not been concerned in the deciſion: But, obligated as he was to make reparation to a worthy family, which he had ſo groſsly injured, he thought he could not manifeſt his reformation too ſoon; and, whenever he found himſelf able to hold the pen, wrote a letter to Mrs. Gauntlet, wherein he acknowledged, with many expreſſions of ſorrow and contrition, that he had acted a part altogether unbecoming a man of honour, and ſhould never enjoy the leaſt tranquillity of mind, until he ſhould have merited her forgiveneſs. He proteſted, that, although his happineſs entirely depended upon the determination of Emilia, he would even renounce all hope of being bleſſed with her favour, if ſhe could point out any other method of making reparation to that amiable young lady, but by laying his heart and fortune at her feet, and ſubmitting himſelf to her pleaſure during the remaining part of his life. He conjured her, therefore, in the moſt pathetic manner, to pardon him, in conſideration of his ſincere repentance, and to uſe her maternal influence with her daughter, ſo as that he might be permitted to wait upon her with a wedding-ring, as ſoon as his health would allow him to undertake the journey.

This explanation being diſpatched by Pipes, who had,

by this time, found his maſter, the young gentleman inquired about the couple whom he had ſo unfortunately purſued, and underſtood from his valet de chambre, who learned the ſtory from their own mouths, that the lady was the only daughter of a rich Jew, and her attendant no other than his apprentice, who had converted her to Chriſtianity, and married her at the ſame time; that this ſecret having taken air, the old Iſraelite had contrived a ſcheme to ſeparate them for ever; and they being appriz-ed of his intention, had found means to elope from his houſe, with a view of ſheltering themſelves in France, until the affair could be made up; that, ſeeing three men ride after them with ſuch eagerneſs and ſpeed, they never doubted that the purſuers were her father, and ſome friends or domeſtics, and on that ſuppoſition had fled with the utmoſt diſpatch and trepidation, until they had found themſelves happily undeceived, at that very inſtant when they expected nothing but miſchief and misfortune: Laſtly, the Swiſs gave him to underſtand, that, after having profeſſed ſome concern for his deplorable ſituation, and enjoyed a ſlight refreſhment, they had taken their departure for Dover, and, in all likelihood, were ſafely arrived at Paris.

In four and twenty hours after Pipes was charged with his commiſſion, he brought back an anſwer from the mother of Emilia, couched in theſe words—

"SIR,

"I RECEIVED the favour of yours, and am glad, for your own ſake, that you have attained a due ſenſe and conviction of your unkind and unchriſtian behaviour to poor Emy. I thank God, none of my children were ever ſo inſulted before. Give me leave to tell you, Sir, my daughter was no upſtart, without friends or education, but a young lady, as well bred, and better born, than moſt private gentlewomen in the kingdom; and therefore, though you had no eſteem for her perſon, you ought to have paid ſome regard to her family, which (no diſparagement to you, Sir) is more honourable than your own. As for your propoſal, Miſs Gauntlet will not hear of it, being that ſhe thinks her honour will not allow her to liſten to any terms of reconciliation; and ſhe is not yet

ſo deſtitute, as to embrace an offer to which ſhe has the leaſt objection. In the mean time, ſhe is ſo much indiſpoſed, that ſhe cannot poſſibly ſee company; ſo I beg you will not take the trouble of making a fruitleſs journey to this place. Perhaps your future conduct may deſerve her forgiveneſs; and really, as I am concerned for your happineſs (which you aſſure me depends upon her condeſcenſion), I wiſh with all my heart it may; and am (notwithſtanding all that has happened)

Your ſincere well-wiſher,

CECILIA GAUNTLET."

From this epiſtle, and the information of his meſſenger, our hero learned, that his miſtreſs had actually profited by his wild-gooſe chace, ſo as to make a ſafe retreat to her mother's houſe. Though ſorry to hear of her indiſpoſition, he was alſo piqued at her implacability, as well as at ſome ſtately paragraphs of the letter, in which (he thought) the good lady had conſulted her own vanity, rather than her good ſenſe. Theſe motives of reſentment helped him to bear his diſappointment like a philoſopher, eſpecially as he had now quieted his conſcience, in proffering to redreſs the injury he had done; and, moreover, found himſelf, with regard to his love, in a calm ſtate of hope and reſignation.

A ſeaſonable fit of illneſs is an excellent medicine for the turbulence of paſſion. Such a reformation had the fever produced in the economy of his thoughts, that he moralized like an apoſtle, and projected ſeveral prudential ſchemes for his future conduct.

In the mean time, as ſoon as his health was ſufficiently re-eſtabliſhed, he took a trip to the garriſon, in order to viſit his friends; and learned from Hatchway's own mouth, that he had broke the ice of courtſhip to his aunt, and that his addreſſes were now fairly afloat; though, when he firſt declared himſelf to the widow, after ſhe had been duly prepared for the occaſion, by her niece and the reſt of her friends, ſhe had received his propoſal with a becoming reſerve, and piouſly wept at the remembrance of her huſband, obſerving, that ſhe ſhould never meet with his fellow.

Peregrine promoted the lieutenant's ſuit with all his

influence; and, all Mrs. Trunnion's objections to the match being ſurmounted, it was determined, that the day of marriage ſhould be put off for three months, that her reputation might not ſuffer by a precipitate engagement. His next care was to give orders for erecting a plain marble monument to the memory of his uncle, on which the following inſcription, compoſed by the bridegroom, actually appeared in golden letters.

Here lies,
Foundered in a fathom and half,
The ſhell
Of
HAWSER TRUNNION, Eſq.
Formerly commander of a ſquadron
In his Majeſty's ſervice,
Who broach'd to, at five P. M. Oct. X.
In the year of his age
Threeſcore and nineteen.

He kept his guns always loaded,
And his tackle ready mann'd,
And never ſhowed his poop to the enemy,
Except when he took her in tow;
But,
His ſhot being expended,
His match burnt out,
And his upper works decayed,
He was ſunk
By Death's ſuperior weight of metal.
Nevertheleſs,
He will be weighed again
At the Great Day,
His rigging refitted,
And his timbers repaired,
And, with one broad-ſide,
Make his adverſary
Strike in his turn.

CHAPTER LXXX.

He returns to London, and meets with Cadwallader, who entertains him with many curious particulars. Crabtree founds the ducheſs, and undeceives Pickle, who, by an extraordinary accident, becomes acquainted with another lady of quality.

THE young gentleman having performed theſe laſt offices in honour of his deceaſed benefactor, and preſented Mr. Jolter to the long-expected living, which at this time happened to be vacant, returned to London, and reſumed his former gaiety—not that he was able to ſhake Emilia from his thought, or even to remember her without violent emotions; for, as he recovered his vigour, his former impatience recurred, and therefore he reſolved to plunge himſelf headlong into ſome intrigue, that might engage his paſſions, and amuſe his imagination.

A man of his accompliſhments could not fail to meet with a variety of ſubjects on which his gallantry would have been properly exerciſed; and this abundance diſtracted his choice, which at any time was apt to be influenced by caprice and whim. I have already obſerved, that he had lifted his view, through a matrimonial perſpective, as high as a lady of the firſt quality and diſtinction; and, now that he was refuſed by Miſs Gauntlet, and enjoyed a little reſpite from the agonies of that flame which her charms had kindled in his heart, he renewed his aſſiduities to her grace. Though he durſt not yet riſk an explanation, he enjoyed the pleaſure of ſeeing himſelf ſo well received in quality of a particular acquaintance, that he flattered himſelf with the belief of his having made ſome progreſs in her heart; and was confirmed in this conceited notion by the aſſurances of her woman, whom, by liberal largeſſes, he retained in his intereſt, becauſe ſhe found means to perſuade him that ſhe was in the confidence of her lady. But, notwithſtanding this encouragement, and the ſanguine ſuggeſtions of his own vanity, he dreaded the thoughts of expoſing himſelf to her ridicule and reſentment by a premature declaration, and determined to poſtpone his addreſſes, until he ſhould be more certified of the probability of ſucceeding in his attempt.

While he remained in this heſitation and ſuſpenſe, he was one morning very agreeably ſurpriſed with the appearance of his friend Crabtree, who, by the permiſſion of Pipes, to whom he was well known, entered his chamber before he was awake, and, by a violent ſhake of the ſhoulder, diſengaged him from the arms of ſleep. The firſt compliments having mutually paſſed, Cadwallader gave him to underſtand, that he had arrived in town over night in the ſtage-coach from Bath, and entertained him with ſuch a ludicrous account of his fellow-travellers, that Peregrine, for the firſt time ſince their parting, indulged himſelf in mirth, even to the hazard of ſuffocation.

Crabtree, having rehearſed theſe adventures, in ſuch a peculiarity of manner as added infinite ridicule to every circumſtance, and repeated every ſcandalous report which had circulated at Bath, after Peregrine's departure, was informed by the youth, that he harboured a deſign upon the perſon of ſuch a ducheſs, and in all appearance had no reaſon to complain of his reception; but that he would not venture to declare himſelf, until he ſhould be more aſcertained of her ſentiments: And therefore he begged leave to depend upon the intelligence of his friend Cadwallader, who, he knew, was admitted to her parties.

The miſanthrope, before he would promiſe his aſſiſtance, aſked if his proſpect verged towards matrimony? and our adventurer (who gueſſed the meaning of his queſtion) replying in the negative, he undertook the office of reconnoitring her inclination, proteſting at the ſame time, that he would never concern himſelf in any ſcheme that did not tend to the diſgrace and deception of all the ſex. On theſe conditions he eſpouſed the intereſt of our hero; and a plan was immediately concerted, in conſequence of which they met by accident at her grace's table. Pickle having ſtaid all the fore-part of the evening, and ſat out all the company, except the miſanthrope and a certain widow lady, who was ſaid to be in the ſecrets of my lady ducheſs, went away on pretence of an indiſpenſible engagement, that Crabtree might have a proper opportunity of making him the ſubject of converſation.

Accordingly, he had ſcarce quitted the apartment, when this cynic, attending him to the door with a look of moroſe diſdain, "Were I an abſolute prince (ſaid he), and

that fellow one of my ſubjects, I would order him to be clothed in ſackcloth, and he ſhould drive my aſſes to water, that his lofty ſpirit might be lowered to the level of his deſerts. The pride of a peacock is downright ſelf-denial, when compared with the vanity of that coxcomb, which was naturally arrogant, but is now rendered altogether intolerable, by the reputation he acquired at Bath, for kicking a bully, outwitting a club of raw ſharpers, and divers other pranks, in the execution of which he was more lucky than wiſe. But nothing has contributed ſo much to the increaſe of his inſolence and ſelf-conceit, as the favour he found among the ladies. Ay, the ladies, madam, I care not who knows it—the ladies, who (to their honour be it ſpoken) never fail to patronize foppery and folly, provided they ſolicit their encouragement. And yet this dog was not on the footing of thoſe hermaphroditical animals, who may be reckoned among the number of waiting-women, who air your ſhifts, comb your lap-dogs, examine your noſes with magnifying glaſſes, in order to ſqueeze out the worms, clean your teeth-bruſhes, ſweeten your handkerchiefs, and ſoften waſte paper for your occaſions. This fellow Pickle was entertained for more important purpoſes; his turn of duty never came till all thoſe lapwings were gone to rooſt; then he ſcaled windows, leaped over garden walls, and was let in by Mrs. Betty in the dark. Nay, the magiſtrates of Bath complimented him with the freedom of the corporation, merely becauſe, through his means, the waters had gained extraordinary credit; for every female of a tolerable appearance, that went thither on account of her ſterility, got the better of her complaint, during his reſidence at Bath: And now the fellow thinks no woman can withſtand his addreſſes. He had not been here three minutes, when I could perceive, with half an eye, that he had marked out your grace for a conqueſt—I mean in an honourable way; though the raſcal has impudence enough to attempt any thing." So ſaying, he fixed his eyes upon the ducheſs, who (while her face glowed with indignation), turning to her confident, expreſſed herſelf in theſe words: "Upon my life! I believe there is actually ſome truth in what this old ruffian ſays; I have myſelf obſerved that young fellow eying me with a very particular

ſtare." "It is not to be at all wondered at (ſaid her friend), that a youth of his complexion ſhould be ſenſible to the charms of your grace! but I dare ſay he would not preſume to entertain any but the moſt honourable and reſpectful ſentiments." "Reſpectful ſentiments! (cried my lady, with a look of ineffable diſdain) if I thought the fellow had aſſurance enough to think of me in any ſhape, I proteſt I would forbid him my houſe. Upon my honour, ſuch inſtances of audacity ſhould induce perſons of quality to keep your ſmall gentry at a greater diſtance; for they are very apt to grow impudent, upon the leaſt countenance or encouragement."

Cadwallader, ſatisfied with this declaration, changed the ſubject of diſcourſe, and next day communicated his diſcovery to his friend Pickle, who upon this occaſion felt the moſt ſtinging ſenſations of mortified pride, and reſolved to quit his proſpect with a good grace. Nor did the execution of this ſelf-denying ſcheme coſt him one moment's uneaſineſs; for his heart had never been intereſted in the purſuit, and his vanity triumphed in the thoughts of manifeſting his indifference. Accordingly, the very next time he viſited her grace, his behaviour was remarkably frank, ſprightly, and diſengaged; and the ſubject of love being artfully introduced by the widow, who had been directed to ſound his inclinations, he rallied the paſſion with great eaſe and ſeverity, and made no ſcruple of declaring himſelf heart-whole.

Though the ducheſs had reſented his ſuppoſed affection, ſhe was now offended at his inſenſibility, and even ſignified her diſguſt, by obſerving, that perhaps his attention to his own qualifications ſcreened him from the impreſſion of all other objects.

While he enjoyed this ſarcaſm, the meaning of which he could plainly diſcern, the company was joined by a certain virtuoſo, who had gained free acceſs to all the great families of the land, by his notable talent of goſſiping and buffoonery. He was now in the ſeventy-fifth year of his age; his birth was ſo obſcure, that he ſcarce knew his father's name; his education ſuitable to the dignity of his deſcent; his character publicly branded with homicide, profligacy, and breach of truſt; yet this man, by the happy inheritance of impregnable effrontery, and

a lucky proſtitution of all principle in rendering himſelf ſubſervient to the appetites of the great, had attained to an independency of fortune, as well as to ſuch a particular ſhare of favour among the quality, that, although he was well known to have pimped for three generations of the nobility, there was not a lady of faſhion in the kingdom who ſcrupled to admit him to her toilette, or even to be ſquired by him in any place of public entertainment. Not but that this ſage was occaſionally uſeful to his fellow-creatures, by theſe connections with people of fortune; for he often undertook to ſolicit charity in behalf of diſtreſſed objects, with a view of embezzling one half of the benefactions. It was an errand of this kind that now brought him to the houſe of her grace.

After having ſat a few minutes, he told the company that he would favour them with a very proper opportunity to extend their benevolence, for the relief of a poor gentlewoman, who was reduced to the moſt abject miſery, by the death of her huſband, and juſt delivered of a couple of fine boys. They, moreover, underſtood from his information, that this object was daughter of a good family, who had renounced her in conſequence of her marrying an enſign without a fortune; and even obſtructed his promotion with all their influence and power; a circumſtance of barbarity which had made ſuch an impreſſion upon his mind, as diſordered his brain, and drove him to deſpair, in a fit of which he had made away with himſelf, leaving his wife, then big with child, to all the horrors of indigence and grief.

Various were the criticiſms on this pathetic picture, which the old man drew with great expreſſion. My lady ducheſs concluded, that ſhe muſt be a creature void of all feeling and reflection, who could ſurvive ſuch aggravated miſery; therefore, did not deſerve to be relieved, except in the character of a common beggar; and was generous enough to offer a recommendation, by which ſhe would be admitted into an infirmary, to which her grace was a ſubſcriber; at the ſame time adviſing the ſolicitor to ſend the twins to the Foundling Hoſpital, where they would be carefully nurſed and brought up, ſo as to become uſeful members to the commonwealth. Another lady, with all due deference to the opinion of the ducheſs, was free

enough to blame the generoſity of her grace, which would only ſerve to encourage children in diſobedience to their parents, and might be the means not only of prolonging the diſtreſs of the wretched creature, but alſo of ruining the conſtitution of ſome young heir, perhaps the hope of a great family! for ſhe did ſuppoſe that madam, when her month ſhould be up, and her brats diſpoſed of, would ſpread her attractions to the public (provided ſhe could profit by her perſon), and, in the uſual way, make a regular progreſs from St. James's to Drury-lane. She apprehended, for theſe reaſons, that their compaſſion would be moſt effectually ſhown, in leaving her to periſh in her preſent neceſſity; and that the old gentleman would be unpardonable, ſhould he perſiſt in his endeavours to relieve her. A third member of this tender-hearted ſociety, after having aſked if the young woman was handſome, and being anſwered in the negative, allowed that there was a great deal of reaſon in what had been ſaid by the honourable perſon who had ſpoke laſt; nevertheleſs, ſhe humbly conceived her ſentence would admit of ſome mitigation. "Let the bantlings (ſaid ſhe) be ſent to the hoſpital, according to the advice of her grace, and a ſmall collection be made for the preſent ſupport of the mother; and, when her health is recovered, I will take her into my family, in quality of an upper ſervant, or medium between me and my woman; for, upon my life! I can't endure to chide or give directions to a creature, who is, in point of birth and education, but one degree above the vulgar."

This propoſal met with univerſal approbation. The ducheſs (to her immortal honour) began the contribution with a crown; ſo that the reſt of the company were obliged to reſtrict their liberality to half the ſum, that her grace might not be affronted: And the propoſer demanding the poor woman's name and place of abode, the old mediator could not help giving her ladyſhip a verbal direction, though he was extremely mortified (on more accounts than one) to find ſuch an iſſue to his ſolicitation.

Peregrine, who, "though humourous as winter, had a tear for pity, and an hand open as day for melting charity," was ſhocked at the nature and reſult of this ungenerous conſultation. He contributed his half-crown, how-

ever; and, retiring from the company, betook himſelf to the lodgings of the forlorn lady in the ſtraw, according to the direction he had heard. Upon inquiry, he underſtood, that ſhe was then viſited by ſome charitable gentlewoman, who had ſent for a nurſe, and waited the return of the meſſenger; and he ſent up his reſpects, deſiring he might be permitted to ſee her, on pretence of having been intimate with her late huſband.

Though the poor woman had never heard of his name, ſhe did not think proper to deny his requeſt; and he was conducted to a paltry chamber in the third ſtory, where he found this unhappy widow ſitting upon a truckle-bed, and ſuckling one of her infants, with the moſt piteous expreſſion of anguiſh in her features, which were naturally regular and ſweet, while the other was fondled on the knee of a perſon, whoſe attention was ſo much engroſſed by her little charge, that for the preſent ſhe could mind nothing elſe: And it was not till after the firſt compliments paſſed betwixt the hapleſs mother and our adventurer, that he perceived the ſtranger's countenance, which inſpired him with the higheſt eſteem and admiration. He beheld all the graces of elegance and beauty, breathing ſentiment and beneficence, and ſoftened into the moſt enchanting tenderneſs of weeping ſympathy. When he declared the cauſe of his viſit, which was no other than the deſire of befriending the diſtreſſed lady, to whom he preſented a bank-note for twenty pounds, he was favoured with ſuch a look of complacency by this amiable phantom, who might have been juſtly taken for an angel miniſtering to the neceſſities of mortals, that his whole ſoul was tranſported with love and veneration. Nor was this prepoſſeſſion diminiſhed by the information of the widow, who, after having manifeſted her gratitude in a flood of tears, told him, that the unknown object of his eſteem was a perſon of honour, who having heard by accident of her deplorable ſituation, had immediately obeyed the dictates of her humanity, and come in perſon to relieve her diſtreſs; that ſhe had not only generouſly ſupplied her with money for preſent ſuſtenance, but alſo undertaken to provide a nurſe for her babes, and even promiſed to favour her with protection, ſhould ſhe ſurvive her preſent melancholy ſituation. To theſe articles of intelligence ſhe

added, that the name of her benefactreſs was the celebrated Lady ———, to whoſe character the youth was no ſtranger, though he had never ſeen her perſon before. The killing edge of her charms was a little blunted by the accidents of time and fortune; but no man of taſte and imagination, whoſe nerves were not quite chilled with the froſt of age, could, even at that time, look upon her with impunity. And as Peregrine ſaw her attractions heightened by the tender office in which ſhe was engaged, he was ſmitten with her beauty, and ſo raviſhed with her compaſſion, that he could not ſuppreſs his emotions, but applauded her benevolence with all the warmth of enthuſiaſm.

Her ladyſhip received his compliments with great politeneſs and affability. And the occaſion on which they met being equally intereſting to both, an acquaintance commenced between them, and they concerted meaſures for the benefit of the widow and her two children, one of whom our hero beſpoke for his own godſon; for Pickle was not ſo obſcure in the beau monde, but that his fame had reached the ears of this lady, who, therefore, did not diſcourage his advances towards her friendſhip and eſteem.

All the particulars relating to their charge being adjuſted, he attended her ladyſhip to her own houſe; and, by her converſation, had the pleaſure of finding her underſtanding ſuitable to her other accompliſhments. Nor had ſhe any reaſon to think that our hero's qualifications had been exaggerated by common report.

One of their adopted children died before it was baptized; ſo that their care concentred in the other, for whom they ſtood ſponſors. Underſtanding that the old agent was become troubleſome in his viſits to the mother, to whom he now began to adminiſter ſuch counſel as ſhocked the delicacy of her virtue, they removed her into another lodging, where ſhe would not be expoſed to his machinations. In leſs than a month, our hero learned from a nobleman of his acquaintance, that the hoary pander had actually engaged to procure for him this poor afflicted gentlewoman; and being fruſtrated in his intention, ſubſtituted in her room a nymph from the purlieus of Covent-garden, that made his lordſhip ſmart ſeverely for the favours ſhe beſtowed.

Meanwhile, Peregrine cultivated his new acquaintance with all his art and aſſiduity, preſuming from the circumſtances of her reputation and fate, as well as on the ſtrength of his own merit, that, in time, he ſhould be able to indulge that paſſion which had begun to glow within his breaſt.

As her ladyſhip had undergone a vaſt variety of fortune and adventure, which he had heard indiſtinctly related, with numberleſs errors and miſrepreſentations, he was no ſooner entitled, by the familiarity of communication, to aſk ſuch a favour, than he earneſtly entreated her to entertain him with the particulars of her ſtory; and, by dint of importunity, ſhe was at length prevailed upon (in a ſelect party) to gratify his curioſity, by the account given in the following volume.

END OF VOLUME SECOND.